You're Mine Daddy [VKOOK/KOOKV]

Posted originally on the Archive of Our Own at http://archiveofourown.org/works/12264813.

You're Mine Daddy [VKOOK/KOOKV]
by hidden_tracks

Summary

(Chapters containing SMUT will be marked 'M' in the chapter title)

As the saying "like father like son" goes, a despicable street gangster, Taehyung, unsurprisingly raised a child, Jungkook, to become as despicable as him without thinking of the consequences. Many years down the road, his rather cruel style of parenting came back to bite him in a shocking way. This is a story about an adopted son who was ill-treated for many years by his adoptive dad. As the kid grew, helplessness and hatred towards his dad evolved into mixed feelings of anger, sexual desire and unrequited love. His obsession over the idea of himself being the only one giving orders to his dad, having the power to punish his dad and gaining the right to conquer his dad became so strong that ultimately one day, he accomplished his unthinkable “revenge”...

The main theme of this mafia/gangster AU fanfiction is violence. Inspired by BTS's UNICEF anti-violence love yourself campaign, this story explores the toxic consequences of violence.
and its ripple effects on families and society. Ultimately, the promised happy ending in this story will be associated with true lasting love for oneself and others accompanied with the cessation of violence.”...
Chapter Summary

Forewords and Warnings + Chapter 1 where 7-year-old Jungkook narrowly escapes death and bumps into gangster Taehyung while running away from his captor. Taehyung adopts Jungkook not knowing the boy is the biological son of a mafia boss and decides to raise the boy as his own adopted son.

Teaser:

“13 years ago, you forced me to be your son. Today, I am going to force you to be mine. I am stronger than you now and I’ll make you mine and mine only, Kim Tae Hyung,” Jungkook snickered with eyes filled with passion, thirst and desire...

Theme:
The main theme of this mafia/gangster AU fanfiction is violence. Inspired by BTS's UNICEF anti-violence love yourself campaign, this story explores the toxic consequences of violence and its ripple effects on families and society. Ultimately, the promised happy ending in this story will be associated with true lasting love for oneself and others accompanied with the cessation of violence. The meaningful part and root issue of this story emerges clearly from the "Violence & Abuse" chapter onwards.

Pairings:

Husband/adopted son Jungkook X Wife/adoptive dad Taehyung [VKOOK]

Emotionless mafia bodyguard Namjoon X Cute photography boy Jin [NAMJIN]

Hot summer energetic Hoseok X Cold melancholic mochi Jimin [JIHOPE]

Character description:

JUNGKOOK: Powerful mafia boss! Strict man of the house! Grew up hating despicable adoptive dad KIM TAE HYUNG! Puberty at 13 melted his hate into lust for sexy dad KIM TAE HYUNG! Can only get hard when seeing dad-turned-wife KIM TAE HYUNG! Possessiveness level 9000! Inner child and innocent at heart!

TAEHYUNG: Born to be wild and violent and extremely attractive! Started beating people up in orphanage since the age of 4! Ruthless street gang boss! Side hobby is hooking up with pretty girls but is prettier than girls! Raised cute and cuddly adopted son JEON JUNG KOOK! Forced to marry a grown-up and badass JEON JUNG KOOK! Biggest fear is son-turned-husband JEON JUNG KOOK! Attractiveness level 9000! Strong and arrogant at heart!

Genre: Fluff and crack with an occasional tint of angst

English Proficiency Level: Decent, not my first language

Warnings: 1. Mostly dub-con but may contain rape/non-con elements. 2. Age gap: Taehyung is 8 years older than Jungkook. Yes, Taehyung adopted 7-year-old Jungkook when he was 15 because of an unexpected situation. 3. Violence and more violence which might inevitably lead to epic violent sex. 4. Minimal human rights for both Jungkook and Taehyung in this story because both are assholes to each other. 5. This is a crackfic which essentially will make you feel like you're losing brain cells while reading this story because of how ridiculously stupid and illogical the characters can be at times. 6. Most importantly I need to emphasize once again that this is a taboo story between an adoptive dad 8 years older than his adopted kid, though sexual things only happen after they transit into husband-wife relationship and on top of that they are not blood-related at all. Please stop reading if you are unable to handle content like this.
Synopsis:

As the saying "like father like son" goes, a despicable street gangster unsurprisingly raised a child to become as despicable as him without thinking of the consequences. Many years down the road, his rather peculiar style of parenting came back to bite him in a shocking way. This is a story about an adopted son who was ill-treated for many years by his violent, strict yet extremely sexy and protective adoptive dad. As the kid grew, helplessness and hatred towards his dad evolved into mixed feelings of anger, sexual desire and unrequited love. His obsession over the idea of himself being the only one giving orders to his dad, having the power to punish his dad and gaining the right to conquer his dad became so strong that ultimately one day, he accomplished his unthinkable "revenge": On his 20th birthday after becoming the mafia boss, he kidnapped and forced his adoptive dad to become his legal wife!

Author's Important Preface Greetings:

This book will begin with 3 background chapters to quickly skim through the whole chronological plot. After that, all chapters will be written scene by scene in detail which may not be in a chronological order i.e. one chapter may be when Kook is 20 and Taehyung is 28 then the next chapter may abruptly jump back in time to when Kook is 8 and Taehyung is 16 [Non-Linear Narrative]. Specific date, time and location will be given as the title/header. I figured that jumping back and forth in time will be more interesting to mix both father/son interactions and husband/wife interactions to effectively shed light on their complicated relationship and timeless love.

Now that you know how this story will proceed, read on and enjoy the process.

BG1.1 - TAE MEETS KOOK

“What it's like to be a parent: It's one of the hardest things you'll ever do but in exchange it teaches you the meaning of unconditional love.” — Nicholas sparks, The Wedding

Jeon Jung Kook was born on the 1st of September 1997 into one of the most powerful mafia families of the era. In fact, many notorious mafia organizations in the world were just side territories that were
ultimately controlled by the superior mafia family. Unlike most other documented mafia entities, the existence of this mafia family had been kept secret from the public ever since its formation in the 17th century. Simply known as “The Mafia Origins” to criminal insiders, it had been secretly managing many of the deadliest organized crime groups in the world including the Japanese Yakuza, the Russian Mafia, the Sicilian La Cosa Nostra, the Mexican Drug Cartels, the Albanian Mob and many more. Its rule had spread extensively throughout the globe like an intricately linked spider web, controlling the smooth functioning of a myriad of underworld activities ranging from illegal transactions to human trafficking. His father, Jeon Woo Hyun, was the head of the mafia family at that time and undoubtedly one of the most powerful men in the underground society.

Jungkook, being the one and only child of Jeon Woo Hyun, was the rightful heir to his father’s throne. Born into a family of high status and power, Jungkook was treated with dignity and respect by members of his extensive family tree as well as his father’s direct subordinates. His big beautiful watery eyes and innocent look also earned him extra love and admiration from their domestic maids, who constantly fought over their turns to serve him directly.

As Jungkook was still young, his father kept their family’s identity secret from Jungkook and had only intended to tell Jungkook about the mafia organization when he became older. All little Jungkook knew at that time was that people around him all addressed him as “young master” instead of his name and that there were always a bunch of stern-looking men-in-black following his family around everywhere.

***

Jungkook’s peaceful life took a quick turn of a change just a little past 2 weeks after his 7th birthday. That fateful night, Jungkook was captured by his father’s right-hand man, who secretly had wanted to kill Jungkook and then assassinate the would-be-depressed-and-shocked Jeon Woo Hyun in an attempt to snatch the throne. However, luck was on the little boy’s side and Jungkook managed to wittingly escape his destiny. He proceeded to run for many hours and eventually entered the terrains of a foreign village. It was 3am in the morning at that time and not a single soul could be spotted on the streets. Jungkook had been running for 6 hours and was on the verge of fainting. All he wanted was someone to appear and save him.

Just then, Jungkook noticed 15-year-old Kim Taehyung, who was then already a street-gangster boss on his way to commit habitual theft with his men. Engaging in theft acts was a fortnightly event for Taehyung’s gang. Compared to loansharking, illegal trading, gambling and forcing people to pay protection fees, stealing was more of a leisure group activity which his gang committed regularly for some thrill and relaxation.

Of course, Jungkook was clueless of Taehyung’s criminal background. His eyes lighted up the first moment he saw the pretty teenager and in that moment, he mustered every last bit of his remaining energy to run over to Taehyung. The young boy then fell to his knees and hugged the criminal by his
leg, crying: “Are you an angel? Angel please save me, please take me in…” before fainting into a concussion right at Taehyung’s feet.

Taehyung was a savage street gangster that would not hesitate to skin his enemies alive. Being an orphan, he had never experienced love and care from anyone. He most certainly did not know how to interact with kids. With that being said, it took him awhile to digest the fact that a random 7-year-old boy had jumped out of nowhere in the middle of the night, hugged him by the leg and called him an angel in the midst of his criminal act. He looked down at the passed-out kid, raised an eyebrow, cancelled his criminal plans and swiftly carried Jungkook back home that night. He thought Jungkook was an abandoned child like himself and the moment he saw Jungkook’s peaceful sleeping face lying comfortably against his chest, his heart clenched. He decided there and then that if nobody bothered to retrieve Jungkook back, he would adopt and love Jungkook like his own. I will take care of you and love you like my own son, Taehyung thought to himself in resolution.

***

Unfortunately for Jungkook, Taehyung’s way of love was rather unconventional. Two whole days after nobody came to look for Jungkook, Taehyung concluded that Jungkook was unwanted. He pulled Jungkook aside, forced Jungkook to call him “dad”, ignored Jungkook’s cries to be reunited with his family, threw Jungkook into the laundry basket and forced Jungkook to wash all his clothes, dragged Jungkook to watch street fights and slapped Jungkook if he closed his eyes and finally, forced Jungkook to complete arduous sets of push ups, sit-ups and leg raises before bed. That night, Taehyung warned a wailing Jungkook that if he did not listen to his commands, he would not hesitate to leave Jungkook alone to fend for himself.

“If you listen to me, I will give you food, shelter and protection. I will train you and make sure you grow to be the toughest boy in this village. If you don’t want to acknowledge me as your new dad, get ready to be thrown out, captured and sold on the black market by the other street gangsters. Try me,” Taehyung said coldly without a tinge of emotion in his eyes.

From the previous two days of being with the kid, Taehyung had learnt the kid’s name, age and basic characteristic traits. He was already starting to feel feelings for this little cry-baby. Those big watery eyes, cute pouty lips and fair white baby skin had successfully evoked the protective fatherly instincts in him and he wanted so much to protect and provide for this kid.

However, his good intentions could not be detected by Jungkook due to his cruel choice of words and seemingly emotionless demeanour. Jungkook did not know at that time that the way Taehyung was acting was just the way Taehyung was all through his life. At the age of 4, Taehyung had punched and effectively knocked 2 baby teeth out of a 6-year-old bully who called him a “pretty girl” in the orphanage he had resided in. Though Taehyung’s actions earned him an earful of scolding, he deemed his own act of violence a success as the bully did not come back to taunt him again. Violence solved my problem, the 4-year-old Taehyung had concluded and from then on,
Taehyung had turned over to the dark side. At the age of 6, he became the greatest bully in the orphanage and would savagely rob others of their cookies if he so wished. At the age of 8, he recruited most boys in the orphanage to serve and assist him in bullying activities. At the age of 10, Taehyung was deemed too much to be handled and was thrown out of the orphanage to fend for himself on the streets along with his fellow delinquent friends Jin, Jimin and Hoseok from the orphanage and in the subsequent 5 years out there on the streets, they started out diligently working as child labourers to earn some cash but then Taehyung abruptly turned rogue again after hitting a difficult period of acute starvation. Hunger was his final straw and Taehyung desperately needed his cookies so he started forming his own gang, recruiting Jin, Jimin, Hoseok and other like-minded kids on the streets who were just like him and started engaging in criminal activities such as stealing, robbing, and ransacking. Oftentimes, he would get caught and beaten into a pulp for his offences, though deep in his heart all he wanted was to have something to fill his empty stomach. Having had lived through desperate times and having had witnessed the harsh reality of survival, Taehyung’s heart had turned stone-cold. A man like him would never sugar-coat his words for anyone, not even a cute little sobbing 7-year-old abandoned child.

On the other hand, the young Jungkook was shocked, confused and very afraid. He looked at the man who had just threatened to throw him out with pure horror etched on his face. Being only 7 years old, he could neither fully understand his own situation nor could he read into the sorrow and pain that Taehyung had accumulated in his worn-out heart over the years. Never in his sheltered life was he treated so harshly by anyone, especially since he had trusted this man to take care of him. That day when he was passing out on the streets, he had thought that this good-looking man was an “angel” that would bring him back to his family, but it turned out that this man was a deadly devil with a heart of steel. Jungkook felt so betrayed by Taehyung but at the same time, Taehyung was the only person there that he trusted to not truly hurt him. After all, Taehyung took him in, fed and nursed him for the past two days when he had no one to turn to. Jungkook cried and cried but he knew that in order to survive, he would have no choice but to listen to this man.

“Dad,” Jungkook called out reluctantly for the first time to which Taehyung gave a victory smirk, thinking how cute it was to own and raise a little human being.

Though 13 years down the road, Taehyung would neither use the word "cute" to describe that occasion nor would he use the phrase "little human being" to describe Jungkook.

For more of my content and updates and to interact with me, you can connect with me on twitter here: hidden_tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi
You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don't forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
Chapter Summary

Young Jungkook is constantly "bullied" by his adoptive dad Taehyung. His trainings are intense and all the housework are thrown to him. He grows up to have a strong desire of dominating his seemingly cold and mildly abusive adoptive father.

Chapter Notes

See the end of the chapter for notes.

“What is the son but an extension of the father?” — Frank Herbert, Dune

After giving Jungkook another three days to ease into his new life, Taehyung officially started teaching Jungkook everything Jungkook needed to learn as a full-time domestic maid. Tasks such as cooking, cleaning, washing and catching cockroaches were taught step-by-step, and household rules cum the associated disciplinary consequences such as “you are not allowed to bathe for more than 10 minutes or I’ll hang you upside-down for an hour”, “you are not allowed to eat before me unless you want your mouth stuffed full of raw chilli” and “you are not allowed to wander out of the house without permission unless you want to kneel till your knees bleed” were also made threateningly clear by Taehyung. Jungkook listened to all the punishments with his hair standing on ends. His innocent mind could not fathom the cruelty of the man before him as he gaped in disbelief watching his new dad blabbering things that a 7-year-old should not by any chance be listening to.

“Stop dazing like an idiot. I’ll only say all these once so open your ears and listen,” Taehyung warned disapprovingly. Was jungkook dazed? Not really. Jungkook was shaken to the core. His innocent mind was clouded with the torturous disciplinary actions his father had just mentioned and in one split second his whole world turned as dark as an endless blackhole. Listening to all these once was definitely more than enough for Jungkook.

On the other hand, the indifferent Taehyung then took the traumatized boy out to meet the rest of his gang. “Remember the kid that randomly appeared when we were stealing stuff 5 days ago? I adopted him. He’s my son now,” Taehyung announced territorially while beaming in utmost pride to which the gang went utterly berserk with their eyes jutting out in surprise and slight amusement. “Are you serious?! Oh my god that little thing is so cute my heart.eu is a oh my god,” one of the gang members, Hoseok, exclaimed in excitement. A few moments later, Jungkook sank into deeper trauma as he was literally buried in the embrace of a bunch of overly-excited thugs.
Jungkook was dying in pure misery and denial. In the blink of an eye, his status plunged from that of a crown prince to that of a servant. Sadly, his torturous Cinderella life had officially begun the day after his father taught him the art of completing the various household chores. Every day without fail, he had to prepare breakfast before Taehyung wake up in the morning, eat silently while listening to Taehyung pick on his bad cooking skills and then do the dishes after they had finished the meal. He had to polish Taehyung’s knives and wash Taehyung’s boots on a regular basis whenever they were stained with god-knows-whose blood after Taehyung returned from his gang activities. He had to do the laundry every two days before dinner or else he would not be given food. Other housework such as sweeping, mopping and taking out the trash were also solely in charged by Jungkook. Basically, Taehyung made Jungkook do everything and yet the housework was only part of torture.

Taehyung wanted Jungkook to become tougher and so every night the 7-year-old Jungkook was made to do an exercise regime before he could go to bed. Taehyung would monitor and ensure that Jungkook completed his exercise and then judged accordingly whether it would be fit to increase the intensity of Jungkook’s physical training the next day. Besides that, Jungkook would be made to tag along as the gang made their rounds around the village every Wednesday. Jungkook would then be forced to watch as the gang members beat innocent civilians up mercilessly if they refused to pay the protection fees. To witness such senseless violence on a regular basis, Jungkook’s fragile heart broke a million times. He cried and cried and cried till his eyes were swollen from the influx of tears. He was too young to understand why violence could exist in the world. Why can’t everyone just live with love, peace and harmony? Jungkook would ask himself that same question over and over again in his head but of course no one could answer him.

By the time Jungkook was 10, he was strong enough to be recruited into Taehyung’s gang. 10-year-old Jungkook was already highly skilled in combat at that point in time and had already been completely desensitized to violence. On Jungkook’s first gang-on-gang fight, he broke 2 of his opponent gang members’ ribs, crippled 5 and sent 10 back toothless without batting an eyelid. There was no guilt, sympathy or any signs of compassion left in Jungkook’s soul by then as those traits had been replaced by cold-bloodedness and cruelty.
Jungkook hated Taehyung so much at the start. He hated the man that single-handedly dragged him from heaven down into hell and transformed him into a certified scumbag but he also grew to learn that Taehyung was the way he was because Taehyung had never received love. Jungkook had at least 7 years of warm childhood while Taehyung had none as an orphan. Consequently, Taehyung did not know how to love others. As fighting was the most primitive form of aggression and self-protection, Taehyung picked that up as a defence mechanism to survive and it had become his way of love too. To Taehyung, teaching Jungkook to fight was his way of loving Jungkook. He was gifting Jungkook the rawest form of love and protection he knew. As Jungkook started noticing the vulnerable side of his dad, he could not help but feel an innate need to grow up fast, to grow up faster so that he could love and protect his dad.

“If you want to survive in this world you got to become stronger and stronger. Only the strongest can rule the others,” Taehyung had said after Jungkook returned from the 10-km run that he had instructed Jungkook to complete before breakfast. Jungkook was 13 years old that year and he was starting to feel weird feelings for Taehyung.

Taehyung was undeniably the most beautiful and perfect human being that Jungkook had ever set eyes on. Besides having a set of gloriously tanned skin, Taehyung’s whole body was wrapped in toned and tautly compact muscles giving him a bright natural glow that could instantly blind a million girls and guys. Under his small tight waist ran two slender long legs and sometimes when Taehyung walked around shirtless in the house, Jungkook could clearly see the two V-shaped pubic bones run like rivers deep into Taehyung’s trousers not to mention the fact that Taehyung’s face was so indescribably beautiful like an angel. That unreal face was also responsible for turning the heads of many passers-by whenever Taehyung just so casually trudged down the streets. In short, Taehyung’s sex appeal was too damn high for a puberty-stricken Jungkook to handle.

“What if I become stronger than you? Can I rule over you?” Jungkook asked while still panting non-stop from the tiring run. After 6 years of being with his dad, Jungkook had naturally adopted a “no-filter” and direct way of conversing with his equally blunt dad. He was not afraid to speak his mind at all.

Taehyung chuckled. What an adorable thing to say. Rule over me? When I had my first street fight you were still peeing your pants Kook! Taehyung thought to himself.

“Of course, I will only listen to the people that are stronger and more powerful than me. Applies for
you as well,” Taehyung replied nonchalantly, not taking his own words to heart.

Upon hearing that, a glimpse of mischief and determination flashed across Jungkook’s eyes. It was so brief that Taehyung did not manage to catch those eyes staring down at him as if a wolf would of its prey.

***

And Taehyung most certainly did not know that he was going to appear as the main lead in Jungkook’s first wet dream a few days later.

---

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don’t have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

For more of my content and updates and to interact with me, you can connect with me on twitter here: hidden__tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don’t forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
P.S. Alright that's the end of background part 2! And OMG Taehyung do you know that you are raising a wolf in heat who is constantly stripping you naked with his eyes? Be careful okay, stop walking around the house half-naked god bless this kid is going to fuck the daylights out of you someday if you keep doing that!
Chapter Summary

The mafia side finally locates their long-lost young master Jungkook and Jungkook decides to return to his birth family. Taehyung acts cold even when Jungkook is leaving and Jungkook who has been loving Taehyung with all his heart feels so abandoned and betrayed at this moment. Angered, Jungkook wishes to take revenge on his father after becoming the mafia boss.

He wishes to make Taehyung his.

“Only in the agony of parting do we look into the depths of love.” — George Eliot

That one night when Jungkook was 15, some suspicious looking men-in-black arrived at Taehyung’s house and requested to speak to Jungkook.

“Do you know a boy named Jungkook? He is our young master and our family has been finding him for years. Recently we have received news that he was seen appearing around this village so we came for a visit. The teenager that walked into your house a few hours ago, he looked a lot like our young master. Would you mind letting us in to confirm?” one of the men explained politely and calmly though if one were to listen closely, a tinge of desperation could be detected from his tensed-up shaking voice.

Upon hearing that, Taehyung’s heart sank. So Kook wasn’t abandoned after all? He has a family? Does this mean that Kook must leave me? Thousands of such painful questions raced through his mind. The boy that he had raised for 8 years and counting had a family and the family was back for him. But… isn’t this a good thing? It’s a good thing, right? Damn, this is awesome, Taehyung thought bitterly as tears stung into his eyes unknowingly. After dazing out for a few seconds, Taehyung then told the men-in-black that he, indeed, took in a boy named Jungkook for the past 8 years. He allowed them into the house and led them into a room to see the sleeping Jungkook up-close. After the men confirmed that the sleeping boy was indeed their long-lost young master, they could barely contain themselves. The men-in-black choked back tears, bowed to Taehyung and thanked Taehyung for taking care of their young master all those years but said that they must take Jungkook back to his family. They also explained that they could not reveal more about Jungkook’s family.
At that moment, Taehyung found himself caught in a sea of mixed emotions. Everything was happening too fast. Hastily, Taehyung woke Jungkook up and the minute Jungkook opened his eyes, he saw two of his birth father’s most trusted subordinates kneeling in front of him and in utmost shock he immediately recognized their familiar faces. Those men-in-black were his birth father’s men! Jungkook’s heart skipped a beat.

“Young master… we are sorry to take this long to find you… we almost thought you were dead! You must return with us immediately young master… your father misses you… everyone misses you,” one of the men cried with a trembling voice.

In that moment, Jungkook was suddenly overwhelmed with the thoughts of his previous family. He had missed his birth family so much but then he also realized that his adoptive father, Taehyung, was standing just right beside him with an emotionless expression. Tears welled up in Jungkook’s eyes as he glanced over to Taehyung.

“Dad?” Jungkook spoke.

“Kook, I shouldn’t have forced you to be my son. I didn’t know that you have a family that wanted you back. Always thought you were abandoned by your parents without your own knowledge. Go back to your family and forget about me. Let’s take it that we have never seen each other before. Leave and never come back,” Taehyung spoke blankly with a monotonous tone, though all he wanted to say was “I love you so much, son. Don’t go.”

How could Taehyung not love the child that he saw every single day of his life for 8 years? He could clearly remember how small and innocent Jungkook was when he was 7. He still remembered how Jungkook would wrap up in his arms and sleep peacefully every night. That was his boy, the only family he had ever had, the only person for him to protect and love with his life. Taehyung remembered thinking time to time how awesome it would be if the cute little Jungkook would never grow up so that he could continue to hold his tiny little frame to sleep at night but on some days he had wished with all his heart for the boy to grow up to become a bigger and stronger man capable to fend entirely for himself. Those mixed feelings he had never felt for any other human being he had felt them all for Jungkook so how could he not love Jungkook?

On the other hand, Jungkook was too overwhelmed with emotions to react. Initially he was so happy that his family had finally found him but Taehyung’s words pierced like a knife through his heart. He felt extremely sad and betrayed by the man he called “dad” for a long time. 8 years ago, you forced me to be your son and 8 years later you just discard me like this? What kind of father are you? Have
you truly cared about me before? Such painful questions bombarded Jungkook’s mind but somehow, he could not put the immense betrayal he felt into words at that moment so he buried them all deep in his heart.

“Alright. Farewell,” Jungkook said with a face void of emotions. He then stood up abruptly and with the men-in-black that came to fetch him, he left.

Jungkook did not pack any of his belongings. He did not give Taehyung a smile or a goodbye hug. He did not even look back to witness Taehyung bursting into tears silently watching him leave.

***

Jeon Jung Kook returned to the mafia that night. Other than the pain of having to leave Taehyung, Jungkook was more than happy to reunite with his long-lost family. Only then was he told the truth about the fact that his birth father Jeon Woo Hyun was the mafia boss, leaving him completely mind-blown. Jungkook did not know that his family was affiliated with the mafia when he went missing at the age of 7 so how could he possibly accept such unbelievable truth at the beginning then?

Jungkook was, however, given very little time to accept his family's true identity before moving on for his father broke it abruptly to Jungkook that he had gotten terminal cancer and as the next boss in line, Jungkook had to speed-learn every single detail about the mafia from its external structure to its history to its darkest secrets and most importantly, he had to learn the way of ruling the mafia before his father could pass away. Jungkook was also asked to proceed with professional mixed martial arts, Taekwondo, gun and combat training. As he was already physically fit and well-equipped with basic fighting techniques at that point in time thanks to the devilish training regime Taehyung had imposed on him, he learnt things fast. Too fast in fact. Within two years, the boy memorized every single information of the mafia and attained a black belt in Taekwondo, mixed martial arts and karate. Nobody in the mafia could win a sparring battle with him then, not even his own bodyguards.

Jeon Woo Hyun was more than delighted to witness Jungkook’s talent in fighting, learning and leading the mafia. On Jungkook’s 18th birthday, the late mafia boss passed away peacefully and in the midst of struggling with the sorrow and pain of losing his birth father, Jungkook officially became the new mafia boss.

What was this new mafia boss going to do then? Do you think that he could have forgotten about his dear “daddy”? No, far from it. Every single day after he had been separated from his “dad”, he had been thinking about how to make that man his. In fact, he had never regarded that man as his dad. To Jungkook, Taehyung was his greatest nightmare but also his greatest saviour. Taehyung was his greatest fear but also his greatest teacher. Taehyung was his greatest pain but also his greatest desire. He wanted more than anything else to inflict the same misery he felt back onto Taehyung, he wanted
to punish Taehyung for betraying him and sending him off that night like a nobody but at the same time, he wanted to protect, honour and shower Taehyung with all the love that Taehyung had been missing out on in the past 26 years of his existence.

“13 years ago, you forced me to be your son. Today, I am going to force you to be mine. I am stronger than you now and I’ll make you mine and mine only, Kim Tae Hyung,” Jungkook snickered with eyes filled with passion, thirst and desire.
A "Kookie" Story

Chapter Summary

A throwback-to-the-past chapter. Fluff. Jungkook being forced to complete an exercise regime by Taehyung before bed.

“In every living thing there is the desire for love.” --- D. H. Lawrence

***

Location: Taehyung’s house

Date & Time: 20th February 2005 10:15PM

[Kook is 8, Taehyung is 16, 5 months and 2 days into adoption]

***

“Kook I know you are faking it. You are given five seconds to get back up on your feet or continue with the set,” Taehyung warns coldly with a voice deeper than the ocean, glancing unsympathetically at an “unconscious” Jungkook that has deliberately "fainted" to avoid his ordeal.

A few moments ago, Taehyung had made Jungkook complete sets of 1-minute planks to which Jungkook finished without a single bit of complaint but then the strict dad decided to add an additional 50 push-ups to Jungkook’s plate after he was done with the previous workout. While doing a set of 50-pushups was considered manageable to a fit adult, it was nearly an impossible mission to accomplish for a young 8-year-old boy who was already exhausted from a full day of housework not to mention he was also very sleepy as the clock ticked further into the night so after completing less than some 15 push-ups from the set, Jungkook whose arms were already failing him suddenly collapsed face-down like a dead fish as he proceeded to fake his death on the ground. Jungkook had done that several times in the past when he could no longer complete a certain exercise regime that Taehyung had instructed him to finish due to extreme fatigue. He would collapse on the floor, completely motionless and unresponsive like a decomposing wooden log. As direct retaliation was out of question because doing so would almost always earn him a good beating, Jungkook had acquired the skill of "fainting" whenever he needed to as his own passive-aggressive way in pleading for a discount. When that happened, Taehyung would somehow soften up magically because he knew that Jungkook would only resort to such measures when he was absolutely desperate. After all, Taehyung needed to make sure that Jungkook's exercise regime wouldn't in any case lead to permanent muscle damage for the growing kid.

Unfortunately, Jungkook knows that this time the strategy may not work out effectively because he
actually did complete his given 50 push-ups yesterday so theoretically he should be able to complete
that amount today. However, he had used up too much of his energy this afternoon
when Hoseok came over to teach him some street dance moves. The dancing was fun but it required
a fair bit of footwork and arm extensions leaving Jungkook physically drained by the time Hoseok
left.

“5, 4, 3, 2…” Taehyung starts proceeding sternly with a countdown to which Jungkook curses
innately. Seems like faking his death really won’t work this time. He needs to instantly churn out
another genius idea to save himself if not it will really be the end of him after the
countdown. Knowing fully well how dire his own situation is, Jungkook searches frantically in his
mind for a solution as cold sweat breaks out on his forehead.

Just before Taehyung counts down to “1”, Jungkook suddenly hits an eureka moment. Yes! This
should do it! Jungkook thinks innately to himself as he cautiously turns over to face his dad, his face
melting into a sheepish smile before he starts speaking in a pleading tone.

“My arms are seriously cramping already dad. Can you show me some mercy? The cookies
that Hoseok gave me this afternoon will be all yours if you let me off this time,” Jungkook bargains
and once again shoots his killer puppy eyes of a glance at Taehyung.

Jungkook had learnt about Taehyung’s love for cookies two months ago. Hoseok, the most cheerful
person in the gang, had made Taehyung 3 boxes of cookies for his birthday. To Jungkook’s surprise,
Taehyung went absolutely berserk and proceeded to beam with positivity for a few days after that
event. He would smile like a sunshine at literally anything and everything and even helped Jungkook
out with some housework but of course after Taehyung finished the cookies he promptly returned to
the dark side again.

After hearing what Jungkook has said, Taehyung chuckles in surprise. He can’t believe that
Jungkook just tried to buy him over with cookies! Is his obsession over cookies so obvious? He
didn’t even realize Jungkook would notice! My son knows me so well, Taehyung thinks proudly.
Amused by the situation and impressed by Jungkook’s quick wit and observational skills,
Taehyung decides to compromise.

“Alright, I’ll spare you today. But you’ll still have to finish another 15 push-ups yourself after a 10
minutes break to make up 30 push-ups. I’ll help you with the last 20 to make up a total of 50 push-
ups. I said that 50 push-ups must be completed today and I mean just that,” Taehyung states to which Jungkook almost cries in happiness.

“Yes daddy!” Jungkook is overjoyed upon his dad’s unexpected leniency. Perhaps because he is too excited, he finishes the last 15 push-ups on his plate in a single breath after the 10 minutes break. After that, he crashes onto the floor once again panting heavily but in satisfaction and relief.

“That’s my boy. Come on, hop onto my back,” Taehyung instructs as he crouches down into a preparatory push-up position beside Jungkook. Jungkook takes the cue and climbs over onto Taehyung’s back. After feeling Jungkook’s tiny hands wrap around his waist, Taehyung proceeds to do 20-pushups with the additional weight of the young boy on his back. It is definitely not easy to do push-ups with another human on one’s back, but Taehyung is very fit and determined to earn his cookies to show Jungkook what it is like to be a true man.

In this instant, an immense sense of respect swells up in Jungkook’s heart. His dad is amazing! While Jungkook is already struggling to do push-ups with his own weight, his dad can do it supporting the both of them! Jungkook wants to be as strong as his dad too when he grows up!


After the physical session, Jungkook shares the box of cookies with Taehyung as promised. Strangely, there is no conversation, laughter or any extra interactions between them. They just simply sit together while sharing a box of cookies. Taehyung is a man of few words and Jungkook isn’t an overtly talkative child so they usually wouldn’t converse unless it was necessary to do so. It is a peculiar sight indeed as Taehyung and Jungkook eat quietly together like any other awkward father-son pair in the world would do.


After the snacking session, it is time for bed.

As there is only one small single bed in the house, Jungkook and Taehyung previously had no
choice but to accept the fact that they must sleep together. Taehyung is a heavy sleeper, the kind that would instantly fall asleep once his body touches the bed. One thing that even Taehyung doesn’t know about himself is that he would always unconsciously adjust to use Jungkook as a human bolster in his sleep. Only then would Taehyung hug Jungkook so tightly that Jungkook found it hard to breathe. “So soft and cuddly,” Taehyung would mutter those words in his sleep.

At the start, Jungkook hated it. His dad’s limbs were so heavy and he could hardly breathe! And it’s not like we are very close, Jungkook would think to himself in the past. However, after 5 months of living with Taehyung, Jungkook got used to it. Too used to it in fact. Besides, Taehyung is the least threatening and the most loving when he is sleeping. When he is sleeping, Taehyung would not scold or hit Jungkook but instead he would give Jungkook a warm and cuddly night-long hug. “Don’t leave me little one…” Taehyung murmurs in his sleep and clutches onto Jungkook tightly.

Watching his dad’s sleeping face, Jungkook is suddenly hit with a strong sense of peace and serenity and slowly, he closes his eyes, his small hands clutching onto his dad’s chest as he gradually drifts off into dreamland.

Jungkook is quite sure that he only likes his dad in these moments.
The Kidnap

Chapter Summary

Take note of the date and time -> this chapter is in the present AFTER Jungkook left for his biological mafia family.

In this chapter, Taehyung is kidnapped by a grown-up Jungkook.

"No one can hate you more than someone who used to love you." --- Rick Riordan, The Blood of Olympus

***

Location: A foreign town 7 miles from Taehyung's village

Date & Time: 18th August 2017 3:26AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, 13 days before wedding]

***

Taehyung is lurking on the streets alone while meticulously choosing a house to ransack. Hoseok, Jin and Jimin, his closest mates in the gang, are supposed to accompany him out on the crime today but due to various personal reasons they all can't make it this time - Hoseok is currently down with a flu, Jin needs desperately to take photographs of an exotic night owl that had suddenly flown into his backyard and Jimin simply stated hours ago that he was "feeling empty". Whenever Jimin says emo things like that, he will probably be found camping in his own cave of a home listening to hours of intensive emo music while staring sorrowfully into space. What could have triggered Jimin's depressive thoughts this time? Taehyung thinks to himself as he slowly inches down a secluded alley.

***

It is at this moment when Taehyung hears some ruffling of footsteps from close behind him. He turns around to see no one but an empty alley way to which goosebumps start to creep onto his skin for his instincts are screaming at him that he is currently being watched. An ominous aura fills the air as the shuffling sounds persist for some 20 seconds. Having been a street gangster for many years, Taehyung has acquired a strong sixth sense for danger. His mind is currently warning him of an incoming threat for the unknown source of the sounds are heard to be approaching closer and closer towards his current location. Feeling rather apprehensive, Taehyung quickens his pace into a jog as he curses softly under his breath.
At this moment, a figure suddenly looms in from behind the shadows to grab onto Taehyung roughly by the waist. The attacker then pulls the 28-year-old man towards himself, eliciting a grunt of shock from Taehyung but otherwise the 28-year-old man is able to react quickly by sending a hard kick to the back. Taehyung’s worries are confirmed, someone is really out here to attack him and he needs to take the person down immediately.

Unfortunately, what follows next throws Taehyung completely into panic. The attacker skilfully catches Taehyung’s attacking leg firmly by the ankle causing Taehyung to gawk in dismay as he stares at his own trapped limb. It takes more than an average Joe to smoothly dodge Taehyung’s deadly flying kicks and in fact, nobody in Taehyung’s fight history had ever successfully avoided his kicks not to mention catching his leg in the midst of an attack. Who is this person? Why is he so strong? Why is he attacking me? Millions of questions start to pop up in Taehyung’s mind.

“Long time no see. I’ve missed you, don’t you miss me?” the attacker’s deep voice travels into Taehyung’s ears to which Taehyung curses silently under his breath. Gritting his teeth in distress, cold sweat starts to break out from Taehyung’s forehead as he tries to pull his trapped leg back frantically to gain control but to no avail for the attacker’s grasp is too strong for him to manage. Taehyung looks up again to identify the attacker but because there are no lighted lamps in the area to illuminate the dark, he is only able to make sense of the silhouette of a muscly-looking man. The man is a few inches taller than Taehyung and possesses a slightly bigger frame than Taehyung but hell, this man is so much stronger than Taehyung. A wave of fear sweeps over Taehyung as he tries desperately to recall the people whom he is having feuds with but somehow, he is unable to remember anyone who even slightly resembles the man standing in front of him. A man with such grip, strength and arrogance exuding from his voice - Taehyung is quite sure that he had not met anyone with such characteristics in the past.

“Let go of me you… mpphht!” Taehyung shouts but before he can complete his sentence, the attacker unexpectedly releases his grip causing Taehyung to trip and fall backwards onto the ground from his own pulling force.

“I’m a little sad now daddy. Don’t you recognize me?” the man asks and squats down, lowering his frame to meet Taehyung at eye level. He inches closer and brings his face extremely near to Taehyung’s such that they are able to feel each other’s breath brushing against their own skin. This time, the man is much closer to Taehyung and this allows the street gangster to clearly witness the facial features of the man.

"Kook?!" upon recognition of the attacker, Taehyung blurts out in profound shock. This man in front of him is surely Jungkook. Taehyung had always thought that he would never get to see Jungkook again from the day he had left him so the sudden appearance of Jungkook catches him completely off guard. At this moment, the street gangster's mind starts racing and millions of questions start
shooting across in his mind.

This person - his eyes, nose, lips - this person is definitely Kook. But what is Kook doing here? Why is he following me? How does he look so different? Taehyung thinks to himself in profound disbelief yet his heart is exploding in joy at the same time. The street gangster simply cannot contain the happiness, confusion and surprise he is feeling. He had missed his son so much every single day of his life after he had left for his real family.

However, a part of Taehyung is still undeniably uneasy about this entire situation. This man is Jungkook? How can it be? His son looks so different now. In Taehyung’s memories, Jungkook’s final image remained at the age of 15. The boy at that time was still a few centimeters shorter than he was and although the boy was already muscular and lean at the age of 15, some baby fats could still be seen on his face. In short, his son was still cute at that time when he left but this man in front of him is far from cute. Visibly, the current Jungkook possesses a jawline so sharp it can cut souls and when they were still standing just now, Taehyung could recognize that the man was a good 4-5 inches taller than him. As Taehyung’s eyes travel downwards to Jungkook’s torso, he is instantly greeted by impressive chest muscles and arm veins that bulge out dangerously threatening to burst out from the pathetic short-sleeve T-shirt that he is wearing. Taehyung also notices that Jungkook’s arms are buried in tattoos that he does not recognize.

A smirk flashes across Jungkook’s face. He is very satisfied with his dad’s flustered reaction. Looking down at his speechless dad gawking back at him in both terror, confusion and awe, Jungkook grabs Taehyung’s face roughly by the chin eliciting a yelp from the older man, pulls in on all the distance between them and starts eyeing Taehyung like a predator would of its prey.

“Dad, I thought it was impossible for you to look more beautiful than how I remembered you to be but you just proved me wrong,” Jungkook speaks as his smirk gets wider to which Taehyung instantly gets triggered into outer space.

“What are you saying? Are you out of your mind? What kind of son calls their dad beautiful? Let go of me now my face hurts. Why are you like this? It’s creeping me out,” Taehyung usually talks a lot only when he is truly nervous which is happening right now. Seeing that Jungkook isn't releasing his grip, Taehyung hurls a punch at Jungkook like how he had always beaten Jungkook in the past and when his fist gets so easily caught in Jungkook's hand he freezes up in part frustration and part shock. Taehyung then feels Jungkook’s fingers digging deeper into his cheeks to which his heart starts palpitating in slight panic. Although he is relieved that the attacker is none other than his beloved ex-son, his gut feelings are also telling him that something is terribly wrong with the current Jungkook.

“You look too fuckable for your own good when you wear bandanas,” at this moment, Jungkook blurts out a blunt comment as his hand trails up to caress Taehyung’s bandana-cladded forehead to which Taehyung flinches in utmost shock.
If Taehyung was in Ikea, every table would have been forcefully flipped, turned over, and then re-flipped again.

“What the fuck is this disrespect you are giving me now Kook? And I said let go of me,” Taehyung asserts firmly as his blood begins to boil in utmost anger but to his horror, Jungkook just chuckles in amusement and then proceeds to glare intensely at Taehyung with a contorted smirk. Taehyung had never seen this sort of wicked expression on Jungkook before. Though the son he knew could look cold and unapproachable at times when he was in the emo phase of teenage life, he would never show such a twisted expression.

“You may expect more disrespect to come then, my dear daddy,” Jungkook spits out the words ever so clearly to Taehyung. Then, without warning, Jungkook knocks a violently struggling Taehyung out cold.

For more of my content and updates and to interact with me, you can connect with me on twitter here: hidden_tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don’t forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
The Theme Park Day

Chapter Summary

Throw back to the past again. Slight fluff.

12-year-old Jungkook being so done with Taehyung's behaviour. Though abusive, Taehyung manages to remember Jungkook's birthday and surprises him with theme park tickets. The duo goes to the theme park together.

"I've seen the ugly parts of you... and I'm staying." — Matt Chandler

***

Location: Taehyung’s house

Date & Time: 27th August 2009 6:13PM

[Kook is 12, Taehyung is 20, 4 years 11 months and 9 days into adoption]

***

Jungkook has just returned home from the bookstores. Since Taehyung can't send him to school, Jungkook has to take charge of his own education through reading a wide variety of books covering topics in politics, science, geography, history and many more. Unlike Taehyung’s lack of interest in learning absolutely anything educational, Jungkook cannot bear to not know things. His inquisitiveness and curiosity of the world knows no boundaries and he craves with a strong passion for all kinds of knowledge. If he were a student in school, he would probably be that one student that always sleeps in class but would go on to emerge as the top scorer of the cohort much to everyone’s envy.

12-year-old Jungkook is no longer the cute and naive boy he was 5 years ago after becoming the son of a man named Kim Tae Hyung. Having joined the gang in criminal activities some two years ago, his innocence has long been gone. In fact, he is already one of the top fighters in the gang and is responsible for a fair share of opponent casualties. The helplessness and confusion that he once had are now replaced by an emotionless deadpan face and if you dig deeper you will be able to detect that bit of weariness and disdain in his eyes that only a full-time housewife could come to possibly possess.

The housewife in question inches close to the dining table and frowns upon seeing the plate of
unfinished vegetables.

You know that teenager phase in your life when you were perpetually annoyed with your parents for being shit parents? Jungkook is at this stage in life now.

“Dad, how many times must I tell you to finish the greens?” Jungkook nags at Taehyung who is currently sitting on the living room’s sofa watching television from a TV set that he had stolen last month. The older man splays lazily like a slug on the sofa, his pivotal right arm moving just enough as to grab and transfer chips from his hand to his mouth. Taehyung’s eyes remain fixed to the TV as he entertains himself with the British drama that is currently broadcasting.

“What?” Taehyung says mindlessly as he munches onto chips, not really registering the nagging voice of Jungkook reverberating in the background.

A few moments later Jungkook begins raising his voice.

“Dad! I told you umpteen times not to throw your socks everywhere!” this time Jungkook’s voice is heard coming from the bathroom. He sounds a little more annoyed than before.

“Oops,” Taehyung says blankly as he continues to munch on chips. The actress on this British show is so beautiful. What is her name? Taehyung thinks to himself in curiosity and awe and in this moment he makes a mental note to do an online search after the broadcast ends when he suddenly hears an agitated Jungkook screaming at the top of his lungs from the bedroom.

“Oh my god dad! Why did you throw your bloodied knife onto the bed? I told you to always leave it in the pail!!! Now the bed looks like a fucking crime scene thanks to you!!!!!!”

“Did I do that again?” upon hearing Jungkook’s yell of distress, Taehyung murmurs a question absentmindedly with his eyes still staring intently at the TV screen. The main characters including the pretty actress are currently riding horses while conversing to one another in English. What are they actually saying? Well, Taehyung won’t know because Taehyung knows less than 10 words in the English dictionary. So why is Taehyung watching a drama that he doesn’t understand? Well, probably because he is too lazy to reach out for the remote on the far end of the sofa to switch channels and also partly because the actress is being such a delicious eye candy that Taehyung can’t seem to take his eyes off from.

In this moment, a frustrated Jungkook walks into the living room looking obviously unhappy. He
swiftly picks up the remote and turns off the TV. Without the TV distracting, Jungkook finally gets his dad’s attention.

“Why are you like this? Give me the remote,” Taehyung instructs in a disapproving tone.

“No. Did you hear all those things that I just said to you?” Jungkook asks, sounding absolutely pissed-off.

Upon hearing that, Taehyung huffs in mild annoyance.

“All grown up and getting rude now aren't you? I took care of you all these years and this is how you are going to talk to me?” Taehyung speaks with an agitated voice, evidently unhappy about Jungkook’s attitude.

“For your information it is me doing all the cooking, washing and cleaning from day one. Are you sure it’s not me who is taking care of you?” Jungkook throws a question back at Taehyung savagely.

In this moment, Taehyung can’t actually find words to retaliate so he stands up to hurl a habitual punch at Jungkook. Jungkook swiftly dodges the punch and proceeds to give his dad the “are you serious” face. Evidently, the current Jungkook is already very familiar with Taehyung’s violent movements: he knows the exact curvature and route of Taehyung’s punch, the exact time it takes for Taehyung’s kicks to reach his shin bone and hell, he even knows the exact distance Taehyung prefers to attack at.

After being casually reminded that he can no longer discipline his son like before, Taehyung sighs and rolls his eyes before giving in.

“Alright, alright. It’s about the vegetables, socks and the knives right? I’ll try to change those habits,” Taehyung speaks calmly and only then does Jungkook’s facial features soften up slightly.

Taehyung then walks up to his Jungkook to throw an arm over his shoulders.

“Hey son. Your birthday is coming right?”
“Yeah.”

“I got two tickets to the city’s theme park, let’s go tomorrow.”

“…”

“If you don’t want to it’s perfectly fine. I can always go with Jisoo.”

Upon hearing the word "Jisoo", Jungkook immediately snaps.

“I’m going,” Jungkook says coldly. Hearing about any of Taehyung’s girlfriends always somehow gets on Jungkook’s nerves. Those bitches don’t deserve my dad, Jungkook thinks to himself gritting his teeth even though he knows fully well that his dad is the one playing them. Jungkook has never liked it when Taehyung went out with any of his girlfriends and the young boy had almost snapped one time when he overheard one of the girls calling Taehyung "daddy". Simply unbelievable. Those girls have the nerve to call his dad their daddy?! As the rightful son of Taehyung, Jungkook was so triggered and still is triggered up till today. Taehyung is Jungkook’s daddy and Jungkook’s daddy only. In Jungkook’s heart, Taehyung is never for sharing and one day when he grows up he will make it clear to the world that Taehyung is his and nobody else’s.

―*

“*You don’t love someone because they're perfect, you love them in spite of the fact that they're not.”  
— Jodi Picoult, My Sister's Keeper

***

Location: God-knows-where but close to the theme park

Date & Time: 28th August 2009 10:32AM

[Kook is 12, Taehyung is 20, 4 years 11 months 10 and days into adoption]
“Dad, are you sure you know the way to the theme park? We passed by this building the 5th time already. I am very sure we are walking in circles,” Jungkook states firmly.

“I’m just taking some time to figure this out. No worries just follow me,” says a very directionally challenged Taehyung.

A few moments later when Jungkook sees the same building for the 14th time, he impolitely snatches over the map from Taehyung’s hands and upon viewing the map and their surroundings, he sends his dad the “are you serious” face again.

“Dad the theme park is just 200m north of where we are now.”

“Really? I didn’t realize hahahahahah alright then let’s go!” Taehyung casually laughs it off and proceeds to walk south.

Jungkook rolls his eyes, grabs onto the back of the shirt of the human he calls dad and drags him promptly in the opposite direction.

“If you carry on being like this, I might have to take care of you forever daddy,” Jungkook states.

“Oh! That actually doesn't sound too bad,” Taehyung replies nonchalantly.

Upon hearing that, Jungkook’s deadpan face gradually melts into a faint smile. To Jungkook, taking care of his dad forever doesn't sound like a bad idea too.
The Marriage Proposal

Chapter Summary

Jungkook proposes to Taehyung, doesn't take no as an answer. This chapter is classified as... I don't know....fluff?

“When you realize you want to spend the rest of your life with somebody, you want the rest of your life to start as soon as possible.” —When Harry Met Sally

***

Location: “The Mafia Origin” Secret Underground Headquarters B7-126

Date & Time: 18th August 2017 10:27PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, 13 days before wedding]

***

Taehyung regains consciousness. He opens his eyes slowly allowing specks of light to pour into his vision and unfortunately the first thing that greets him is an ear-splitting migraine. Grunting in pain, Taehyung carefully surveys his surroundings only to realize in alarm that he is currently tightly roped to a chair in a dark room. An orange ceiling lamp manifests as the only light source in the entirety of the ill-lit compound and the chilling cold from the air-conditioning causes the 28-year-old man to shiver uncontrollably amidst the confusion and anxiety he is feeling.

Questions run through his mind like a marathon. What is going on? Where am I? Why am I bound? Taehyung thinks to himself as he tries desperately to remember what happened but the throbbing headache renders it almost impossible for him to concentrate at all. Grimacing in excruciating pain, he starts to struggle in frustration.

This is the moment when someone starts speaking from behind Taehyung.

“You finally woke up,” says an unidentified man to which Taehyung snaps his head around to view the speaker who is none other than his beloved grown-up son Jungkook. Memories of what happened earlier in the day on the streets flood back into Taehyung’s mind and it finally hits him that he has been kidnapped.
Jungkook trudges over to Taehyung’s front, his paced footsteps echoing clearly in the silent room all while Taehyung glares at him with a “what-the-fuck-are-you-doing” expression. The younger man positions himself directly in front of Taehyung and makes eye contact with his dad from a top-down perspective to which Taehyung quickly looks away after realizing how uncomfortable Jungkook’s intense gaze is making him feel.

“What do you want?” Taehyung sounds surprisingly calm for his situation, though he still finds it hard to believe that the person standing in front of him is his son. It is as if his son has turned into a complete stranger, a complete stranger with no signs of warmth, affection or kindness.

“I want you,” Jungkook states firmly.

5 seconds of silence.

“What is that even supposed to mean?!?”

“You. I want you. You are mine dad.”

Taehyung finally snaps.

“Are you crazy? What the fuck is wrong with you? You disappeared 5 years ago without a word and now you just randomly appear, abduct me and say all this bullshit to me? I’m warning you let me go this instant!”

Upon hearing Taehyung’s agitated words, Jungkook explodes like a volcano too. He walks over to Taehyung till there is no more distance between their bodies and grabs a fist full of Taehyung’s hair. Ignoring Taehyung's struggles, Jungkook forcefully pulls Taehyung's head backwards by the hair causing Taehyung’s skull to arch back painfully while exposing his neck completely.

“Urgh!” a short gasp of shock escapes Taehyung’s mouth before he swallows the rest of his disbelief back into his gut. Taehyung is a proudful man and he doesn’t want to show any weakness especially to his son who he desires to attain respect from. The older man deliberately looks to the side not wanting to face Jungkook to which Jungkook gets even more irritated.
“Look at me! Why are you not looking at me?” Jungkook bellows in fury while his other hand reaches over to grab roughly on Taehyung’s jaws. He then forcefully turns Taehyung’s head in a snap to face himself and before the indignant Taehyung can even react to the unfilial treatment he is receiving, Jungkook tilts his head and savagely crashes his lips onto Taehyung eliciting a surprised gasp from the older man.

"Dkfjaldjskldaldjfsldjfsldf!” exclaims Taehyung who is evidently in visible distress regarding the mouth invasion he is experiencing.

On the other hand, Jungkook continues to give no fucks and proceeds to devour Taehyung’s mouth as if there is no tomorrow. Gripping Taehyung’s head firmly in place, he sucks roughly as if savouring the best food in the world. As dramatic as it sounds, the delicate softness and honey-sweet taste of Taehyung’s rosy red lips are enough to send pleasant shocks coursing through Jungkook’s entire body and in an instant the beast inside Jungkook abruptly breaks loose. Jungkook does not hold back anymore. He starts to bite mercilessly onto Taehyung’s lips causing Taehyung to yelp in pain. Jungkook then catches the opportunity to force his tongue into Taehyung’s slightly-parted lips only to violently assault Taehyung’s insides. On the other end of the treatment, Taehyung shuts his eyes and struggles to pull back desperately in an attempt to retaliate but instead earns a painful yank to force him back into position. Jungkook is like a starving beast that can’t wait to swallow Taehyung whole as he literally eats into Taehyung’s mouth like a savage hound. Throughout the process, Taehyung’s angry growls gradually turn into helpless whimpers, his body slightly shaking from the violent physical assault he is experiencing.

After what seems like an eternity, Jungkook finally pulls back allowing his sanity to sink back into consciousness. While Jungkook is panting heavily from the exertion just now, Taehyung is coughing so hard from the lack of oxygen that he almost chokes to his own death.

Jungkook gazes down at a flustered Taehyung and smirks. He is very happy with the way he is confessing to his dad. There’s finally progress! Jungkook thinks to himself and heaves a sigh of relief. He is finally letting his dad know that he loves him in a romantic way after so many years!

“I think I just made myself clear on the fact that I…like you very much,” announces Jungkook verbally to reinstate his confession to which Taehyung who has just managed to reintroduce some oxygen back into his system starts to roll his eyes 394840849024802 degrees to the back of his head.

Taehyung isn't dumb. If he still doesn’t realize Jungkook’s intentions after being forcefully kissed then he’ll probably need a clinical diagnosis of severe autism. To physical beings like guys, a kiss is equivalent to a full-on confession of their feelings of attraction. Taehyung is also a guy himself and from the intensity of the forced kiss just now, he can clearly detect the enormous desire that Jungkook has for him. Although Taehyung is currently feeling so angry about the said physical
assault, he is not going to kill himself or make a scene over it. After all, Taehyung is a 28-year-old man who had slept with more women than his fingers and toes can count so it doesn’t make sense for him to cry over a forced kiss like a 16-year-old girl who hasn’t lost her virginity. Instead, as an adoptive parent of Jungkook, Taehyung is immediately more concerned about the sexuality issues surrounding Jungkook.

“This is wrong Kook, so wrong. I am your dad and you are my son,” Taehyung reprimands to which Jungkook nonchalantly shrugs.

“Technically we are not blood related. And you’re only 8 years older than I am.”

“But still! I am not gay and you know it! You yourself know my past relationships with women.”

Jungkook furrows his brows upon hearing that.

“Is that relevant?”

“Of course! I’ll probably have married Jihye! Or Tricia… or maybe Jenna… but all of them suddenly disappeared 2 years ago!”

“Dad, do you mean Jisoo, Lisa and Jennie? Hell, can you at least try to remember your girlfriends’ names properly before trying to convince me that you actually care about them?”

“Whatever, their names are not the main point. The main point is I. Love. Women. And. You. Should. Too. Seriously, women are such beautiful creatures: their long hair, their big watery eyes, their curves… They are beautiful from the front to the back and from the head to the toe. You are a man too, why would you not like them?”

“Well, it’s not that I don’t like them or anything but I personally think you are more beautiful than any woman in the world.”

Upon hearing that cheesy sentence, Taehyung almost vomits blood. He can’t believe that his son had just said what he said with a straight face. Currently Taehyung has his hairs standing on ends and all he wants to do is to face-palm a million times but unfortunately his agitated hands are tied to the chair. If Taehyung was in ikea, he would’ve flipped all the tables, turned them back up and re-flipped them again 48290482390402 times.
After stunning for a few seconds, Taehyung lets out a deep sigh of exasperation and for the first time in his life, starts to reflect on his past actions as a parent with grief in his eyes.

“Kook this is all my fault for keeping you around me all the time. Should’ve brought you out to meet some pretty girls. Should’ve shown you some of my best collections of porn and hell, I knew I shouldn’t have skipped the awkward sex-education talk. What in the world was I thinking this is all my fault!” Taehyung exclaims in remorse and is actually so upset over the fact that his son is gay, or more so, gay for himself.

Jungkook gazes at his blabbering dad unapologetically and is instantly amused by his dad's dramatic reaction.

“Yes, it’s all your fault. So you’ll have to take responsibility don't you think?” Jungkook teases and smiles mischievously like he always did in the past causing Taehyung to be suddenly thrown into a sea of nostalgia. Initially, Taehyung is so frustrated with himself for being a failed dad but upon seeing Jungkook’s smile, a wave of familiarity washes over him like a tsunami and suddenly he finds himself drowning in tears. He had missed his son so much. He had missed his son’s warm smile. He had missed the way his son would hug him to sleep at night. He had missed the meals his son would cook for him and the cookies his son would bake for him from time to time. He had missed the way his son would scold him if he were to throw his socks in the bathroom. In short, Taehyung missed everything and everything about his son. The magnitude of his longing for Jungkook cannot be described in words and he has been burying his feelings so deep inside his heart that even he himself doesn't realize it. All Taehyung needs is a light scrap on the surface to evoke the vast sea of feelings he has for Jungkook be it a simple smile or a familiar facial expression. To see that a part of his young Jungkook is still living in the current grown-up man, Taehyung is instantly overwhelmed with immense happiness and relief.

But not for long, of course.

“Dad, I just simply smiled at you and now you are already in tears of joy. How am I going to believe that you don’t love me?” Jungkook snickers, sounding like a smug policeman that has just gotten critical evidence of a suspect.

“God save me,” Taehyung is instantly snapped back into reality from his nostalgic thoughts and feels as if his lifespan has shortened some 20 years because of his mental son.

“Dad, I’m serious. I love you. I love you more than anything else in the world. You are the one that I want to love, protect and care about for the rest of my life. In this 5 years without you, I live as if I am in hell. I hate you so much but I love you more. There isn’t a single moment when I don’t miss
you. Nothing tastes good when I’m not eating with you. I can’t even sleep well at night without you by my side. You don’t understand, I really can’t live without you, dad,” Jungkook suddenly blurts out a paragraph of love letter from nowhere and none of the words are what Taehyung wants to hear.

Before Taehyung can respond, Jungkook suddenly goes down on one knee and takes out something small and shiny oh what is it wait what oh oh oh my god it’s a fucking ring.

“Dad, will you marry me?” Jungkook holds out the ring and asks sincerely while looking up at Taehyung with the signature puppy eyes that he had used to make when he wanted Taehyung to buy him some candies in the past.

“What the fuck!” Taehyung screams and suddenly feels an intense desire to faint and die right there and then.

“Dad, talking about Jisoo, Lisa and Jennie, do you know why they disappeared 2 years ago?”

“Why?!?”

“Because I sent people to warn them that if they don’t scram to the other side of the world or if they speak one more word to you that they and their families can expect to never see daylight again.”

“What?!”

“Well, you can expect me to do that to all the women you try to hook up with. Try me,” Jungkook warns before letting out a deep sigh as he continues speaking, “I think that to this stage I can be frank with you already. Dad, I am not just anyone. I am the mafia boss…” Jungkook then goes on to give a speech about his status and power and how he is basically king in the underground world. "So if you try to run from me, I will hunt you down and hunt whoever you hook up with down. My connections in the world spread throughout the globe so there’s no way you can hide from me. You understand?"

Throughout the past 5 minutes while Jungkook is speaking, Taehyung has just been gawking at him in utter disbelief and for the second time today he almost vomits blood. He opens his mouth to speak but realizes that he cannot find any words to say so he closes his mouth again.

“One question dad, do you love me?”
“I guess so, but not in that way. I don't care I'm not marrying you.”

“Aww that’s cute but I’m sorry you don’t have a choice because you are actually already my wife.”

“WHAT YOU SAY!”

“On my 18th birthday, I flew to Holland and registered us as a same-sex couple under Dutch law. Forged your signature and managed to get the official certificates. I’m turning 20 in 2 weeks so technically you are already my wife for around 2 years. Do you want to see our marriage certificate?”

Seeing that Taehyung is speechless because he is busy trying not a get a heart attack, Jungkook takes it that silence means consent and continues: “All that is left is for us to recite our vows to make this marriage complete. Anyway I’ve gotten everything prepared. We will go to the church and recite our vows on my birthday which is coming in 2 weeks. Aren’t you excited?” Jungkook says all these with the most innocent smile on his face and then suddenly his face contorts into a perverted smirk: “And when that happens, you’ll be officially mine and mine only.”

With that being said, Jungkook casually slips the ring he is holding onto Taehyung’s finger. Since Taehyung’s hands are tied to the chair, he is unable to remove the ring that he so wishes to destroy himself.

Taehyung is beyond desperate. “Kook ah you need to calm down and hear me out I think it’s time for a dad-son talk and I know I have been pretty mean to you in the past like I always make you do things for me I am so so so so sorry but you know sometimes things in life just ----mmmmfftttt!!!!”

Taehyung’s words are cut off with a forceful kiss round 2.

---

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don’t have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~
Connect with me on twitter where I post updates, polls, short stories, AUs and other related content: @hidden__tracks (two underscores)

Also, you can buy me a cup of coffee to motivate me in writing and to show support for my stories here: hiddentracks@ko-fi (thank you <3)
I Will Protect You

Chapter Summary

Throwback to the past. Angst chapter in which young Jungkook almost gets captured by a paedophile and Taehyung comes to the rescue.

“If by my life or death I can protect you, I will.” — J.R.R. Tolkien, The Fellowship of the Ring

***

Location: Taehyung’s house

Date & Time: 5\textsuperscript{th} June 2005 10:26PM

[Jungkook is 8, Taehyung is 16, 8 months and 18 days into adoption]

***

Taehyung arrives home from gang activities much later than he usually does today. The street gangster generally returns home between 5-6PM to have dinner with Jungkook but due to unforeseen circumstances in which one of his gang members’ arm got hacked off during a gang fight earlier, Taehyung had no choice but to stay behind a couple more hours to settle the matter. Taehyung is a responsible gang leader after all and treats all his gang members with empathy and respect. In the face of unfortunate accidents like this and as the head of the gang, the least Taehyung could do was to provide support for the casualty. After Taehyung and the other members of the gang had attended to the injurer’s wounds and made sure that the poor soul was in a stable condition, the gang leader headed home with a heavy heart as he pondered the fragilities of human life.

Over the past few years, Taehyung had lost so many gang members. One died in his arms 2 years ago after being stabbed 8 times in the heart during a chaotic gang war and that event still haunts him in his dreams up till today. The pain never goes away when someone dies in vain. Taehyung sank into deep melancholy as he trudged along the familiar path back to his house. By the time he reaches home which is the current moment in time it is already quarter past 10.

“I’m back Kook, go get me some water,” Taehyung commands sternly yet with a weary voice. He then lazily removes his boots before throwing them haphazardly on the ground.
No response.

“Kook, have you had dinner? Wanted to call home to tell you to eat without me but you didn’t pick up.”

Still no response.

Taehyung furrows his brows as he walks around the house in search for his son. Is he in the bathroom? No. Is he in the dining room? No. Is he in the bedroom? Hell no.

Jungkook is nowhere to be found. Jungkook is not at home. Jungkook is missing.

Upon the realization, a wave of panic surges into Taehyung’s heart. Where is Jungkook? Did he run out of the house by himself? It is already night time and Taehyung always emphasizes to Jungkook the importance of not going out alone at night. The village is plagued with gangsters and thugs just like himself and although approximately 80% of the gangsters in this village belongs in Taehyung’s gang, there are plenty of other law perpetuators living around the area who will not hesitate to hurt his son especially when it is quiet and deserted on the streets at night.

After observing the surroundings at home, Taehyung eliminates the possibility of a break-in capture in his mind. Struggling between an intruder and a victim would have displaced some items or at least resulted in some form of damage for example a shattered glass or window pane, messy carpet, unlocked windows or unlocked doors. However, the house looks too tidy and kempt with not a single trace of crime. Furthermore, the food on the dining table is presented in a neat fashion and the doors are also locked properly. It is as if Jungkook prepared dinner for Taehyung a few hours ago and left on his own accord. But why?

Just then, something colourful under one of the dining plates catches Taehyung’s attention. Taehyung squints and pulls it out. A lengthy post-it note comes into view.

[Daddy, I am going out to the field beside the river to watch fireflies! Sorry I didn’t tell you earlier because I know you wouldn’t allow me to go out at night. You won’t go with me too and said it was lame the previous times I asked. I don’t care I want to see pretty fireflies no matter what my punishment will be!!!!! Bye dad, enjoy dinner!!!] --- JK.

“God damn it!” Taehyung swears under his breath after reading the note and immediately rushes out of the house towards the field. He just hopes that Jungkook is safe and sound because to be entirely
honest Taehyung can’t actually think of an easier target than a young defenceless child sitting alone in a deserted field watching fireflies. Combined with the high crime rates in this village, Taehyung can safely say that there is at least a 90% chance of Jungkook being abducted if he does not locate him immediately.

As Taehyung is running like a wild horse on full speed towards the field, he can barely contain the fear in his heart. The thought of Jungkook being captured and possibly trafficked is killing him from the inside.

“Please don’t let anything happen to my boy please,” Taehyung murmurs repeatedly under his breath as he dashes as fast as his legs can carry him and as if the anxiety isn’t enough, guilt starts to sink into his mind. He believes that if he had agreed to watch fireflies with Jungkook, Jungkook wouldn’t have ran out on his own. That boy is so young, so innocent and so unaware of the danger he is facing. If something happens to Jungkook, Taehyung will never ever forgive himself. Besides, the arm hacking incident that happened to Taehyung’s gangmate earlier in the day reminds Taehyung that unexpected tragedies happen all the time. If it can happen to his gangmate, it can happen to Jungkook too. As more thoughts of his countless gangmates’ deaths come flooding back into his mind, an immense sense of helplessness encapsulates Taehyung’s whole being as his heart starts to pang in profound panic.

Just not Jungkook. Please. Out of all the people in the world, Jungkook is the only one that Taehyung wants to protect with his life.

***

After sprinting for what seems like an eternity, the field is finally in sight. The view is breath-taking as millions of fireflies can be seen glowing magically in the dark. However, Taehyung is not in the mood to watch fireflies for he is on a mission to find his son. Scanning the field frantically with his eyes to spot his son, Taehyung closes in on the field.

Just then, Taehyung spots Jungkook sitting at one corner of the field facing the lake as he silently watches the luminous bugs fly like lanterns in the night sky with awe in his eyes.

There Jungkook is. His boy is safe and sound.

Upon realizing that, Taehyung heaves a heavy sigh of relief and starts to cut down on his running speed. You little bastard I’ll see how to punish you later for scaring me like this, Taehyung thinks to himself and relaxes slightly but not for long because two seconds later Taehyung spots a shadow of a suspicious person hiding in a tree just a few metres behind Jungkook. The person is slowly making
his way out, creeping silently towards Jungkook from the back and once the person closes in on Jungkook and emerges from the shade of the tree, Taehyung immediately recognizes the person to which his blood runs cold.

This person is none other than the notorious paedophile of their village. Seven years ago, this man was found guilty of having raped and killed 8 orphans. Usually the central police would not interfere if say one or two kids were found missing, but the serial rape cum murder case was so serious at that time that the head police department from the city had to step in to send a large team comprising investigators, forensic scientists and policemen over to the run-down village to solve the case. Eventually, this despicable scumbag was caught and was immediately sentenced to life imprisonment. However, a later psychiatric assessment diagnosed him with schizophrenia causing his sentence to lighten dramatically considering his psychosis. Gradually, his schizophrenia worsened and he was then transferred out from prison into a mental hospital for treatment. A few months ago, he was released from the mental hospital after seeming to have “recovered”. Much to many of the villagers’ discomfort, he actually returned to the village and is currently working as a butcher in a secluded corner of the village. He earns from the few customers that comes to buy meat from him regardless of his criminal records and acts as if he has changed - he wears neat clothes, smiles sincerely at his customers and even apologizes to the villagers that come throwing eggs at him from outside his shop time to time. If he isn’t seen now creeping up on Jungkook with a perverted smirk, Taehyung would have really believed that this man has changed.

That despicable paedophile is so close, so close now to Jungkook and Jungkook is still looking the other direction at the fireflies with an innocent expression on his face, totally unaware of his own situation.

This man….is trying to attack my son.

This man…is trying to attack my son.

This man…is trying to attack my son.

After recovering from his initial shock, Taehyung screams in profound rage as he charges towards the paedophile at lightning speed. Before the paedophile can react and run away from having been noticed, Taehyung pounces onto him and starts to beat him up like there is no tomorrow. Jungkook, upon hearing a commotion, turns his head around only to see his dad in the process of beating the crap out of a stranger.

“How DARE YOU TRY TO TOUCH MY SON!” Taehyung bellows in fury as he beats the daylights out of the scumbag. He punches the paedophile in the stomach several times, slaps him so hard across the face and ends off with a savage hard kick to his groin. Taehyung then repeats the beating procedure some thousand of times before stopping. He watches the paedophile fall to the ground whimpering in excruciating pain before issuing a final warning.
“If I see you again, I will kill you,” Taehyung warns and he isn’t joking. Taehyung then grabs a speechless Jungkook by the ear and heads home.

When they arrive home, Taehyung slaps Jungkook so hard across the face multiple times and uses a belt to whip Jungkook so hard till he is pleading desperately for Taehyung to stop.

“Kneel here and repent your mistakes!” Taehyung shouts unsympathetically at a wailing Jungkook to which Jungkook obeys but continues to ball his eyes out. Jungkook kneels powerlessly in the living room with his entire body covered in fresh red marks. He has never seen Taehyung so angry before and he is so confused and afraid. In the past, Taehyung would scold him, hit him, yell at him but never this crazily. He looks over to his dad with tears in his eyes and is shocked to realize that his dad is currently shaking uncontrollably with widened eyes looking even more traumatised than himself.

“Dad?”

5 minutes of silence before Taehyung find words.

“Kook, that person that I’ve just beaten up is trying to kill you. If I were to arrive 5 minutes later you could’ve died a terrible death do you understand? I could’ve… I could’ve lost you… I’m sorry…” Taehyung says, choking back the tears that are threatening to spill out from his eyes.

Jungkook looks at his traumatized dad in shock and for a few moments he is speechless. This is also the first time his dad has apologized to him.

“Sorry dad. I’m sorry, I won’t run out again,” Jungkook apologizes.

This very night Taehyung realizes that he has underestimated his love for Jungkook. He has never felt this angry before in his entire life, he has never felt this scared before in his entire life, he has never felt this helpless before in his entire life. It suddenly becomes crystal clear that the boy in front of him is all he has now. As an orphan that has never had a family, Jungkook is Taehyung’s only family. He will die to protect this boy from any harm in the world.

Taehyung reaches forward to Jungkook and pulls him in.

“I won’t let anyone hurt you… I won’t let anyone hurt you… I won’t let anyone hurt you…” and for
the whole night, Taehyung just chants the same sentence until both of them fall asleep in each other’s embrace.
Chapter Summary

Teenager Jungkook unable to resist his sexy adoptive dad Taehyung. Having all sorts of wet dreams and fantasies because of Taehyung. This chapter is classified as a "past" chapter too.

“Desire is the kind of thing that eats you and leaves you starving.” — Nayyirah Waheed

***

Location: Taehyung’s house, specifically the bed

Date & Time: 22nd December 2011 7:04AM

[Jungkook is 14, Taehyung is 22, 7 years 3 months and 4 days into adoption]

***

“Uhhh…mmmm…. feels so gooosooooood…mmm…” 14-year-old Jungkook murmurs blissfully in his sleep as he hugs his dad tightly from behind like a koala in heat while furiously grinding his morning glory deep into Taehyung’s ass crack repeatedly to which the asleep Taehyung looks low-key uncomfortable as he keeps trying to shift away from the unknown source of irritant.

Both are currently asleep so they have no idea what is going on.

All of us know that Jungkook doesn’t want to wake up.

***

2 hours later, Jungkook is awaken by a full-blown pandemonium.

“Wake the fuck up Kook! Let go of me!” screams the human Jungkook calls dad. As Jungkook slowly regains consciousness and opens his eyes, he is instantly greeted by the sight of his half-naked dad struggling turbulently in his arms.
“Let go of me and don’t fucking rub your hard-on onto me when you’re having wet dreams of girls you fucking bastard,” Taehyung snarls spitefully at his son in apparent distress. Jungkook who is still unable to fully process the situation peers hazily at his gorgeous daddy with half-opened eyes. Taehyung glares back angrily at Jungkook, his hair being in a state of absolute mess and his face currently flushing a lovely shade of pinkish-red like the insides of a ripened tomato. Watching his visibly flustered dad writhing in his arms, Jungkook’s already rock-hard cock bulges a few more centimetres in diameter.

“Hey, are you deaf! Let go of me,” seeing that Jungkook is still gaping like a fool at him, Taehyung scolds crudely as he once again attempts to shift his trapped body away from the rock-hard thing that is poking him unsympathetically in the ass.

What a literal pain in the ass his son is.

A few seconds later, self-awareness finally sinks into Jungkook as his eyes widen in shock. He immediately releases his dad from his embrace and blushes profusely in embarrassment having realized what he had done.

Well, Taehyung and Jungkook have been sleeping together in the same single bed every night ever since Jungkook was adopted at age 7. A few years back, Jungkook was unfortunately banished to the living room sofa because Taehyung deemed him to be “too big” to fit into bed alongside him. Currently, Jungkook is only allowed to join his dad in bed during winter when the living room gets far too cold. When that happens, two of them will have to squeeze like jam-packed sardines into one small confined single bed. Taehyung also has a habit of sleeping naked and likes to wear absolutely nothing except for a pair of tight boxers to sleep. While that is not a big problem in the past, it is a catastrophic issue for Jungkook now.

“Godammit dad, it’s winter now, at least put on some clothes!” Jungkook who is still feeling apologetic a few moments ago suddenly explodes and shouts back vehemently at his rude dad. He then proceeds to storm out furiously from the bedroom into the living room leaving behind a bewildered Taehyung furrowing his eyebrows at his moody son's behaviour.

Jungkook cannot bear to stay one more second in the same space as his dad for his teenage raging hormones are already wreaking havoc inside him. Unbeknownst to Taehyung, Jungkook has been having uncontrollable sexual fantasies of him ever since the boy reached puberty at the age of 13. While Taehyung is currently confused and wondering why his son is so angry when he is the rightful victim of the situation, Jungkook is just trying his very best to curb the intense urge to fuck Taehyung upside-down then and there in the bedroom.
“Stop tempting me godammit...” Jungkook mutters under his breath in the living room, gritting his teeth in profound frustration. His dad is simply being too rude and sexy to be true.

“What the hell is wrong with Kook these days,” Taehyung who is still sitting on his bed murmurs to himself. Shortly after, he decides to shrug it off, attributing his son’s moody behavioural patterns to teenage PMS. The older man then yawns loudly as he glances at the clock.

"9:20AM," says the clock.

Might as well get out of bed for a shower, Taehyung thinks to himself and makes his way to the bathroom and for the first time ever in history, Taehyung casually forgets to lock the bathroom door...

***

“Urgh!!”

In the living room, Jungkook groans in distress as he peers down with a frown at his currently very excited member poking out from underneath the thin fabric of his trousers as if saying “brother, if you can’t give me a warm fuckhole at least give me your right hand”. As much as Jungkook doesn’t want to jerk off now, his body believes otherwise. Guess he'll just have to finish up his "business" himself today again. Frowning in irritation, Jungkook gives in to his bodily needs and walks towards the bathroom to masturbate. At this point in time it just so happens that the slightly parted bathroom door is neither locked nor closed. Thinking that there is no one occupying the bathroom, Jungkook pushes the door open and enters the bathroom only to be greeted by the back view of a fully naked Taehyung who is currently bending over to pick up a fallen soap. Jungkook’s eyes widen in utter disbelief as he is instantly captivated by the scenery in front of him.

It is an instant nosebleed moment for Jungkook.

Taehyung is 22 years old this year and has a charismatic appearance hovering between that of a youthful adolescent and that of full-grown man. Jungkook gapes in awe as his eyes travels from his dad’s toned legs up to that firm ass and oh, that tiny unused pink hole is also perfectly visible from Jungkook’s point of view.

Fuck.
In this instant, a lightning bolts into Jungkook’s dick like never before and Jungkook has to literally clench his teeth to bite back a moan. The temperature in his body begins to rise dangerously as his mind flashes blank in a sub-nanosecond when all the blood in his body drains south like a typhoon into his already rock-hard sexual organ.

“Hmmm?” Taehyung turns back while still bending over to pick up the soap, gazing at Jungkook with a confused look. The 22-year-old man was just about to start showering when he discovered a fallen soap on the floor and while he proceeded to just casually pick it up, his son suddenly comes charging into his space like an idiot. The moment Taehyung’s misty eyes meet with Jungkook’s, Jungkook is so mind-blown he can faint right then and there. These misty eyes, this slightly confused yet annoyed face of his daddy staring right at him teasing him to come and fuck him… Currently, Jungkook’s dick is already leaking uncontrollably in precum threatening to burst anytime now. Tears are even starting to well up in his eyes.

“Hurry, I…I need to use the bathroom,” Jungkook stammers as he forcefully breaks eye contact with the human he calls dad before exiting and slamming the bathroom door shut to which Taehyung just continues with his task of picking up the soap. Taehyung spaces out a little and shrugs. Jungkook is a man too like himself, so Taehyung doesn’t really give a fuck now that he is accidentally presented naked in front of his own son.

“Alright, I'll be quick,” Taehyung casually announces before turning on the shower and within 5 minutes, he wipes clean of water and exits the bathroom with a towel hanging loosely around his waist.

The moment Taehyung exits, Jungkook sprints like a wild horse into the bathroom with both his hands shielding his groin area.

“Thanks,” Jungkook mutters and quickly slams and locks the door.

Seems like he needs to pee badly, Taehyung thinks to himself and proceeds to watch TV.

***

Once Jungkook is in the safe zone within the four walls of the locked bathroom, he whips out his dick and starts to stroke it hastily with his hand. The boy wishes so badly to take his dad right there and then in the bathroom. How would it feel like to be inside Taehyung? How would Taehyung’s moans sound like? Would Taehyung cry when he fucks him nice and good? Oh, it would be nice to see Taehyung cry… Jungkook imagines himself fucking hard into Taehyung from behind till Taehyung begs for him to stop. The thought of it is enough to send immense waves of pleasure that
jolts hard into his sex organ, propelling him closer towards climax. Jungkook moans softly and quickens his stroking movement, allowing his animalistic mind to run freely without restraints throughout the entire process. Maybe he could try choking Taehyung too? Or maybe he could tie Taehyung up so that he would be totally helpless against him? Jungkook knows that whatever he is thinking now is terribly wrong and sadistic on so many levels, but it's so good too.

“AHHH! FUCK!” Jungkook screams at the top of his voice as he experiences the most powerful orgasm in his life. He pants heavily as he ejaculates the white liquid that he wishes so badly to shoot inside of Taehyung instead. It is a sensation that he has never felt before in his 14 years of existence, a sensation so pleasurable that he can concuss and die right there in profound joy and bliss.

"What happened? Are you ok?" Taehyung questions worriedly from the outside after hearing Jungkook’s cries.

5 seconds of silence.

“Nothing dad, I… I just dropped the soap,” Jungkook replies softly. He then proceeds to stare blankly into space for 10 minutes to ponder his existence and the meaning of life. Then, he walks to the shower tap, turns it on and starts taking a cold bath. An ice-cold bath in fucking freezing December winter all thanks to his inconsiderately sexy dad - Kim Tae Hyung.
Chapter Summary

Amidst Taehyung’s reluctance, Jungkook and Taehyung get married in front of the VIPs in the mafia family.

“Missing someone is your heart's way of reminding you that you love them.” --- The Notebook

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Secret Underground Headquarters Presidential Suite B4-6969

Date & Time: 27th August 2017 3:17PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, 5 days before the wedding]

***

The past couple of days has been rather uneventful. After the fateful marriage proposal, Taehyung is locked into one of the most luxurious guest suites in the underground castle and is allocated multiple maids to solely serve his needs. The maids’ tasks are mainly to provide basic housekeeping services, run day-to-day errands, cook meals and most importantly to help Jungkook keep an eye on his future wife when he cannot be present. Jungkook, who is also familiar with Taehyung’s preference for curvy young ladies, had additionally chosen the assigned maids to be either flat-chested size zeros or menopaused old women. Jungkook simply cannot risk walking in on his daddy in the process of making babies for he may possibly burn down an entire country should the said event occur.

In the first few days of captivity, Taehyung was consumed in explosive rage and exhibited extremely violent behaviours. As reported from the head servant through the phone to Jungkook, Taehyung spent most of his pastime yelling at the top of his voice at the innocent maids, slamming his dry fists into walls till the white concrete surfaces turn red not forgetting to smash the many extravagant vases that probably costed millions as hard as he could on rare patches of uncarpeted grounds. After he became tired of screaming and shouting, he would go on to take a nap for a couple of hours only to wake up and repeat the same whole cycle again.

Jungkook would visit regularly after finishing his mafia duties to check on Taehyung. Three days ago, he came to the suite for only 5 minutes and the 5 minutes went something like this:
“Dad, how is everything today?”

“Bored to death, there are no more vases to break.”

“I see, I’ll get them replaced. On the side note, you can try watching some TV shows instead.”

Upon hearing that, Taehyung finally snapped again in desperation.

“Kook, can you just let me go? I’m not going to say the vow on the marriage ceremony. NOT. GOING. TO. SAY. IT. Even if you kill me.”

10 seconds of silence.

“My decision to marry you is final and you will say the vow. Accept it. I’ll come visit again.”

After his words landed, the stern-looking mafia boss left.

In the subsequent 3 days, Jungkook did not come to visit. Taehyung also gradually realized that screaming, shouting and shoving fists into walls were as pointless as trying to teach a hamster math. Not only did he not make any progress in convincing Jungkook to release him, he also earned himself a deadly sore throat and some gruesomely bloodied knuckles. As Taehyung was not suicidal enough to inflict further harm to himself, he decided to give himself a break and actually started watching TV shows like what Jungkook had suggested. Well, it turned out that it wasn’t a bad suggestion after all as indulging in other people’s drama was comparably much easier than thinking of his own screwed-up situation. While the maids were perplexed by his sudden change in conduct, they were also extremely relieved that they did not have to deal with his constant tantrums anymore.

Currently, Taehyung is lying motionless in the suite’s comfortable sofa bed while senselessly watching a random British drama broadcast.

Just then, the door swings open and Jungkook walks in. He gestures to the maids for them to leave. Taehyung ignores him and continues to stare at the TV screen with a deadpan face that is completely expressionless.
Taehyung feels dead inside.

“Dad, why are you watching British dramas that you don’t even understand? Shall we watch a Korean movie together instead?”

“Can I say no.”

Silent Korean movie watching from flat-screen TV in the presidential suite.

“Just to remind you that I’m not going to say the vow,” Taehyung blurts in the middle of the movie though rather weakly. He has a rebellious pout on his face as he speaks.

“Is it? Anyways Dad I made you cookies,” Jungkook announces with a warm smile and whips out a box of cookies magically from inside his suit. He seems to be in a good mood unlike three days ago.

5 minutes of inner struggle between pride and cookies.

“Leave it there I’ll eat them when I’m hungry later but that doesn’t mean that I am going to say the vow just because I’m accepting your cookies.”

“Damn that’s unfortunate. Care for a head massage too?”

“Fuck yeah! But that still doesn’t mean that I’m going to say the vow.”

“Oh man that’s tragic. Anyway, did you miss me over the past couple of days? I was out for a mission in Russia and I’ve missed you so badly,” Jungkook explains and moves over closer to Taehyung. He places his fingers into Taehyung’s soft hair and starts to massage Taehyung’s scalp gently. Taehyung used to love Jungkook’s head massages when they were still living together and had always demanded for Jungkook’s services time to time. Today is the first time Jungkook offered to do it himself.

“Ahhh… this is so good… yeah, about that, why didn’t you tell me earlier. Almost thought you were dead.”
Upon hearing that, Jungkook squeals.

“Aww daddy so you were missing me and was worried! I feel the love dad!”

“Fuck you very much.”

“It is impossible to love without sacrifice.” --- Elisabeth Elliot

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Secret Underground Catholic Church 2km South of the Headquarters

Date & Time: 1st September 2017 6:16PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, The Wedding Day]

***

“Jeon Jung Kook, do you take Kim Tae Hyung to be your wife? Do you promise to be faithful to her… erm sorry… him, in good times and in bad, in sickness and in health, to love him and to honour him all the days of your life?” recites the underground priest monotonously. He is uncertain why the wife in question turned out to be a man today, but oh well he isn't in the place to judge. Having been stationed here in the underground catholic church for 20 years now, he had been through all kinds of bizarre experiences and had facilitated hundreds of marriage ceremonies involving the mafia family. He can still clearly recall the many moments of shock he had needed to deal with in the past when facilitating polyamorous marriages, child marriages and the many other satanic marriages that left him puking in the backyard for hours after the event. Compared to those downright immoral practices, a gay marriage is milder and more acceptable to him. Also, forced marriages like this are more common than consented marriages here in the underground world and these ceremonies tend to involve guns being pointed at the forced party to strongly coerce them to complete the vow.

The priest just hopes that he doesn’t see any guns today. As long as there are no guns or any other
torture devices involved, it is still considered a peaceful arrangement for the priest.

“I, Jeon Jung Kook, take you, Kim Tae Hyung, for my lawful wife, to have and to hold, from this day forward, for better, for worse, for richer, for poorer, in sickness and in health, until death do us part.” Jungkook recites perfectly with a smile on his face. On the other hand, Taehyung looks visibly uneasy. Firstly, Taehyung is quite sure he doesn't want to marry Jungkook. Secondly, he doesn't want to become a "wife" - why is he being referred to as a wife in the first place? Is the term "wife" written in the priest's script by Jungkook or something? Taehyung is clearly a man with a dick so he isn't entirely sure why the whole mafia world including Jungkook himself seems to be able to settle on calling him a "wife" in this wedding. Taehyung has been thinking that maybe Jungkook was just joking around previously but then the son-of-a-bitch literally used the term "lawful wife" to address him in the vow. Do I look like someone you can wife? Seriously Kook?! Taehyung thinks in profound disbelief to himself trying his best to curb the urge to punch some unicorn sense into his obviously retarded ex-son.

“Kim Taehyung, do you take Jeon Jung Kook to be your husband? Do you promise to be faithful to him in good times and in bad, in sickness and in health, to love him and to honour him all the days of your life?” the priest repeats and glances over at an exasperated Taehyung who looks like he doesn't know whether to laugh or cry or faint right there on the spot.

The desperate Taehyung then proceeds to bite his lips while glancing nervously around only to see that everyone present is staring back at him in silence and solemnity. Shit, Taehyung finally understands the seriousness of his situation with his blood gradually running cold. Jungkook’s whole extended family is here including his uncles, aunts, cousins, nephews, nieces. A casual reminder that Jungkook’s birth father is dead and it is also assumed that his mother is dead so they aren’t here to watch the wedding. Jungkook’s extended family members have all been very supportive about this marriage though it is more likely that they can't be unsupportive because no one dares to defy the mafia boss. One of Jungkook's close cousins and best friend, Chanyeol, is sitting at the guest seats with one hand mindlessly fiddling with a fidget spinner and the other hand playing with the hair of his supposed spouse, Baekhyun, who is crossing his arms staring with a pout at Taehyung. Both are drowning in boredom as they cannot wait for this ceremony to be over. At least my Baek was willing, Chanyeol thinks to himself and smirks.

“I can’t… I don’t want to say it,” Taehyung finally blurts out. He can't believe that this moment has arrived and although he had seen it coming, he realizes that nothing could have ever prepared him for this crazy situation happening right now.

“Say. It.” speaks Jungkook as his face melts into a frown. Oh god, Taehyung sure hates this stern side of Jungkook.

“No,” Taehyung insists again to which everyone in the room including the priest starts to sigh, some of them glancing down impatiently at their watches. This ceremony is definitely going to drag for a
while. However, everyone keeps silent for they do not dare to interrupt or show overt unhappiness in the mafia boss’s marriage.

Just then, Jungkook reaches out to the gun in his pocket. Taehyung’s eyes widen in disbelief. Is his son really going to force him to recite the vow at gun point? If so, he had previously decided that if this moment were to come, he would rather die than to marry Jungkook.

However, Jungkook isn’t going to point the gun at the person he loves so instead of doing that Jungkook points the gun at his own temple while staring deep into Taehyung’s eyes.

A pandemonium breaks out instantly as everyone stands up in profound shock. Nobody in the room expected this, including the priest whose eyes are popping out as he mutters some prayers under his breath. Even Chanyeol and Baekhyun are furrowing their brows in disbelief as they start to watch the scene intently.

“Boss, please don’t do anything stupid!”

“Boss, calm down!”

“Boss, lower the gun please, we beg of you!”

Jungkook ignores everyone’s cries. He stares deep into his dad’s shocked eyes and speaks in front of his whole family the sincerest words from deep within his heart, “Kim Tae Hyung, I can’t live without you. Please don’t abandon me again.”

A flash of sorrow flashes past Jungkook’s eyes as he remembers the expressionless face Taehyung had given him some 5 years ago when he left.

"Go and don’t ever come back,” Taehyung had said to Jungkook with a face devoid of expression and that moment continues to hurt Jungkook up till today.

Jungkook can never point a gun at Taehyung, so he points the gun at himself to check if the person he loves is loving him back too because if he isn’t loved by the person he loves the most, there is no reason for him to live one more second in this world.
Taehyung is frozen in place and cold sweat starts to break out from his forehead.

“3, 2, 1…” Jungkook says softly and starts to click on the trigger to which Taehyung instantly goes berserk. He can’t let his son die, he needs to protect his son. He needs to protect his one and only son. He has promised before that he will not let anyone hurt Jungkook, not even Jungkook is allowed to hurt himself or Taehyung will never forgive himself if anything were to happen to Jungkook.

“Wait! I’ll say it I’ll say it! Drop your gun right now!” Taehyung screams desperately. Upon hearing that, Jungkook heaves a deep sigh of relief and lowers the gun.

Taehyung recites the vow.

You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden_tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don’t forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
Chapter Summary

Jungkook brutally fucks Taehyung. Very, very brutally. *shakes my head*

Chapter Notes

See the end of the chapter for notes

Author's Notes:

Warnings: this scene is going to be shocking. Brutal sex rape/non-con/dub-con elements (mixed with some dark humour) so this is definitely not for the faint-hearted. Just a reminder that this is a mafia AU story and Jungkook is a mafia boss in this one so let's all be real here - he ain't gon be a least bit gentle.

Disclaimer: this chapter does not represent the realities of rape. In reality, rape is extremely traumatic and once again, Taehyung’s epic reaction to the forced sex is only but a fantasy limited to his unique character in this fanfiction.

“Sex without pain is like food without taste.” — Marquis de Sade

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Secret Underground Headquarters Central Mansion aka Jungkookie’s and Taetae’s New Home

Date & Time: 1st September 2017 7:02PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, The Wedding Night aka The First Glorious Fuck-fest]

***

“Put me down you fucking bastard! I. Said. Put. Me. Down!” Taehyung bellows in fury at the top of his lungs as he uses his long slender legs to kick wildly over Jungkook’s shoulders. He can’t believe that he had forgotten what herculean strength the current Jungkook possesses as it was hidden away under his gentle facade of an exterior over the past two weeks.

“Hush hush, be a good boy my dear wifey,” Jungkook hums smoothly, ignoring his dad’s ferocious
struggles as he trudges slowly but surely towards the bedroom. A mischievous smirk is visible on the mafia’s boss face as he takes almost no effort in trapping Taehyung tightly in one of his sturdy arms.

Less than an hour ago, Taehyung had reluctantly uttered the vow with a face darker than burnt overused charcoal. The 28-year-old man could not believe that his son had used his own life to blackmail him. Jungkook, on the other hand, was sky-rocketed to cloud nine. He had looked over at Taehyung with uncontained euphoria and with happy tears in his eyes, he exclaimed in delight: “Fuck! I can’t believe this I’m so happy you’re finally mine!”

The priest who had heard the mafia boss’s creepy words proceeded to look over worriedly at Taehyung, shook his head in sympathy and left. Chanyeol stood up from his seat with his usual deadpan face, gave a few monotonous solid claps, shouted “have fun cousin!” and left with Baekhyun too. After that, Jungkook did not wait for the rest of the guests to leave for he could not wait any longer. Like an overly excited birthday boy who could not wait to unwrap his birthday present, he forcefully grabbed a yelping Taehyung, threw him over his shoulder and proceeded to board the underpass travellator back to his mansion or more specifically since they are married - their mansion.

As Jungkook took his leave from the church, a gang of approximately 20 bodyguards proceeded to follow closely behind their mafia boss in an enclosed semi-circle formation. There was no tinge of emotion in their eyes, or even if there was, one would not get to see it as all of it would be shielded under the pitch-black sunglasses they were wearing to mask their expressions. Also known as the dark knights, this group of high-prestige bodyguards would be found within the same square foot area of their mafia boss especially during missions and large-scale ceremonies like the wedding that had happened today at all times. The safety of their mafia boss was of utmost priority to them and they must protect Jungkook at all cost even if it were to cost their lives. If Taehyung wasn’t in a dire situation, he would have thought that having a bunch of high-class thugs following behind him would be one of the coolest things that had ever happened to him but at that moment all he could think about was to find the fastest way to strangle his unfilial son to death.

***

20-year-old Jungkook is all set on an important mission to claim Taehyung the adult way today. Jungkook cannot wait any longer for he has been waiting for this moment for 7 years. He has dreamt about this instance every night for fucking 7 years. These 7 years he had waited torturously and was made to painfully repress his immense and overwhelming sexual desires for Taehyung, who for many years, was living just right beside him and sleeping in the same bed as him. The feeling of being so close yet so far almost drove Jungkook crazy. He recalls those moments when his dad had just so inconsiderately paraded the house half-naked, totally unaware of Jungkook’s suffering as he ordered Jungkook around like an entitled king.

What happens when you love someone so much and hate someone so much and lust after someone
You want to fuck the shit out of that someone.

Jungkook craves so badly for Taehyung, he wants nobody but Taehyung and he will make Taehyung his and his only tonight.

As a Taehyung-carrying Jungkook reaches home and enters the bedroom, the dark knights stop to station themselves at the door and without any sympathy in their eyes, turn to face away from the slammed-shut mansion door as they resume their task to guard Jungkook like the most loyal Rottweilers in the world.

Upon realization that they have entered a bedroom, Taehyung roughly knows what is going to come. A wave of dread surges in his heart but before he can retaliate verbally, Jungkook stops in his tracks and slams Taehyung hard onto the extravagant king-sized bed stationed in the middle of the dimly-lit room.

“Urgh!” Taehyung gasps in surprise as his back lands full-force onto the mattress. Still in the state of semi-shock, he instinctively attempts to retreat to the upper bed post to get away from his son-turned-husband. Unfortunately, he is instantly caught on his left ankle and yanked back down in place. Taehyung’s eyes shoot up in rage to make eye contact with his son only to witness Jungkook staring back down lustfully at him as if a smug predator would of its prey.

Taehyung’s heart skips a beat. This is not good.

“Wait Kook let’s talk this out I’m really not ready for this…ahh!” before the older man can finish his sentence, Jungkook pounces onto the bed to crash bodies with Taehyung to which Taehyung curses under his breath at the physical contact and proceeds to kick wildly in Jungkook’s embrace.

“I said get off me you son of a bitch! You crazy?! I’m your dad for goodness sake!”

“I’ve never seen you as a dad though, Taehyung. Now will you be a good wifey for me,” Jungkook whispers into Taehyung’s left ear and without caution, bites down mercilessly onto Taehyung’s earlobe as an issue of warning before running his hands freely around the older man’s torso groping roughly everywhere as he wishes. Taehyung lets out a restrained yelp of pain as fear starts to sink into his heart.
What is going on? Taehyung cannot fully process the situation he is currently in as everything is happening too fast. A few days ago, the both of them were still interacting with the dynamics between a father and a son or at least that was what Taehyung thought it was. While Taehyung knew the implications of sex if he were to really marry Jungkook considering the fact that he could detect the enormous sexual desire his son is harbouring towards him, the lack of adjustment time and the sudden change is simply too much for him to handle.

Right after the wedding? Seriously Kook?! This boy must have been repressed to the brink of sanity!

On the other hand, Jungkook sees no problem with this sequential procedure. Step one, he likes Taehyung. Step 2, he marries Taehyung. Step 3, he then has sex with Taehyung to make him his. Completely normal and acceptable in the mafia world. Jungkook continues to ignore Taehyung’s violent squirms of discomfort and proceeds to suck and bite callously onto Taehyung’s exposed neck and collarbone. Throughout the whole process, Taehyung’s angry shouts gradually wanes into futile phrases like “wait can you just give me a moment Kook,” or something along the lines of “a casual reminder…AHH!!!… that we haven’t… mmm…. ate dinner,” as he uses all the strength and wit he can muster to push the hefty Jungkook away.

Unfortunately, Taehyung’s actions only caused both of his hands to be pinned above his head by the human he used to call son. Jungkook then whips out a handcuff from his Doraemon of a suit that he had specially prepared for this occasion and skilfully cuffs one of Taehyung’s wrists on the bed posts. Before this event, virgin Jungkook did plenty of research on the web and many of the informative sites that he had visited were suggesting the usage of handcuffs. While Jungkook was confused why such a device would be needed during sexual intercourse previously, he totally understands the application of it now that he is facing an uncooperative Taehyung.

Taehyung’s eyes widen in disbelief and explosive rage.

“You fucking son-of-a-bitch,” Taehyung spits in anger. To his ultimate shock, Jungkook who had never liked it when his dad spoke to him this way in the past proceeds to deliver a hard smack across the older man’s face just like how Taehyung used to smack Jungkook when he had accidentally placed too much salt in his dinner.

Taehyung is quaking and entirely speechless now. His son just slapped him hard across the face.

“Don’t be rude to your husband, my pretty wife,” Jungkook mutters with a tone that is both seductive and threatening, enjoying the look of shock mixed with a tinge of fear on Taehyung’s face. He then proceeds to continue his act of devouring Taehyung, biting and sucking onto his neck and collarbone as if savouring the best food in the world. There is no remorse or guilt in Jungkook’s eyes in this moment, only pure lust and yearning. Throughout the process, Taehyung just bites down onto his lips as he attempts to swallow his dreadful whimpers away.
“Fuck you’re so sexy, I want to fuck you so bad it’s good,” Jungkook mumbles under his breath as he starts to rip apart Taehyung’s clothes exposing Taehyung’s well-toned body and sun-kissed beautiful skin. Till this stage, Taehyung is already visibly in profound distress as he witnesses himself getting forcefully unclothed. Hell, who in the world wants to get fucked by their son? Taehyung is definitely not looking forward to it. With one hand cuffed to the bed post and the other hand futilely trying to elbow Jungkook away, Taehyung keeps speaking phrases like, “Kook you’re getting this so wrong,”, “Calm down Kook just calm the fuck down!”, “Aren’t you tired? Can we just go to sleep? At least for the next few days hmm?”

Unfortunately, Jungkook’s mind is set on claiming Taehyung today. Slightly annoyed with Taehyung’s resistance, he grabs a fistful of Taehyung’s hair, yanks him up and proceeds to slam his mouth against Taehyung’s with equal or even more intensity as compared to their first kiss. Taehyung gasps in shock at the sudden violation and Jungkook takes the opportunity to stick his tongue into Taehyung’s slightly parted lips before proceeding to eat violently like a savage hound into the inner sides of Taehyung’s mouth. He only pulls away when Taehyung is on the brink of choking to death and while Taehyung is still coughing due to the lack of oxygen, Jungkook takes off his own suit and starts unbuttoning his shirt while peering down at his beautiful writhing mess of a dad with a smug expression.

“Daddy you are so beautiful. Do you know that I’ve always wanted you? Every inch of your body glows in perfection…so manly, so sexy… I want you so badly and I want you now,” Jungkook says a chunk of words and none of them are what Taehyung wants to hear. Immensely frustrated, the older man tries to reason his way through his plight again.

“Wait Jeon Jung Kook let’s talk this out…urghh!” without warning, the already half-naked Jungkook starts to yank on Taehyung’s pants while Taehyung is speaking.

That’s it.

Taehyung realizes in horror that shit is really about to go down and he needs to fight hard for his life and dignity. He starts to kick frantically and is screaming like a mad dog to avoid Jungkook but to no avail. Within no time, his pants along with his underwear is torn down to his ankle and thrown away by a very excited Jungkook to the other side of the room. Taehyung gulps in horror as he watches his last bit of protection being completely shredded off from his body. Although he is not at all ashamed of his naked self, Taehyung still tries to cover his private areas instinctively with his uncuffed hand but Jungkook immediately slaps his hand away.

“Don’t cover yourself,” Jungkook says sternly as he pins Taehyung’s only free hand onto the bed. Jungkook then places his other hand on Taehyung’s belly button, a smirk gradually forming on his cheeks again. After using his index finger to trace a few rounds around Taehyung’s belly button, the
mafia boss’s hand begins to travel south. Jungkook licks his lips in excitement and his already rock-hard cock bulges a few more centimetres in diameter as he peers down at Taehyung’s limp cock with a contorted smirk.

“Don’t even think about it you … nggghh,” Taehyung continues to retaliate but to no avail as the impatient Jungkook proceeds to grab onto Taehyung’s cock before violently stroking it up and down like he’s playing with some sort of a new-found instrument.

Taehyung freezes. With his manhood in someone else’s control, Taehyung suddenly feels so powerless. Knowing that Jungkook will not stop whatever he wants to do now, Taehyung finally gives up. He shuts his eyes and bites on his lips making sure not to show that he is enjoying any of this.

As Jungkook continues to stroke skilfully, Taehyung’s cock starts to become more and more erect and Jungkook gets excited again.

“Seems like you like it daddy,” Jungkook says seductively and starts to lick and suck on his dad’s ear while still stroking to which Taehyung blushes in embarrassment as he is unable to fight his natural physical response. Taehyung is a perfectly functional man with a perfectly functional cock after all so it is entirely normal to get an erection from such stimulation.

“Just hurry and get over with it,” Taehyung mutters while gritting his teeth as he looks away from the intense gaze of Jungkook.

“You just need to say ‘faster’ daddy, fuck that face you are making now is so sexy,” Jungkook exclaims as he quickens his stroking movement to which Taehyung’s face gradually melts into a mixture of both pain and pleasure.

Torn between hell and heaven and the guilty pleasure and sins that he is feeling, the older man clenches his teeth to bite back any moans that may possible escape his mouth. Soon after, Taehyung feels an overpowering wave of pleasure consuming his consciousness as orgasmic shocks jolt through his entire body - the characteristic feeling of an impending climax. In no time, Taehyung peaks hard, ejaculating white fluids onto Jungkook’s hand as he pants heavily in shock and pleasure. Taehyung’s eyes soften slightly in this moment as he feels his bodily muscles relax after the forced orgasm but not for long because a few seconds later, the impatient Jungkook proceeds to undress himself as he stands completely naked before his wife, revealing his already rock-hard sexual organ. The moment Taehyung catches a glimpse of Jungkook’s gigantic solid rod, his face instantly turns purple.
What the fuck is that thing?!

Taehyung is quaking. He tries to think back to the past whether he had accidentally fed Jungkook anything that was particularly high in testosterone when they were still living together for the kid’s dick is simply too gargantuan to be classified under the Asian category.

This can’t be real this can’t be real, Taehyung thinks to himself in horror as cold sweat starts to break out from his forehead.

Jungkook seems to be able to read Taehyung’s mind. He beams in pride for owning such impressive assets.

“Although I look 100% pure Asian, I’m not. My birth father is half Russian and my mother is half German,” Jungkook explains smugly, visibly proud of his diverse heritage.

“Seriously?!” Taehyung wants to face-palm so hard as he squints in part disbelief and part envy at that huge rod but the next second he is groaning and struggling in displeasure again for Jungkook has suddenly pulled him over to straddle him in place. The older man is also unaware that Jungkook’s fingers are currently traveling somewhere from his inner thighs to somewhere even more intimate and before he can react, Jungkook suddenly pushes two fingers that are previously smeared with Taehyung’s own ejaculated cum into Taehyung’s tight hole. Taehyung totally did not see that coming. He yelps in pain and shock at the sudden intrusion as he starts to squirm and struggle in extreme discomfort.

“Fuck you are so tight,” Jungkook exclaims bluntly and when he feels Taehyung’s inner ring of muscles clench and suck onto his fingers like a vacuum, his already rock-hard sex organ starts to further jolt and swell in excitement.

“Wait can we just stop here today?” Taehyung pleads while trying to struggle but then Jungkook uses his other hand to press down onto Taehyung’s stomach holding him firmly in place as he starts to mercilessly scissor his fingers inward. Taehyung jolts in shock at the sudden scissoring motion and starts to whimper miserably in pain. That bastard of a Jungkook isn’t using any lube at all as he fucks Taehyung dry on his fingers.

Taehyung can no longer hold back his cries for the pain is too much for him to handle.

“It hurts wait wait… ahh!!! Wait…seriously Kook stop fooling around…” Taehyung is beyond
desperate. If two fingers are to hurt so bad, how will a full cock feel like later? Will he die? Probably.

“I’m not fooling around daddy. I need to prepare you well. Don’t want you to get hurt later,”
Jungkook explains and after some time, he adds on to the scissoring motion by thrusting the two fingers in and out of Taehyung’s abused hole to which Taehyung instantly goes berserk as he feels the fingers stabbing into him like a sharp searing knife.

“Ahh!!! Mmmgffdk …wait… it hurts…. Urghhh.. AHHH!!! Stop stop…urghhh… I can’t… AHHH!!!” Taehyung can’t even let out a complete scream for Jungkook is speeding up the thrusting motion of the fingers, driving him to the brink of his sanity.

2 minutes of painful fingering.

After feeling that Taehyung is ready, Jungkook abruptly pulls out his fingers as he watches Taehyung’s hole twitch from the loss. He then positions the tip of his cock at Taehyung’s slightly swollen entrance. At this moment, Jungkook feels so overwhelmed with mixed emotions of joy, excitement and anticipation and amidst all that, Jungkook is also a teeny bit nervous.

How will it feel like to be inside his dad finally? The man that he has been desiring every day of his life, the man that he has been wanting to conquer every day of his life, the man that he has been loving dearly every day of his life can finally be his.

Two seconds later, Taehyung who is relieved that Jungkook has ended the torturous fingering preparation finally realizes what Jungkook is trying to do when he feels something thicker and hotter poking at his entrance. He instantly flips out in shock as his brain edges close to what is equivalent to that of a complete mental breakdown.

“Jesus fucking Christ! You can’t just put it in like this you bastard!”

“Why not?” Jungkook stops in his tracks and looks down at Taehyung with an innocent face.

“A butthole doesn’t self-lubricate like a vagina! Fine, Kook, fine. I’ll let you do it today so that your thirsty ass brains can stop lusting after me like a sex maniac but if you really must do it today at least use some lube. Where’s the fucking lube?”

5 seconds of silence. Jungkook appears to be mildly confused.
“Sorry, I didn’t prepare that today but I’ll still have to fuck you. Besides, your own cum is the lubrication, isn’t it?”

Upon hearing that, Taehyung flushes deep red in a split second. Fuck you Kook. You prepared a gun and a handcuff but you forgot the lube? Fuck you, Taehyung thinks to himself but of course he cannot say that out loud because he is in a weaker position right now being handcuffed to the bed and the last thing he wants to do is to out rightly provoke his aroused son.

“No listen Kook. Why not we wait till another time can we just stop here let’s stop here okay I think that lube is really a key essential item especially since this is my first time—” Taehyung is beyond desperate and starts to blabber whatever he feels can buy him time.

“I don’t care, I want you now,” Jungkook abruptly cuts Taehyung off sternly, grabs onto Taehyung’s hips, aligns himself and pushes the tip of his sex organ into Taehyung.

The moment of entry is of course catastrophic for Taehyung because he isn’t the least bit prepared for it. All the blood drains away from Taehyung’s face in this instant.

“Ahhhhhh…” Taehyung grits his teeth in pain. He yanks his head back in pure agony as he once again tries futilely to squirm away from Jungkook. He can’t handle this he really can’t handle this and it’s really only the tip. Unfortunately for Taehyung, Jungkook isn’t going to stop. Jungkook hastily grabs both of Taehyung’s legs, spreads them apart while pressing them firmly down into the sheets as he slowly inserts the rest of his cock into Taehyung’s tight hole. Halfway in, an intense pleasure sweeps over Jungkook’s entire being and the last bit of his sanity vanishes. The mafia boss lets out what is akin to an animalistic growl as he suddenly thrusts the rest of his cock deep into Taehyung balls deep.

“Ah what the fuck!” Taehyung screams and his whole body starts to tremble in extreme pain. He flinches hard in shock and instinctively clenches his butt muscles only to feel more pain due to his inability to relax. Compared to that fucking large dick, those fingers were nothing. Nothing.

“Be good daddy, I’ll try to be gentle,” Jungkook says softly and starts to move slowly inside Taehyung. With one hand grabbing onto Taehyung’s hair and the other pressing down on Taehyung’s belly button, he tries to resist the temptation to pound hard into Taehyung and proceeds initially by moving slowly and steadily. However, after a few seconds, the overwhelming pleasurable sensation of being wrapped tightly inside Taehyung encapsulates him and robs him of the last bit of his rationality. Growling like a hungry beast who wants more, he starts to quicken his pace inside Taehyung.
3 minutes of silent rough deep fucking as Taehyung attempts to act tough. He is biting down on his currently already bruised lips trying to stop himself from screaming, though his entire torso and face are fully red from the intensity and pain beneath him. Taehyung desperately tries to squirm away whenever Jungkook’s punishing thrusts meet his ass and within minutes, Taehyung is dripping profusely in sweat and shaking vigorously from the searing pain up his spine.

Jungkook doesn’t stop for Taehyung to adjust. He holds onto his wife's hips tightly as he continues to dutifully fuck into Taehyung. A few moments later, Taehyung finally breaks down.

“Wait… I can’t… I can’t… I really can’t anymore,” Taehyung whimpers helplessly as tears start to form in his traumatised eyes threatening to spill over onto his cheeks all while Jungkook continues to thrust in with full force into him. As dramatic as it sounds, Taehyung feels like he is going to explode and die in profound pain and agony as Jungkook’s rod mercilessly jabs into him repeatedly like a spearing sword. Jungkook looks at his dad’s face contort in pure agony and in this moment his heart softens slightly. He reaches over and kisses his dad on the cheek lovingly.

“The pain will turn into pleasure after a while, hang in there, I’ll be gentle daddy,” Jungkook coaxes his dad tenderly but his dick decides not to conform to what his mouth just said so within the next minutes, Jungkook has accelerated his thrusts to a speed comparable to that of a high-voltage drilling machine.

"ARGGGHHHHH!!!!! HOW IS THIS PLEASURABLE!!!!!!!!!" Taehyung screams in part pain and part frustration before crying out in a series of helpless whimpers. He feels as if he is literally dying from being fucked senseless. Never in his life had he experienced this sort of out-of-the-world experience. Being a 100% straight man, Taehyung had always been the one doing the fucking. When girls cry and beg under him, he would take that as an affirmation of his sexual capability and would continue to have his ways with them sadistically. Taehyung can’t believe that he is in the same shoes as them now and starts to regret on his past actions. He really did not know that it would hurt so bad.

Taehyung dig his fingers deep into the bedsheets as he clutchers onto it for dear life as Jungkook fucks him so hard his head starts to bang against the bedpost behind.

“I need a break… please Kook I can’t… I can’t anymore,” Taehyung who is being pressed under Jungkook finally starts crying. Big droplets of tears that have been residing in Taehyung’s eyes spill out like a waterfall to decorate his beautiful face.

For a split second, Jungkook is so stunned that he freezes in his track. Firstly, Taehyung said the word “please” to him which had never happened before. Secondly, Taehyung fucking cried. In
Jungkook’s memory, Taehyung would never cry no matter what happened. Taehyung did not cry when his close friends die in gang wars, Taehyung did not cry when he was badly injured many times from fights, and hell, Jungkook did not even see Taehyung shed a single tear when he left 5 years ago. In short, crying was a word that had never been inside his dad’s vocabulary. To see his dad cry in front of him is like successfully ripping off his many onion layers of defence to finally reveal his innermost, rawest and the most fragile self. To Jungkook, that is sexier than anything that Taehyung had ever done and he knows deep inside that Taehyung is only truly naked and vulnerable in front of him right now. In this instant, Jungkook realizes how much he craves for all of his dad. He wants all of his dad, all of it and he wants to give his dad all of himself too.

Upon the heartfelt revelation, all hell breaks loose. Jungkook lets out a primal growl and starts pounding into Taehyung like there is no tomorrow. There is no more holding back as Jungkook grabs onto Taehyung’s waist and pulls him down, slamming Taehyung’s body deeper onto his cock at a crazy speed and force.

"AHHHHH HAHAHHHNNNNGNMM!!!!!!" the unsuspecting Taehyung burst out into fresh tears as he yelps with a long cracked-up voice, his free hand that is clinging tightly onto the bedsheets shooting up to desperately push Jungkook away but Jungkook just holds Taehyung’s waist down firmly in place.

“Fuck… I can’t… I really can’t… please…please…” Taehyung pleads weakly and at that point in time he is already full-on sobbing like a baby, his trapped legs trembling vigorously from the physical shock. Taehyung’s whole face is filled with tears as he begs incessantly for Jungkook’s mercy yet Jungkook continues to thrust in so deep and fast that Taehyung starts losing the ability to think straight.

"Daddy it feels so good inside you... how are you so beautiful daddy…I love you daddy..." Taehyung vaguely register Jungkook murmuring something along those lines and something in him just snaps apart and he completely loses his shit. Profoundly angered, the teary-eyed Taehyung musters up all his remaining energy and shouts in fury and injustice: "DON’T FUCKING CALL ME DADDY WHEN YOU’RE FUCKING ME LIKE A RAG DOLL YOU FUCKING SON-OF-A-BITCH!!!!!!"

However, to Taehyung’s utmost horror, Jungkook just smirks and says, “but I want to, daddy.”

Jungkook then continues to thrust in like a savage into Taehyung using his ex-dad as he wishes.

Upon hearing that, Taehyung feels so utterly defeated, powerless and in pain as he continues to ball his eyes out helplessly. He wonders how Jungkook obtained this sort of devilish stamina for it has already been… wait how long has it been? 10 minutes? 20 minutes? An hour? Taehyung doesn’t really know but he sure knows it feels like an eternity.
Another 1038201 minutes of merciless fucking.

“Can I just have a 5 minute break? Just 5 minutes? Please Kook?” After some time, Taehyung finally abandons the last bit of his pride and starts to beg shamelessly for mercy. Unfortunately, his pleadings fail terribly because such words only serve to turn Jungkook on even more.

“No breaks for naughty boys like you, daddy,” Jungkook says cheekily to which Taehyung swears to god that he will cut off Jungkook’s manhood one day and feed it to the pigs.

The moment Jungkook speeds up his engine and ejaculates like a tsunami into Taehyung, Taehyung loses the last bit of his consciousness he is clinging onto and passes out cold. He drifts into a state of semi-consciousness where he feels like he is half asleep and half awake and that doesn’t help at all because he can still feel the fucking going on but he can’t move a single bit to retaliate due to the sleep paralysis.

2 hours later when he emerges back awake, he gets the biggest shock of his life because Jungkook is still fucking him but this time in another position. A mixture of cum and a small amount of blood is flowing down onto his inner thighs as Jungkook thrusts into him tirelessly.

“GODDAMMIT!!” Taehyung screams in profound fury and pain. Unbelievable. Taehyung starts to hypothesize that maybe Jungkook isn’t truly human.

Ten minutes later, Taehyung faints again and when he wakes up, he realizes in wondrous amazement that he is in a brand-new position and is still being fucked.

The cycle continues. This time when Taehyung wakes up, Jungkook is slamming in from an angle that directly fucks him painfully straight in the prostate causing Taehyung to scream at the top of his lungs as he ultimately orgasms three times before passing out again.

And the cycle repeats endlessly till Jungkook falls asleep in exhaustion while still being inside Taehyung’s uncontrollably spasming body.
RIP Taehyung.

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don’t have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden__tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don’t forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~

Chapter End Notes

P.S. Poor taetae having to endure such sexual violence! >< Jungkook you need to take a chill pill and sit your ass down!
Dear readers,

There was an overwhelming response from you guys after I posted the wedding night chapter, so I thought that I need to clarify some stuff. There is a varied response from different readers: some loved the chapter, some didn't like it due to the rape. Well, all I want to say is:

I know that many of you are shocked by Jungkook's actions, but I've got the full plot planned out and the wedding night must be like this.

Jungkook is no saint in this story. Taehyung isn't one too. After all, Tae was so abusive to him when he was a child (orders him around/hits him/teaches him violence/even denies him of love or doesn't outwardly show it). No innocent child should ever go through the trauma of that.

Also, there is an element of karma in this fanfiction in which the child he abuses comes back to abuse him. Children are conditioned to act a certain way when they were brought up that certain way. They are both victims of each other's abuse and this endless cycle of violence in families/marriage is a key issue I want to highlight in this story and also the key issue to be resolved in this story. This marriage is only the beginning to their truest understanding of what it means to love each other.

You guys matter to me so I thought that I should at least give you all a heads up! I will still continue to write the story as how I planned it out to be as I don't want to hinder my creativity or restrain myself on my own fanfiction. For now, peace out and we'll see each other in the next chapter!

With love,

Your authornim hidden-tracks
Heartless

Chapter Summary

Throwback to the past again. This chapter shows Taehyung's love for Jungkook and feeling as if his son is growing up into a butterfly capable of leaving his protection. Very very sad but sweet as well because Taehyung, albeit cold on the exterior, loved Jungkook with all his heart.

Author’s Notes: This chapter is in my opinion one of the most important ones because it serves as an introduction to the many members of the BANGTAN gang: their modus operandi, their way of life and their everyday struggles. Previously I had always been exclusively focused on Taehyung and Jungkook’s relationship without much relation to the actual thug lives they had to deal with in the past. This chapter serves to add context as well as to further shed light on Taehyung’s protective love for Jungkook in the many dangerous situations during gang fights and battles. Some of their most crucial members being Jimin, Hoseok and Jin will also be properly introduced here including GOT7’s Jackson and Mark for some bonus Markson moments. Enjoy.

“Let me love you a little more before you're not little anymore.” --- Michelle Thevenot

***

Location: Underground basement of an abandoned village theatre aka the BANGTAN gang’s hideout zone in district #7, 200m west of Taehyung’s house

Date & Time: 15th March 2008 2:05PM

[Kook is 11, Taehyung is 19, 3 years 5 months and 26 days into adoption]

***

Little Jungkook had fearlessly stated his wishes to be recruited into Taehyung’s BANGTAN gang earlier that week. With clear determination in his eyes, he pledged his allegiance. “Dad, I’m ready to be part of the gang. I want nothing more than the honour of joining you guys in gang activities and to finally contribute to the gang family. Even if there’s a possibility of me getting killed in the battlefield, I’m already mentally and emotionally prepared to give my all, even if it means giving my life. You can’t shield me forever dad, I’m grown up now and it’s time for me to join BANGTAN. Please recruit me into BANGTAN, dad.”
Like an aspiring young soldier that couldn't wait to serve his nation, Jungkook articulated his beliefs sincerely but unfortunately, none of his words were what Taehyung wanted to hear.

In fact, upon hearing Jungkook’s faithful speech, Taehyung almost choked to death on his fish ball. Those words should not be coming out from a 10-year-old boy’s mouth. Although he did expect Jungkook to eventually speak to him regarding this issue, he did not expect it to be so soon considering the boy’s young age. The sudden confrontation by his adamant son instantly caused the BANGTAN gang leader to lose all his appetite over the sumptuous dinner. He furrowed his eyebrows and let out a deep sigh. No wonder dinner was so well-cooked today, Taehyung thought to himself and sighed again.

“Your request is invalid, Kook. You are only 10 years old so don’t even think about it,” after a few moments of silence, Taehyung coldly opposed to his son’s request with a face darker than burnt overused charcoal to which the sweet anticipation in Jungkook’s heart instantly turned into sour frustration. The boy slammed his chopsticks onto the table in exasperation.

“Then what’s the purpose of equipping me with combat skills all these years when you are not going to let me put them into use? What’s the purpose of bringing me out for rounds all these years when you are not going to let me participate in them? I can already defeat most of the gang members in fights and you know it too for you have been watching my sparring battles and practice with them. So why not? There is no reason for your objection. I object to your objection, dad. Besides, I’m not 10. I’m already 10 and a half,” Jungkook lashed back with a powerful argument.

The smart and observant Jungkook had already predicted his protective dad’s reaction and he had decided that under no circumstances would he back down today. He believed that he was ready and he must join the gang immediately. It was his dream to officially become a BANGTAN gang member, to fight alongside the other gang mates who were also his friends, to be their trusted brother instead of being constantly seen as a helpless baby that needs be protected, to whoop people’s asses savagely like a man instead of being stuck at home cooking, cleaning and washing dishes like a housewife. In short, the boy who was made to grow up too fast under his circumstances had craved for a life full of thrill, freedom and loving brotherhood and he wanted nothing more than to be accepted as a true member of the BANGTAN community.

I taught you all those skills for self-defence you fool, Taehyung thought bitterly to himself.

2 years back after Jungkook had almost gotten himself killed by a sickening paedophile, Taehyung had started training Jungkook intensively in fighting techniques with only one purpose in mind and that was for Jungkook to protect himself in the face of dangerous situations. That was the sole true purpose and although Taehyung did initially intend to recruit Jungkook into the gang when he was of age, he gradually started to hate the idea. As he watched Jungkook grow, he started hating the idea of sending his son into battlefields not knowing whether he would make it out dead or alive. He started hating the idea of dragging his son down into the underground world not knowing whether it
would rob the child of the tiny bit of innocence and happiness that was barely remaining inside him. He started hating the idea of involving Jungkook in complicated gang feuds not knowing whether one day his son would die in vain from an unexpected assassination by a rival seeking revenge. He hated the idea, hated it so much that gradually he had stopped bringing Jungkook along for gang activities and had stopped updating Jungkook on important gang matters.

Taehyung wanted so badly to cut Jungkook off from the world of violence and crime as he started to think that maybe, his son did not deserve any of that and maybe, just maybe, his son would someday be in a better place instead of the endless darkness that was his own world. A bright refreshing place with sunshine, flowers and rainbows, that was how Taehyung pictured Jungkook’s future. Taehyung did not picture himself in Jungkook’s future.

However, Taehyung also saw bliss in Jungkook’s eyes whenever he was brought out to mingle with the gang mates. Jungkook was especially close to Hoseok, Jimin and Jin. For instance, Hoseok and Jimin would introduce Jungkook to some new dance moves every week. “Hey Kook you’re so talented! Maybe the three of us can form a performing team next time!” Hoseok had exclaimed after discovering Jungkook’s natural gift in dancing. They would also play soccer and board games with Jungkook. Jin, on the other hand, would shower the boy with his favourite snacks that Taehyung would never in a thousand years buy for Jungkook. All three of them even promised to teach Jungkook how to get girls when he is of age.

“Chasing girls is your dad’s forte though, we are just amateurs compared to him,” Jimin had jokingly said before as he smiled cheekily at Jungkook. Taehyung overheard the conversation and smirked in acknowledgement. “I can’t help it, my face and body just attracts girls effortlessly,” Taehyung shamelessly praised himself and everyone started cracking into laughter. Jin would then take a few photos of the joyous moments with his camera.

In short, Taehyung had gradually come to realize that only in the gang’s company would Jungkook break out into a genuine smile. Taehyung loved the sight of his son’s bright smile for it brought warmth to his cold heart like a precious fire would in a cold freezing winter night. Taehyung knew more than anyone else what the gang meant to Jungkook. Denying Jungkook of the right to become a true member of the BANGTAN community would have been too cruel.

But letting Jungkook into the gang would pose great danger to Jungkook’s life.

Taehyung was torn between the two options.

“But let me give it a try.” Jungkook had asked his father. He had been a choreographer for a short time and he had quite a few ideas. Taehyung was surprised. ‘I never knew that my son had such a hidden talent!’ he thought to himself. However, the choreography for the new song was due in a few days and Taehyung knew that his son could not be left out. He was going to help his son get a good choreography for the song.

“Dad, how about this: you give me any task as a test of my fighting capabilities. If I were to succeed, you’ll have to concede to my request,” Jungkook suggested boldly.
10 seconds of silence before Taehyung finally decided to give Jungkook a window of chance.

“Alright. You know what? I want you to fight Jimin and Hoseok. If you can defeat them both this weekend in one-on-one sparring battles, I will immediately announce your official recruitment into the gang in front of all 200+ members. Additionally, you will be able to join our scheduled negotiation with the GOT7 gang two weeks later. But if you were to lose to either one of them, you’ll never speak to me about this matter again until you are at least 13 years of age,” Taehyung stated clearly with a voice deeper and colder than the ocean.

After Taehyung, Jimin and Hoseok were the second-best fighters in the gang and possibly two of the best fighters among all members of regional gangs. Jimin was an incredibly agile and flexible fighter. Gifted with a small and lean frame, Jimin displayed impressive speed and precision in his attacks: blink an eye and he would have taken that split second to do a back flip into zone and then proceed to land his signature shadow kicks onto the slow-to-react opponent rendering them dead and dumbfounded at the same time. Due to his unrivalled speed, Jimin was nicknamed and identified as “the flash” by members of other gangs, though the BANGTAN gang members would rather call him uncool names such as Chimchim or Mochi much to his misfortune. Hoseok, on the other hand, was the king of all cunning crafts. His mastery in tricks and illusions knew no boundaries for he knew exactly how to delude his opponents, slow them down in the process of deception and then attack them by surprise. As cunning as a snake, he was named “the snake” by members of other gangs though ironically Hoseok hated snakes more than anything else in the world. The BANGTAN gang called Hoseok by JHope instead for he was known to always be the life of the party and being a positive person in general, he gave people a sense of optimism and hope, hence the nickname “JHope”.

If Jungkook were to defeat both Jimin and Hoseok who were such excellent fighters, then Taehyung really could not find any more excuses to reject his son’s request to join the gang.

“Alright! Challenge accepted,” Jungkook replied with a determined smirk.

Although he was unsure whether he could defeat both Jimin and Hoseok, it was not an entirely impossible mission.

***

Currently, all the BANGTAN gang members are gathered in the large underground basement of an abandoned village theatre in district #7 that is their BANGTAN secret hideout. In this place, the smell of tobacco plagues the air constantly leaving an unpleasant stench of cigarettes. Also, the different corners of the basement serve different functions. At the left corner near the stairway entrance, there are photo frames of deceased gang members being hung up. A Buddhist-style altar is set up right below the photo frames for living gang members to pay respect to the dead. A drastic
change in mood as we move our attention to the top right-hand side of the basement which is for leisure purposes. All mah-jong and gambling activities as well as beer matches, chit-chat sessions mostly involving the usage of drugs or women are mainly carried out in that region. Next, we move our attention to the bottom right hand corner of the room storing all forms of weapons ranging from baseball bats to flammables for arson purposes. It is just by the water dispenser so the gang members can immediately wash off any blood stains on the weapons after returning from some regular slashing. Right next to the weapons corner is the “business” corner on the bottom left hand corner and it’s where all the drug supplies are stored. Drug trade is the BANGTAN gang’s modus operandi in earning good and fast money in the black market as they provide their customers with a wide range of illegal chemicals including ecstasy, aspirin, heroin and many more. Connected to the “business” corner is a door to another small room designated for the wounded. A few beds are placed inside for injured gang members to lie down and rest while the others take turns to nurse them to the best of their capabilities.

Now that every inch of the BANGTAN hideout is explained, let me casually bring your attention back to the centre of this basement hideout which is none other than the demarcated sparring arena that Jungkook, Jimin and Hoseok will be bracing today.

“I choose to fight Jimin first,” Jungkook says, visibly nervous as cold sweat starts to break out on his forehead. The whole gang is here today to witness their leader’s adopted son fight and possibly be recruited into the gang upon winning. Jimin who has been briefed about the purpose of today’s sparring battle proceeds to enter the ring confidently. He was told by Taehyung to not go easy on Jungkook and he really isn’t intending to.

Taehyung watches closely at the side calmly.

“The same rules apply. The person that touches the floor with body parts none other than the feet for more than 10 seconds loses. Of course, losing also includes knockouts,” Taehyung announces and after a few moments of silence, shouts, “3, 2, 1, start!”

Jungkook, knowing Jimin’s quick speed, immediately becomes hyperalert to Jimin’s nimble movements. He stares intently at Jimin not daring to bat a blink. In his analytical mind, the boy conjures up a plan against Jimin’s weakness: proximity. Jimin is a great fighter no doubt, but he prefers to shuffle and wait for opportunities to attack from a far distance. Once the opponent demonstrates split attention, Jimin would take the chance to suddenly cut in on the distance and deliver his fatal kicks before the opponent could react. His ability to go so fast that he is frequently undetected is attributed as one of his greatest strengths but that strength is also actually a defence mechanism to hide his greatest weakness: his inability to fight well for prolonged periods of time at a close distance with an alert opponent. Jungkook realizes that he must act during Jimin’s one-flash-of-a-hit-KO attack. He must let Jimin begin on his attack while he himself must end the attack.

With that in mind, Jungkook fakes a distracted look to lure Jimin in. As expected, Jimin swiftly
attacks within a few seconds and a flash of a backflip is the next thing Jungkook sees.

That’s it.

In this moment, genius Jungkook who has visualized the curvature of the backflip unexpectedly grabs Jimin by the neck once he lands into position causing Jimin to gasp in shock. Jungkook then instantly pins a struggling Jimin down to the ground while choking him so hard his veins starts to pop out dangerously.

“10,9,8,7,6,5,4,3,2,1…Jungkook wins!” Taehyung announces dutifully.

After confirming his win against Jimin, Jungkook immediately releases Jimin as he helps the choking man up to rest.

“Sorry Jimin Hyung, but I can’t go soft.”

“It’s ok you were supposed to give your all. Anyways, you were great! Good luck in fighting Hoseok.”

And so the fight with Hoseok commences.

Strangely, Hoseok starts off by lying down on the floor in the iconic Titanic “draw-me-like-one-of-your-French-girls” pose, staring seductively (in a joking manner, not like he is trying to really seduce Jungkook) at Jungkook.

What is this?! Jungkook’s logical mind cannot conjure up a plan against this kind of sorcery. I guess I can only act on the spot, Jungkook thinks to himself in slight anxiety. Taking in a deep breath, the boy charges forward to kick Hoseok in the stomach (fucking brutal this kid), but before his kick can land, Hoseok starts doing a street dance windmill move effectively sweeping Jungkook’s legs off the ground to which Jungkook loses balance and falls to the floor with a thud while Hoseok takes the opportunity to flip up into a standing position. Just when Hoseok thinks that Jungkook has fallen and starts to let his guard down, Jungkook suddenly thinks of an ingenious despicable move. On the ground, Jungkook’s face and arms are close to Hoseok’s feet so he lifts both of his elbows and mercilessly slams them down hard onto Hoseok’s feet, not forgetting to twist and turn his elbows to drill deeper in to crush the toes. In a split second, Hoseok lets out a painful yelp as he instinctively tries to back away from the sudden attack. Jungkook takes the moment to grab onto Hoseok’s left ankle before swiftly twisting it, causing Hoseok to lose balance and fall on his stomach onto the
ground. Jungkook takes no time to regain composure and climbs over to pin Hoseok down for 10 counts.

Unbelievable.

Jungkook has won yet again. After the announcement of his win by Taehyung, Jungkook humbly helps a wincing Hoseok up.

“Good job son, from this moment onwards, you are officially part of the BANGTAN gang,” Taehyung announces with a monotonous voice, yet a small quirk of a prideful smile is detectable on his otherwise blank face.

Hoseok who is still standing next to a stunned Jungkook at this moment is the first person to react. He proceeds to deliver Jungkook a tight bear hug as if the younger boy did not just crush his toe bones and with uncontained euphoria he screams, “I CAN’T BELIEVE YOU KOOK, YOU WERE SO AMAZING!!! WELCOME TO THE FAMILY Kookie!!”

Upon Hoseok’s scream, the silent tension previously present in the basement instantly erupts into surprised cheers as all the gang members start to celebrate the boy’s quick wit, courage and most importantly, his recruitment into the gang. Jin furiously snaps photos.

Taehyung watches at the side as everyone lifts Jungkook up for some crowd surfing. He can’t help but beam with an immense sense of pride yet deep inside he feels as if his heart is shattering. He used to hope for his son to grow up as fast as possible but facing the current situation, he suddenly realizes that he doesn’t want Jungkook to grow up so fast.

You are growing up too fast, Jungkook, Taehyung thinks to himself as he watches his son cry tears of joy in the crowd as he is literally buried in the embrace of several hundred overly-excited thugs.

Interestingly, Taehyung remembers the exact same scene 3 years ago when he first introduced Jungkook to the gang, just that Jungkook at that time was so small and afraid and was actually crying tears of horror instead of joy. Upon recalling that memory, Taehyung chuckles in part disbelief and part happiness and part sadness and also part of all other heart-clenching emotions that he can barely fathom.

Jungkook is only 10 this year and is already starting to spread his wings far and wide. What will Jungkook be like when he is 12? What will Jungkook be like when he is 15? 20? 30? Taehyung
can’t help but imagine the departure of his son one day, like a caterpillar that has turned into a beautiful and capable butterfly as it flies away silently to explore a bigger and better world. Taehyung really cannot picture himself appearing anywhere in Jungkook’s future. Watching his son afar who is staring back at him with a smug you-see-I-did-it-whatcha-gonna-do-about-it expression, he gently smiles back and hums a certain song in his head:

BTS - Butterfly

Don’t think of anything
Don’t say anything, not even a word
Just give me a smile

I still can’t believe it
All of this seems like a dream
Don’t try to disappear

Is it true? Is it true?
You,
You’re so beautiful, that I’m scared
Untrue, untrue
You, you, you

Will you stay by my side?
Will you promise me?
If I let go of your hand, you’ll fly away and break
I’m scared of that

Will you stop time?
If this moment passes
As though it hadn’t happened
I’m scared I’ll lose you
2 hours later, Jungkook gets the gang tattoo tattooed onto his lower back. Jungkook is very excited because it is the first tattoo he is getting in life. Strangely Taehyung doesn’t like what he is seeing. It somehow irks him to see his son’s skin getting partly covered by ink.

“Kook you can only get this one tattoo you understand? I don’t want any more tattoos to taint you skin.”

“Don’t be old fashioned, dad. When I grow up I’m going to get so many more tattoos! Besides, you yourself have at least 3 to 4 tattoos, some gang members even have their whole bodies wrapped in tattoos so why can’t I have more?” Jungkook laughs in a light-hearted retaliation.

“You’ll understand how I feel next time.”

"A father doesn’t tell you he loves you. He shows you." — Demetri the Stoneheart.

Location: Open field in the outskirts of the central town, 2km from Taehyung’s village
Date & Time: 29th March 2008 9:30PM
[Kook is 11, Taehyung is 19, 3 years 6 months and 11 days into adoption]
The gang negotiation with GOT7 has officially commenced. In the midst of a slight drizzle, two gang parties of equivalent numbers aggregate at opposite sides of an empty barren field as they glare aggressively in hatred at each other. There are simply too many old scores to be settled and too many gang members holding grudges over an extremely complicated history of gang feud. 2 years ago, one of GOT7 gang members had stabbed one of BANGTAN’s members to death outside a restaurant in the central town’s red-light district because apparently the GOT7 member’s girlfriend had an affair with the murdered BANGTAN member. While the neighbour gangs used to be in good relations before this incident and interacted mostly through friendly collaborations, they majorly fell out after the unfortunate event and had been enemies ever since. Territorial rights have recently become an issue as well as the expanding GOT7 gang tries to eat into BANGTAN’s protection zone as they make their rounds into the villages surrounding Taehyung’s which were supposedly under Taehyung’s rule.

Additionally, a recent drug bust caused one of the biggest drug suppliers in the black market to be arrested. Left with no option, BANGTAN had to switch their drug trafficking supplier to a new one and that new supplier happened to be GOT7’s long-term supplier. The happy supplier took advantage of the situation and sold the drug supplies equally between both parties. He also did not forget to sell the drugs at a higher price considering that supply has been cut short by the drug bust. As a result, GOT7 is extremely unhappy as BANGTAN literally took half of their drug supplies. Combined with the recent high cost prices, their monetary profits plummeted at a shocking rate. On the other hand, BANGTAN isn’t fending well either and is going through a tough time of profit reductions as well. In short, both are not doing very well and they blame each other for it.

“Hey beauty, let’s not bring our whole gang over during the next gang negotiation. I’ll invite you alone to my house and we can have some tea together what you say about that?” Jackson says seductively at Taehyung before winking at the BANGTAN gang leader to which Taehyung’s face instantly turns blue. Jungkook’s face turns dark blue. They both want to slap the shit out of this GOT7 leader.

However, before they can set out to complete the said mission, another GOT7 member who they know as Mark suddenly appears from behind. He grabs onto Jackson’s left ear and without warning starts to mercilessly twist it. Jackson jumps in pain.

“We are out for a serious gang negotiation. It’s not the time for you to casually invite boys to your house!” screams (a very jealous) Mark and Jackson immediately bows down apologetically to his fierce gang mate. BANGTAN members gape at the scene and then within seconds after Mark lets go of Jackson’s red stinging ear, Jackson instantly switches to badass persona again.

“I want your gang to stop buying from our supplier,” Jackson states directly.

“I want your gang to stop intruding into our territory,” Taehyung states directly too.
Nobody backs down, so the gang negotiation ends with a brutal fight as usual.

Jungkook is ruthless in his first gang fight. In the 2-hour battle, he successfully breaks 2 of GOT7 members’ ribs, cripples 5 and sends 10 back toothless without batting an eyelid. There is no guilt, sympathy or any signs of compassion left in Jungkook’s soul by then as those traits have been replaced by cold-bloodedness and cruelty.

Contrary to Jungkook, Taehyung isn’t faring well today because he can’t seem to control his impulses to check on Jungkook all the time. In fact, Taehyung’s eyes are literally following Jungkook everywhere. Ultimately, his lack of focus eventually earns him a few punches in the stomach, shoulder and back, including a huge painful kick to the left chest before the gang battle abruptly ends in a heavy thunderstorm.

“We’ll see each other again. We won’t be very nice next time, beauty,” Jackson warns seductively at Taehyung, yet in a spiteful tone for Jackson is hurt as well during the battle.

“And I will personally cut and feed your tongue to the pigs if you call me a beauty again.”

***

“Dad I saw you looking over at me during the fight. You need to stop worrying about me. I’m a better fighter than most of the gang members so you just got to focus on your own battles ok? And I told you to look out for your left chest. You always neglect to guard that area for goodness sake just see how big this patch of blue-black is! This weakness can be fatal, dad. It’s where the heart is,” Jungkook scolds gently as he bandages up some of Taehyung’s wounds back at home.

Jungkook is heartbroken to see his dad like this. All these years it is Taehyung that has been protecting him. When will it come the time for him to protect his dad instead? He wants to grow up fast, he wants to become bigger and stronger so that he can protect his dad such that nobody can ever hurt his dad. He wants to be the one to protect Taehyung from all the harm in the world.

“Honestly, I can’t help but look over you even if I know that you’ll do fine, even if it hurts me. It’s strange, isn’t it? Can’t stop it even if I want to Kook so don’t try to stop me again,” Taehyung says as he winces in pain over his injuries.

In this instant, tears sting into Jungkook’s eyes.
Those are the most heartfelt words Jungkook has ever heard Taehyung say. Taehyung would never out rightly say he loves Jungkook so over the years Jungkook began to delve deep, picking up the bits and pieces of evidence of love his dad would unknowingly leave for him from time to time. Today, Taehyung’s words and actions stabbed Jungkook right through the chest. Sometimes, there really is no need for an outright declaration or confession to detect someone's unconditional love.

Jungkook gazes over at Taehyung with tears in his eyes, and for the first time, sees forever in this broken human he calls dad.

I love you too, Jungkook thinks to himself.
How Do I Disown My Son?

Chapter Summary

Taehyung wakes up and gets super mad at Jungkook for treating him like a fuck doll during the wedding night. He wishes to disown Jungkook.

Author’s Notes: This post-rape reaction is entirely fictional and unrealistic. Rape is a serious issue in reality and would have caused severe PTSD and trauma to victims. In no way does this fanfiction represent the realities of rape. Taehyung's unique reaction is based on a few reasons: firstly, he lacks education on consent like he probably doesn't even know that what has happened to himself is rape. Secondly, his tough childhood and life experiences also mean that not anything can break him easily. Thirdly, he is a person with low levels of neuroticism so he is less likely to be sad over things but instead would be very angry hence his overwhelming rage now. He is conditioned to be exclusively angry since young because anger is a protective and defensive emotion which helps him survive in the streets better than feelings of sadness. Lastly, he has an innate capability to forgive Jungkook for whatever he does due to his love for Jungkook. If anyone else had done what Jungkook did to him he would have killed the person. So overall, this rape reaction is entirely a fantasy and happens only in this fanfiction because of character's personality and life experiences.

“We get into the biggest fights with the people we care most about because those are the relationships worth fighting for.” — Dell Shannon

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Secret Underground Headquarters Central Mansion aka Jungkookie’s and Taetae’s New Home

Date & Time: 3rd September 2017 10:03AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, 2 days into marriage]

***

In the next 2 days after the traumatic wedding night, Taehyung’s body fell into a state of semi-shock in which he would repeatedly drift in and out of coma, spending the said 48 hours bedridden and
burning a dangerously high fever of 40 degree Celsius that stubbornly refused to melt away. The wedding night was unfortunately too horrific and mind-blowing for the unprepared Taehyung to handle for his body and mind were somehow still stuck in some of the most painful sensations he had encountered that night i.e. he constantly felt like he was still being fucked by an invisible dick although the sex was already long over. In short, Taehyung’s disturbed senses simply refused to recover for the next 2 days. Haunted in what seemed like a never-ending nightmare, Taehyung would uncontrolably tremble or spasm albeit still being in an unconscious state and occasionally, he would randomly shoot wide-awake with cold sweat breaking out from his forehead only to murmur, “Am I alive? Who am I?” before knocking out cold and dead again. For the first time in his 28 years of existence, Taehyung experienced a complete mental and physical breakdown in which he felt like his soul had just made a short trip to hell and dwelled there a couple hours because his son had just made the experience of living a little more terrifying than death.

It is currently the 3rd day morning after the marriage. Taehyung who is finally feeling slightly better, gradually opens his eyes as his rested mind drifts into proper sustained consciousness. However, the first thing that greets him is unfortunately a torn throat that is drier than the Sahara Desert.

“Ngghhh…goddammit,” Taehyung lets out painful groan and curses when he sees the red struggle marks on his right wrist. Thanks to Jungkook’s handcuff, his right arm feels as if it has been forcefully chopped off and glued back again. Also, the older man realizes that he is on drips and has a cold compressed towel latching onto his forehead. Am I sick? Taehyung thinks to himself.

“Finally awake?” the soft voice of his beloved son Jungkook drifts musically into his ears.

Taehyung’s eyes gradually narrow into a squint as his son-turned-husband walks over to pass him a cup of water.

“Drink it,” instructs Jungkook strictly as he peers down at Taehyung who is still lying in bed.

At this moment, Taehyung swears that if he still has any energy left to move at all he will undoubtedly spring right out of bed to whoop the shit out of Jungkook but his current physical state deems him unfit to materialize that wish. Hell, he can’t even speak now for his voice is completely gone from screaming too much 2 days ago. Hence, he can only settle on glaring daggers at Jungkook like a hurt little rabbit, unfortunately.

Upon seeing Taehyung’s pitifully fragile state, Jungkook’s facial features soften up slightly. After all, he is the one that pushed Taehyung into such agonizing condition. Jungkook places the glass of water at the side table and proceeds to help Taehyung into a sitting position. With Jungkook’s aid, Taehyung manages to sit up and in the process, realizes in shock that his whole body is aching so terribly everywhere from the head to the toe. In this instant, his already pale face turns paler as he
whimpers miserably in pain.

Jungkook who has been nursing Taehyung for two days is relieved to see that the love of his life is finally awake again. He sighs, knowing that he had most definitely went overboard on the wedding night. Inching close to Taehyung, Jungkook removes the wet towel on Taehyung’s forehead and cups his hand on it to check Taehyung’s temperature.

“The fever is down,” Jungkook says softly in relief. Then, he picks up the glass of water at the side table and holds it up to Taehyung again. “Drink it,” Jungkook repeats.

Taehyung squints hatefully at Jungkook but doesn’t move.

“Drink it dad. You are dehydrated and you’ll need to immediately replenish your bodily fluids. I know you are angry at me but don’t torture yourself,” Jungkook reiterates.

5 seconds of silence before Taehyung weakly reaches over to grab the glass of water. He then gulps down all the water in one shot and his throat feels instantly refreshed. Finally.

Jungkook peers down satisfactorily at his unexpectedly obedient wife and asks, “what do you want to eat for breakfast? We can have ----”

"JEEEEOOONNNNN JUUUUUUNNNNGGGGG KOOOOOOKKKKK!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! YOU BETTER FUCKING EXPLAIN YOURSELF YOU FUCKING BASTARD!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!" Taehyung, who has finally gained back his ability to speak from the miraculous water, screams explosively in profound anger.

Being a person that is rarely emotional i.e. low on the neurotic spectrum, Taehyung is not a person to cry or harp over an event of non-consented sex. In fact, his understanding of the concept of consent in sex is close to none and as a result his ex-son’s concept of sexual consent is also as pathetically low like his dad judging from how Taehyung treats his girlfriends hence the shocking wedding night. Being a gangster playboy who had never been educated on this issue, Taehyung himself had been a sadistic savage in bed and would take the screams and cries of his girlfriends as an affirmation of his sexual capability. However, he had never in any instant, fucked anyone so intensely to the point of unconsciousness. At least he was gentle to them out of bed and would send them home safely after a strenuous night of exercise. Hell, if Jungkook had given him a heads up on what was going to come or had been slightly gentler, Taehyung would have just sucked it up and taken the D like a man I mean since he was already legally his spouse but what the fuck did Jungkook do? That bastard fucking fucked Taehyung for 10 hours straight without letting Taehyung catch a breather and didn’t even stop when Taehyung was knocked out cold several times. Till this point, Taehyung is utterly
convinced that Jungkook is trying to murder him.

On top of his seething rage, Taehyung is also extremely embarrassed for he remembered how hard he had actually begged for Jungkook to stop during the painful encounter. Shit I can’t believe that I, Kim Tae Hyung, pleaded like a 16-year-old virgin, Taehyung thinks to himself and internally wails in shame. There is probably no way for him to regain his pride and dignity after that event.

“Sorry dad, I admit that I’ve went overboard. It’s my first time and I couldn’t control it.”

“What?! It’s your first time?! You hadn’t tried sex on any other people?”

“Yes, you took my virginity dad.”

Upon hearing that, Taehyung gulps in surprise. No wonder the sex was so bad, Taehyung thinks to himself and suddenly doesn’t know whether to laugh or cry. He doesn’t know whether to laugh because Jungkook is still a virgin at 20-years-old or cry because he is the guinea pig in the disastrous first time of his savagely unskilled son.

“That’s why I neglected the lube. Gay porn doesn’t explicitly demonstrate the usage of lube so I thought it wasn’t important. I was so confused after you collapsed the next day and only learnt about the importance of it when the doctor came to check on your wounds.”

“What?! A DOCTOR CAME TO LOOK ME UP IN THE BUTT?”

“Yes, he gets a major shock but otherwise says that you’ll be fine. You have some light anal tearing and will heal within 1 or 2 weeks should you faithfully apply the medicine every day. The past two days I’ve been helping you with that. Sadly, he restricts you from any sexual activity for at least a week,” Jungkook explains calmly and actually has the audacity to pout pitifully at the last sentence.

Taehyung explodes in rage.

“FUCK YOU I CAN’T BELIEVE YOU JUST LET A RANDOM PERSON LOOK ME UP IN THE ASS! I AM GOING TO DISOWN YOU RIGHT NOW,” Taehyung says in firm resolution as he tries to stand up from the bed. Taehyung’s done. He is so done. He needs to leave this place right now, maybe stay a couple of days in the guest suite or something.
However, Taehyung instantly regrets his decision when an excruciating pain shoots up from his lower spine all the way up.

“Ahhh!!!” Taehyung screams in pain as he falls to the ground with jelly legs, tears uncontrollably welling up in his widened eyes as he starts to tremble in shock. WHAT JUST HAPPENED?

Jungkook immediately runs over to lift Taehyung up.

“Just stay in bed these few days ok?”

“No, I want to go home!”

“What are you saying? This is your new home now. We are married and you are staying here with me.”

“I don’t care, I don’t want to stay with you! At least let me go back to the suite to watch my dramas!!!” Taehyung screams and struggles turbulently in Jungkook’s embrace as he tries to walk towards the door.

Jungkook furrows his brows. What a feisty wife his dad is. However, Jungkook also concedes that he has gone overboard on the wedding night and is at fault for all that is happening now. Seeing his inconsolable and traumatised wife breaking down in his arms, he decides to give in. Giving in is not his usual style as a mafia boss, but he’ll do it only for Taehyung at least for the time being before his patience wears out.

***

5 hours later, Taehyung and Jungkook are found silently watching a random British broadcast from a flat-screen TV in the presidential suite Taehyung had previously stayed in before his wedding. The same flat-chested size zeros and menopaused old women walking around to clean and prepare the suite for stay.

“Dad, why are we watching British dramas that you don’t even understand? Shall we watch a Korean movie together instead?”
“Shut up and watch,” Taehyung mutters with a blank face. Even if he doesn’t understand a single word of English, the British drama still makes so much more sense than his current situation now. And he isn’t in a state of mind to want to process and understand more drama. He needs to think about absolutely nothing. ABSOLUTELY NOTHING.

Jungkook shuts up and watches.

3 more hours pass by and it’s still British people riding horses and saying god-knows-what. Taehyung is still visibly expressionless and lying in the same position as he was 3 hours ago.

“Hey dad, are you seriously going to stay here?”

“Yes obviously.”

“Till when? You know you can’t stay here forever right? You are my wife.”

30 seconds of silence as Taehyung dwells in denial.

“Till the moment you can control that dick of yours, I’m not sleeping in the same bed as you at night.”

“Understood. I shall get to that immediately. So I guess I’m not sleeping here with you tonight?”

“Hell no! The whole point of returning to this place is to avoid you.”

“I see. Rest well then, I shall take my leave now and will be back again,” Jungkook says calmly but in his mind he is just thinking OH GAWD HOW DO I CONTROL MY DICK HOW DO I CONTROL MY DICK HOW DO I ---- Jungkook leaves in a hurry to search for answers. Oh wait, he has almost forgotten to say something.

Jungkook back tracks to the suite.
“Dad, remember to apply the medicine regularly~ Hopefully you get to heal in less than a week~”

Without warning, Taehyung throws the TV remote he is holding at full force into Jungkook’s face. Jungkook skilfully dodges and escapes.

***

After Jungkook leaves, Taehyung goes on the net and types “how to disown your son when your son is a mafia boss” into Google and frowns in distress when he sees no available search results. He then types “how to disown your husband who is also your son” and still, sees no available search results. He wails in helplessness. Unbelievable. There has got to be some search results!

On the other hand, Jungkook, upon leaving the suite, instantly consults his most trusted and certainly the most knowledgeable dark knight regarding the cock control issue.

“Namjoon, how does one control his cock?”

“I don’t know. Usually one doesn’t control it but just uses it.”

“Alright I understand. Find me a detailed manual about this then.”

“Yes boss, give me a second.”

10 minutes as Namjoon searches the database.

“Boss, there is no such book.”

“What?! Not even one single book about it in the market?”

“No.”
“The global market?”

“No.”

“The black market?”

“No.”

“Fuck! Go get someone to write it then. Pass me a detailed instructive book in 3 days by hook or by crook. I don’t care if you force some pornstars to write it at gun point.”

“Yes boss.”

***

Back in the central mansion alone without his beautiful wife, Jungkook opens his online MSN chat. He lights up when he sees Taehyung online.

_Jungkook: daddy, still watching dramas?_  
_Taehyung: GO AWAY_  
_Jungkook: I’m sorry daddy please come back to me_  
_Taehyung: Don’t call me daddy! And you are NOT FORGIVEN SO STOP TALKING TO ME_  
_Jungkook: Alright. Can I call you wifey then?_  
_Taehyung is offline._

In their own rooms, both separately fold their arms and frown in annoyance.

And just like that, their first couple fight officially commences.
“Even if we fight a lot, I still want you in my life.” --- MChacon

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don’t have an account/are on incognito mode?
Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

Connect with me on twitter where I post updates, polls, short stories, AUs and other related content: @hidden_tracks (two underscores)

Also, you can buy me a cup of coffee to motivate me in writing and to show support for my stories here: hiddentracks@ko-fi (thank you <3)
Innately cursing his newly-wedded husband, Taehyung mercilessly shuts off his computer amidst the ongoing online MSN conversation with Jungkook and proceeds to scowl in obvious displeasure. The 28-year-old man is currently so fed-up with his ex-son for all the things he had done over the past couple of weeks. After a few minutes of intense temple-massaging at the computer desk, the distressed Taehyung suddenly has an impulse to stop thinking about his current situation and take a hot soul-cleansing shower before bed instead. He is craving so badly for some mind-body purification after Jungkook had so inconsiderately threw him into a sea of mental and emotional chaos and a proper shower can accomplish just that bit of salvation Taehyung needs in the current moment. Upon that thought, Taehyung shoots up abruptly from his awkward sitting posture but 2 seconds later melts into a pitiful writhing mess after having been so casually reminded of the ruination that is his own body.

“Ahhhh….damn…” whimpers Taehyung under his breath from the searing pain shooting up through the entire length of his spine while he desperately clutches onto a nearby piece of wall for immediate support. There are no words to describe how terrible the man is feeling right now. As the searing pain in Taehyung’s backbone gradually fades into a slightly more manageable dull ache, the 28-year-old man begins to embark on a 5-metre-long journey towards the bathroom where he will be taking his much-needed shower. He limps slowly and unsteadily towards said destination and in the process he cannot help but groan continuously in agony because thanks to his newly-wedded husband his hips feel like they are permanently dislocated and dysfunctional. You know how we all possess muscles and a set of skeleton in our bodies but we don’t actively feel or think about them when we are going through the daily motions of life? Unfortunately, poor Taehyung is currently feeling every inch of his bones creaking and muscles aching as he embarks on a very torturous walk towards the bathroom. The shaking man then spares another 10 arduous minutes removing all his clothing upon reaching said destination and while doing so he repeatedly chants “Fuck you Kook” though
physically he is just trying his best not to ball his eyes out from the profound soreness and agony he is experiencing.

This feeling must be it. Being hit full-force by a truck must feel something like this.

Finally, Taehyung is done with all the routine yet extremely tedious tasks. He heaves a deep sigh of immense relief and slowly limps into the shower area all prepared for a relaxing session of a bath but before he can proceed with the washing he unfortunately catches a brief glimpse of himself in the full-length bathroom mirror standing slightly towards his left. In this instant, his glum mood instantly switches into utmost terror as he widens his bloodshot eyes at his own reflection.

“What are you?!” Taehyung screams into the mirror while his brain shock-blasts into outer space.

In fact, the clear full-length mirror standing right before Taehyung now is completely unforgiving and blatant in displaying Taehyung’s recent encounter of sexual violence. Vicious bite marks and huge hideous patches of hickeys can be found anywhere and everywhere on Taehyung’s abused body. His cut lips are also hideously bruised and swollen not to mention that his entire neck is seen to be buried inside a wonderful mash of vibrant red and purple shades. In short, gruesome scars and bruises are seen to be decorating every inch of Taehyung’s skin from head to toe and for a second Taehyung’s shocked mind is unable to fathom that the victim he is currently staring so intently at is his own reflection.

Is this me? Is this the almighty Kim Tae Hyung? Taehyung stares in utmost disbelief into the mirror. It is currently so crystal clear that there isn’t a single inch of his own skin left untouched, it is currently so crystal clear that there isn’t a single inch of his own skin left unharmed and it is currently so crystal clear that there isn’t a single inch of his own skin left unscarred. Hell, he is even starting to feel sorry for himself. To sense the pain from the gruesome sex is one agonizing experience but to literally witness the catastrophic damage is another level of an eye-opener all together. Within 2 short weeks, badass mafia boss Jeon Jung Kook the award-winning fucker has succeeded in transforming the notorious Kim Tae Hyung from a fearless street-gang leader to a pitiful helpless victim of domestic violence. Well done Jungkook, a round of well-deserved applause for the young and capable mafia boss please.

In addition, Taehyung has always been an extremely territorial person. Like father like son, his concept of possession is very much alike Jungkook i.e. the “if I claimed someone, that person is mine” mentality. To see himself being ruthlessly marked like this by another human being is a whole new level of shock and trauma for Taehyung as he subconsciously starts to question his own identity.

I, Kim Taehyung, am Jeon Jung Kook’s property? Maybe I’m really Jungkook’s property?! Wait no this can’t be true but seriously who is whose property?! Taehyung thinks to himself in bewilderment.
The psychological mind-fuck smacks the simple-minded man so hard in the face for the clear reflection in the mirror is so real, rough and raw in portraying the aftermath of his own savagely claimed body.

This moment of realization is surprisingly a good 958048329040 times more impactful than the official wedding or the wedding night itself for Taehyung sees for himself what he has become over the past few days after the marriage and just like that, a naked Taehyung freezes into a statue in front of the mirror for 5 whole minutes staring at himself as he questions the meaning of life and his own purpose of existence before proceeding to go super Saiyan in frustration again.

Why? Just why?! Why am I starting to feel like I belong to Jungkook?! Why is my own mind fucking with me now?! For fuck’s sake, I can’t even stop thinking about Jungkook right now why can’t I just stop thinking about that fucking bastard? Taehyung shouts innately in his own mind and upon realization that he is unable to extract the thought of his ex-son out of his system, Taehyung lets out a last roar of defeat before proceeding into the shower to wash himself for the next couple of hours.

“They say all marriages are made in heaven, but so are thunder and lightning.” — Clint Eastwood

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Secret Underground Headquarters Presidential Suite B4-6969

Date & Time: 10th September 2017 6:07PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, 9 days into marriage]

***

It has been a week ever since the indignant Taehyung had thrown a fuss to return to the guest suite. Ever since then, he has been avoiding Jungkook at all cost. He refuses to see his husband even when he shows up apologetically with flowers at the door 24/7 and he also refuses to converse with his husband even through texts or MSN chats. In short, Taehyung simply refuses to interact in any way with Jungkook because hell, he is so angry and terrified of the younger man for everything he had done over the past three quarter of a month.

Jungkook, on the other hand, is low-key devastated but otherwise knows that it is his own fault that Taehyung is reacting in such an unforgiving way so the best he can do now is to respect Taehyung’s
personal space at least for the moment till his patience wears out. For instance, Jungkook doesn’t just barge into Taehyung’s suite anymore without consent although he has all the keys to the rooms in the entirety of the mafia headquarters.

However, Jungkook is still rather adamant in chasing his upset wife back hence the embarkment on a mission to reconcile his broken relationship with his dad-turned-wife. Here are some of the attempts he had made so far screaming repeatedly from the outside of Taehyung’s suite:

“Daddy, I baked you a shelf of cookies! Can you please let me into the suite?” – Day 1 to 2.

Silence.

“Daddy… errr no… Wifey? I bought you your favourite music albums! There is SNSD and DBSK and even RED VELVET in the collection! Can you please let me into the suite I beg of you!” – Day 3-4.

Silence.

“Daddy!!!!!! I bought you all those cool baseball jackets that you have always wanted!!!!!!!!!!!! All your favourite fashion apparels too I bought the whole shop of berets and bandanas and Gucci for you please just let me in!!!!!” – Day 5-6 plus intense door-banging.

Silence.

By day 7 which is today, Jungkook is beyond desperate. Nonetheless he arrives early in the morning and tries again.

“Wifey, are you well and alive in there? Are you angry at me because I didn’t use lube the other day? I knew it! You must have been angry at me about that! I’m sorry I’ve been repenting my mistakes… Please don’t ignore me!!! I bought you 3 full storerooms of lube with different flavours for you to choose from and I pledge to always bring them with me whenever we need to use them so please just open the door! I’ve missed you so badly Taehyung ah!” – Day 7 right now.

Taehyung who has been silently listening to Jungkook’s shouting over the past few days finally snaps into rage upon hearing Jungkook’s paragraph. He can’t believe that Jungkook has the audacity to bring up the traumatic wedding night that he so wishes to forget.
“FUCK YOU KOOK! GET LOST!!!” Taehyung screams in anger from inside the suite to make his point clear that he wants Jungkook to leave him alone.

Upon hearing that, Jungkook freezes there for a moment because this is the first time he has heard his wife’s beautiful voice in an entire week. Initially he is overjoyed to get some response but after digesting Taehyung’s insulting words he starts to feel rage building up in his heart.

Taehyung is too much isn’t he? For the whole week Taehyung had locked himself up in the suite when he was supposed to stay with Jungkook in the central mansion as Jungkook’s newly-wedded wife but alright that was fine with Jungkook for the time being because he knew he was the one that fucked up and so he had tolerated it. Then, for the whole week Taehyung continued to flat-out ignore the sanity out of Jungkook even after Jungkook had tried multiple times to win Taehyung back but alright, that was fine with Jungkook for the time being and Jungkook had tolerated it. However, the fact that Taehyung is currently shouting so disrespectfully at Jungkook just pushes Jungkook to the brink of his limited patience.

Really? After a full week of ignoring me, these hurtful words are the only thing you want to say to me? Jungkook thinks spitefully to himself and in an instant his seething rage snaps open explosively like a massive hell of an epic volcanic eruption.

Fuck it, Jungkook is so done with cooing Taehyung.

Without warning, Jungkook uses the keys to unlock the slammed-shut suite door and barges in intrusively towards Taehyung. Since Taehyung isn’t receptive to the soft way, Jungkook will teach him the hard way.

Taehyung is currently splaying on the sofa bed watching British dramas senselessly as usual. Upon realization that Jungkook has barged in unexpectedly with an ominous and threatening aura, Taehyung jumps in instinctive fright as his body resets into an adrenal fight-or-flight mode. However, Taehyung is still slow to react for the swift Jungkook has already stormed over to hastily grab a fistful of his hair to which Taehyung yelps in shock. He is still unable to fully process what is happening. WHAT THE FUCK IS THIS SUDDEN VIOLENCE AGAIN?! A few moments ago, Jungkook is still pleading his sorry ass away at the door and the next moment he barges in so aggressively like a beast on drugs. Seriously?! This boy needs to go get checked for a split personality disorder!

After 5 seconds of shock recovery, Taehyung immediately enters the extreme-rage-ultra-Saiyan mode. Why does Jungkook like to yank his hair so much? Does Jungkook want him to become bald by 30?! Consumed in unprecedented rage and protective instincts for his beautiful mane, Taehyung
suddenly wraps his legs around Jungkook’s waist and latches like a leech onto Jungkook’s upper body as he starts to crazily yank onto Jungkook’s hair in a spiteful revenge.

“Argh!” Jungkook lets out a yelp.

“Yes, you motherfucking take that you little son-of-a-bitch!!!! If you try yanking my hair one more time I will fucking end you!!!!” Taehyung screams at the top of his voice as he violently yanks onto Jungkook’s hair in revenge. He recalls how Jungkook had so mercilessly yanked onto his hair on several occasions especially on the wedding night as a demonstration of his dominance and those memories can instantly drive Taehyung crazy. Over the past few peaceful days, Taehyung had rested and healed reasonably well. His muscles aren’t aching terribly or twitching uncontrollably anymore. On a side bonus, his bones have recently felt like they are back in the right places again much to Taehyung’s relief. Being an experienced street fighter, Taehyung can still put up a good fight with Jungkook if he so wishes and currently he wishes nothing more than to slap the shit out of the human he used to call son.

Jungkook isn’t backing down either. The fact that Taehyung has suddenly gone rogue instead of submitting to him almost drives him insane in rage. He needs to teach his wild spouse what it means to respect him! How dare he defy him? How dare he ignore him? How dare he treat him like a nobody over the past few days?! Kim Tae Hyung you are so dead!!!!

The confrontation rapidly spirals into a spectacular battle of a showdown. 5 minutes later they have somehow teleported from the sofa onto the kitchen table, and then another 5 minutes into the battle they are found rolling and screaming into each other’s face on the corridor grounds. Both struggle turbulently in each other’s iron grasps as they try their utmost best to dominate and tackle the other party down with full-force. The rage they both have building up inside their hearts instantly explodes into an epic amalgamation of physical and verbal violence as they both start pouring all of that pent-up feelings out honestly and blatantly into each other’s faces.

“You are my wife. So what if I like to yank your hair? What’s wrong with that? You have been doing that to all your previous girlfriends as far as I’m concerned!”

“That’s different because women have more hair to spare. And you sick bastard how dare you force me into this sick marriage! I refuse to accept that I am your wife like why the fuck am I even a wife?! I’m your dad for god’s sake and I’ll love women till the day I die no matter how many times you fuck me in the ass!”

“You are the sick one Kim Tae Hyung! Who the fuck forces someone 8 years younger than him to become his son?! Can you just stop thinking of me as your son? I have my own birth father and I’ve never ever seen you as my dad! I don’t care what your sexual orientation is but you’re mine now so you better learn to submit to me whether you like it or not Taehyung!”
Upon hearing that, Taehyung gasps a lung full of air.

“How dare you say that when I took care of you all these years and cared for you like my own son?! I hope you fucking incinerate in hell for all that you’ve done and said to me you ungrateful scum!!!”

“Hah! Are you sure it isn’t me that has been taking care of you all those years? Who was the one doing all the cleaning? ME. Who was the one doing all the cooking? ME. Who was the one that did everything in the household? FUCKING ME. Kim Tae Hyung you listen you can’t live without me and you need me to take care of you. Stop with this denial right now and accept that you are my wife!!!”

“Did you really see me as your wife? If so, how could you do what you did on the wedding night?! If you truly loved me you wouldn’t have forced me into sex so abruptly. I can’t believe you just shoved your cock into me dry and used me for the entire night just fuck you so much!!!”

“You were the one that told me multiple times to be “merciless in bed” when I grow up though?! Regretting your words now aren’t you? Besides I already told you that I couldn’t control myself and have apologised like 2953485348034 times. I’ve never apologised to anyone in the world except for you Kim Tae Hyung so you better appreciate it when I’m still being gentle and kind to you. Don’t fucking piss me off because I can’t guarantee if I’ll be rough with you again.”

“What did you just say Jeon Jung Kook?! If you ever try fucking me dry again I will CUT THAT DICK OFF YOU I SWEAR TO GOD I WILL MURDER YOU, TRUST ME I WILL YOU FUCKING TRY ME AGAIN YOU SON-OF-A-BITCH!!!!!!!!!!”

At this point in time, Namjoon enters unknowingly into the suite with a paperback in his hand.

“Kook I’m here to pass you the requested cock control part 2 book…” Nam Joon announces calmly though the first thing he witnesses is a hair-pulling cat-fight going on in the house. Hmmm… probably arrived at the wrong time, Nam Joon thinks to himself. He silently leaves the paperback on the nearest desk, helpfully turns on the air-con for the violent couple who is currently roaring their voices off at each other and proceeds to exit the suite. He totally understands that marriage life can be difficult especially in the beginning when both parties aren’t exactly used to each other’s lifestyle and personality yet. He lets out a deep sigh. Hopefully the newly-wed couple finds a way to reconcile their differences soon.
Inside the suite, Taehyung and Jungkook continue to murder each other in unprecedented rage. They desperately need to use some sort of a weapon to spice up the battle but since both of them are subconsciously unwilling to truly hurt the other party, the best weapons they can find in the house are none other than the soft pillows in the suite’s bedroom.

Yes that’s right, we are talking about *soft mushy marshmallow-like pillows*.

So somehow, Taehyung and Jungkook end up in a chaotic pillow battle showdown. You might think this is funny but you’re terribly wrong because they really won't hesitate to whack the shit out of each other with full-force in the face using the pillows. Even if the weapons are just mere cushions, the smacks are still going to hurt like a bitch.

Within 30 minutes, all the pillows are destroyed and savagely ripped into pieces.

Hmmm… what now? The battle is definitely not over for both of them are still standing strong and tall.

So they order a truck of pillows to continue their battle.

And you know, pillow fights between couples never end badly.

5 hours later, both collapse in exhaustion onto the suite’s king-sized bed. They are both perspiring profusely but are too tired to get up for a shower.

“Shall we continue this tomorrow?” murmurs a drained-out Taehyung.

“Definitely. The battle doesn’t end till the true winner emerges,” says an equally tired Jungkook.

“I wholeheartedly agree. Got to catch a good night’s rest so that I can own your ass tomorrow.”

“We’ll see who owns whose ass tomorrow then. Goodnight.”

“Goodnight.”
Jungkook leans over for a goodnight peck on Taehyung’s forehead. Taehyung murmurs something incoherent through his sleepy eyes but doesn’t resist and just like that, both humans fall asleep peacefully in a carcass of pillow feathers.

Little do they realize, this is the first time in a long while since they had last fallen asleep together on the same bed.

---

Pillow talk

My enemy, my ally

Prisoners

Then we're free, it's a thin line

I'm seeing the pain, seeing the pleasure

Nobody but you, 'body but me

'Body but us, bodies together

I love to hold you close, tonight and always

I love to wake up next to you

---- Zayn Malik
Chapter Summary

Acceptance and forgiveness. Elevator sex. Taehyung, albeit still finding it awkward to be somebody else's wife, gradually sinks into the submissive role subconsciously. Jungkook as usual being all sorts of horny what's new.

Author’s Notes: Long chapter ahead. Contains smut. Crack writing style.

"Forgiveness is the final form of love." --- Reinhold Niebuhr

***

Location: "The Mafia Origin" Secret Underground Headquarters Presidential Suite B4-6969

Date & Time: 11th September 2017 9:13AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, 10 days into marriage]

***

Long story cut short, Jungkook and Taehyung abruptly make up after the night-long pillow fight. They wake up coincidentally at the same time the next morning only to find themselves snuggling tightly in each other's arms. Time freezes as they look into each other's eyes while still lying in the softness of bed sheets. Both don't want this rare moment of peace and tranquillity to end.

"Shower?" after a long time, Jungkook finally breaks the silence.


Reluctantly, they pull away from each other to proceed with the said task. Jungkook goes to shower first. Taehyung showers next. Both struggle to bite back tears in the bathroom as they allow the showerhead to flood them at maximum volume like the overwhelming sea of mixed emotions they are currently drowning in.
When was the last time they had slept in each other's arms? When was the last time they had peacefully held each other all night long? When was the last time they had woken up to see each other's faces just inches away from their own? The realization that they had irretrievably lost 5 good years of their lives being apart from each other stabs right through their hearts like a knife. Some moments in life may seem insignificant or trivial in the past but once someone gets to experience loss, they will come to realize that those are the moments that are meant to be treasured as the most valuable and meaningful instances in their lifetime. Life is too short for them to take the good times for granted and most importantly, life is too short for them to take the people they love for granted.

Shortly after the angsty wash-up and a quick breakfast, Taehyung quietly moves back to the central mansion with Jungkook. Taehyung just needs a random excuse to officially forgive Jungkook anyway, so he decides to accept the "Daddy, I promise I won't touch you for the time being in bed or I'll chop off my own dick. I'll even give you a head massage every night before bed if you move back with me!" offer. Hmm... Since Jungkook has already said so, why not? Nobody will ever want to land themselves in a situation where they will have to chop off their own dick, and Taehyung knows that Jungkook has always been someone who keeps his promises. Jungkook's legendary head massages are to die for too, so the suggestion seems too good to be true. Combined with the emotional shower episode that has just happened, Taehyung is all ready to return to the central mansion with Jungkook.

So Taehyung returns compliantly to the central mansion with Jungkook on his own accord after the meal just like how he had secretly wanted to over the past few days but had no courage to do so. Deep in his heart, he had already long forgiven his son-turned-husband and is actually missing him dearly from the week-long separation. Well, if there is one person in the whole world that Taehyung wouldn't hold grudges with, that person would most definitely be Jungkook. In fact, Taehyung finds himself incapable of hating Jungkook even the slightest bit, even after all the despicable things Jungkook had done to him because his unfading love for Jungkook greatly exceeds any sort of negative emotions he feels towards him. To be able to finally return to the mansion with his son-turned-husband, Taehyung actually feels extremely relieved and gratified. Fuck it, at this stage the older man doesn’t really care whether he is a dad or wife to Jungkook anymore. Karma’s a bitch and now his previously oppressed son has appeared to literally fuck him up and Taehyung actually thinks he has himself to blame for this mess. Still, he loves Jungkook with all his heart and deep inside he just wants to reunite and live happily with Jungkook like how they did in the past so after 5 long years of separation and a chaotic episode of his own post-wedding week-long tantrum, the older man finally accepts his reality in which he'll be settling down peacefully with his beloved newly-wedded husband Jungkook who he has always been secretly overly-attached to since the very beginning.

After all, Jungkook is Taehyung’s only family.
It has been 5 days ever since Taehyung has returned to the central mansion. The life after moving back with Jungkook is surprisingly a comfortable and enjoyable one for Taehyung. Besides getting the promised head massages every night, Taehyung also gets to have a taste of Jungkook's cooking and baking again. Although Jungkook can't serve every meal now like how he could in the past due to his busy schedule, he will definitely make it a point to cook dinner after returning home in the evening from his mafia duties.

While Taehyung always falls head over heels for the roasted meat and cookie deserts made by Jungkook, he, as usual, abhors the vegetables with an undying passion so over dinner right now Taehyung is just avoiding the vegetables at all cost while senselessly blabbering about the drama he has been watching as a distraction strategy hoping that Jungkook won't notice his picky ways. Unfortunately, the observant Jungkook always notices. Besides, grown-up Jungkook is no longer the helpless young Jungkook in the past who could only sulk or nag in displeasure when the healthy greens were under-appreciated by Taehyung so upon seeing Taehyung being a picky eater again, Jungkook hastily grabs and pulls Taehyung over only to roughly stuff a bunch of vegetables into his wife's mouth.

"Eat the vegetables alright? They are good for you. Unless you want my dick shoved down your throat instead," Jungkook warns with a strict deadpan face though he is actually chuckling devilishly in his heart.

"Faarggg!" Taehyung widens his eyes at the insolent statement, pushes Jungkook away and curses at Jungkook with his mouth still stuffed full of greens. He sends a death glare over to Jungkook but since he isn't entirely sure if Jungkook isn't serious, he swallows back his intense desire to spit the greens out. While chewing down harshly on the disgusting vegetables with his mouth shut, Taehyung can only occupy his raging mind by silently plotting the details of Jungkook's murder. Barbecuing Jungkook over the fire in his sleep seems to be a viable option. Or should he tickle Jungkook to death? Taehyung remembers that Jungkook used to hate tickles so doing so will likely cause Jungkook to suffer significantly.

On the other hand, Jungkook looks over at his silently sulking wife and internally dies of cuteness.
"Oh god look at yourself you are so adorable!!! Aigooo~~~" Jungkook exclaims as his expressionless face instantly melts into a sunny bright smile. He reaches over to pinch Taehyung's fully stuffed cheeks only to get his hand slapped away.

"Shudup duump ash aiyam nut adorawblurr," Taehyung murmurs defiantly but continues to obediently chew onto the vegetables.

"Yes you are! Stop denying omo my wifey is so cute like a little kitten~" Jungkook teases with his heart exploding once again with Taehyung's overloading kawai-ness. Well, Taehyung munching onto a mouth-full of vegetables cursing incoherently like an offended little cat will definitely be the death of Jungkook one day.

In short, their lives after marriage are almost like an exact replica of how they used to live in the past but with a complete role reversal: Jungkook becomes the one leaving the house frequently for his daily mafia duties while Taehyung becomes the one staying home waiting rather impatiently for Jungkook's return. Also, Jungkook becomes the one bullying Taehyung while Taehyung becomes the pitiful victim of Jungkook's frequent disrespectful teasing. No way! Taehyung realizes in desperation that he needs to fight back with a revenge as soon as possible before his submissive role gets fixed once and for all!

3 hours after dinner, both decides to turn in early for the night. Much to Taehyung's relief, Jungkook had been pretty docile over the past few days after Taehyung moved back to the mansion and most importantly, he had promptly kept his promise of not touching Taehyung at all in bed. However, Taehyung could still clearly see the hard dick erecting gloriously from beneath Jungkook's thin trousers fabric every night when they sleep together. Today, Jungkook's dick has somehow grown unusually large causing him to groan and flip around uncomfortably in bed repeatedly. After some unsuccessful attempts to fall asleep, Jungkook turns around while squinting hatefully over at a smug Taehyung who is currently wearing only a thin pair of tight boxers lying down nonchalantly on his right.

"Daddy can't you put on some clothes? Why are you suddenly sleeping naked again?"

"Can't get used to sleeping with clothes on so I'm going to adopt my old habit again. Is there anything wrong with that?" Taehyung asks innocently.

Upon hearing that, Jungkook frowns in obvious sexual frustration as he eyes the fresh piece of meat lying seductively just right next to him. The feeling of being so-close-yet-so-far drives him crazy instantly, not to mention that he has already been repressing himself over the past few days for the greater good of their marriage. After some arduous moments, Jungkook shoots up from bed abruptly, lets out a deep growl of defeat, throws a pillow forcefully onto Taehyung's face and then proceeds to
storm out angrily to the bathroom to jerk off.

Once the frustrated Jungkook sets foot out of the bedroom, Taehyung can't hold it in anymore and erupts into an unrestrained evil cackle.

He can't believe that his plan has worked perfectly and that it is so easy to tease Jungkook! Well, this revenge is a dangerous one to attempt but it turned out to be a success!

Am I really that hot though? Taehyung thinks curiously and looks down at his own figure. Hmmm...he has to agree that his well-maintained body is one of a kind at a golden age of 28, not to mention his beautiful flawless face that can instantly cause any human to swoon over him. Well, Taehyung has always known all along that he is an insanely popular bastard among women and he even had quite a number of men chasing after him in the past too so he really can’t blame his son for crushing on him can he? I guess that I, Kim Tae Hyung, is the king of visuals and everyone can't help but fall hard for me, Taehyung thinks narcissistically with a smug face and when Jungkook returns awhile later he promptly switches back to a clueless and concerned expression.

"Kook you went to pee? You know, you really shouldn't drink too much water at night because you'll end up needing to use the bathroom during a restful sleep and that's really bad for your bladder health."

Upon hearing that, the triggered Jungkook suddenly has an intense desire to strap Taehyung to a rocket seat and fuck him into outer space.

"It's not that I'm horny all the time, it's just that you're fucking sexy" --- Anonymous

***

Location: On one of the thousands of speed travellators in "The Mafia Origin" Secret Underground Headquarters travelling from the Central Mansion to God-Knows-Where

Date & Time: 17th September 2017 8:34AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, 16 days into marriage]
"Kook where are we going so early in the morning?" Taehyung slurs his words tiredly as he rubs his sleepy eyes while stumbling like a zombie beside an expressionless Jungkook. Jungkook is currently cladded in a full black business suit, blending in perfectly with the dark knights including Namjoon who are all silently following behind him. On the other hand, Taehyung is dressed in his badass leather-jacket-and-ripped-skinny-jeans gangster wear which he usually wears out all the time in the past to meet BANGTAN.

"We are going to the central office now to complete some important administrative matters in lieu of your recent entry into the mafia. I've been busy with a mission over the past few days so I didn't have time to bring you through it till today. Anyway, since you are part of the mafia now and more importantly, my wife, I'll require you to learn everything about the mafia organization because I want to be able to discuss mafia-related matters with you. Also, we'll need to install a tracking chip device into your body later before you are allowed to know anything about the mafia," Jungkook explains with impressive professionalism. When it comes to important matters, Jungkook always has the ability to instantly snap out of his usual childish and mischievous ways to a serious mood to properly show people who's boss.

"I'm good with learning more about the mafia but what you say you guys are going to install a tracking chip into my body?!!" Taehyung exclaims in alarm and is instantly fully awake.

"Don't worry about the tracking chip. Every mafia member including myself has it implanted in us. In fact, this protocol was inspired by my 8-year-long disappearance and was implemented just a few years back after I returned to the mafia. It's mainly for security purposes so say if any of our mafia members was captured or lost, we will be able to instantly locate and rescue them with the GPS tracking system installed in each tracking chip. The cost of this programme is undoubtedly high but at least it guarantees us a higher level of safety. Another reason for the usage of this device is to prevent members from running away or abandoning the mafia. Once part of the mafia, forever part of the mafia so daddy, don't ever try to run away from me again you clear?" Jungkook explains with a deadpan face and at the last sentence, flashes a rapid mischievous smirk at Taehyung before resuming back to a blank expression. While walking on the travelator, some of Jungkook's extended family members and subordinates are seen walking by. As they bow in respect to Jungkook and steal curious glances at Taehyung, Jungkook confidently waves back like a proud yet humble king while continuously conversing with his concerned wife.

"Hah! Believe me I've already tried every possible method to escape when you first kidnapped me and now I've already given up all hope on seeing the sunlight again thanks to you. On the side note I'm not entirely sure if I should be afraid right now but having a device implanted into me sure sounds unsettling. How are you guys going to go about doing it?"

"Through a quick 30 minutes micro-surgery. You really don't have to worry actually, it won't hurt a
single bit with the anesthesia and you'll feel exactly like before after the procedure. We have our own
team of qualified doctors to do it so don't worry about infections or what not. It is entirely safe and
has been scientifically proven to have zero side effects on the human body. Besides, after this
procedure is done, you can feel free to go back to the village regularly to resume your duties as
BANGTAN's gang leader. I'm not going to stop you from interacting with the outside world after
our marriage but of course you'll have to promptly return to our mansion everyday after your gang
activities. I'll teach you how to enter and leave this place very soon and also I'll give you some basic
information of the layout around here. However, don't you dare try anything funny given your
freedom because I will always know exactly where you are at any given time because of the tracking
chip. If you even remotely try to set foot into the village's red-light district to find the women
again know that you will be dead before you get to have any fun Kim Tae Hyung."

Despite his husband's ominous threat, Taehyung can't help but brighten up with hopeful excitement
upon hearing Jungkook's long ass paragraph. He can't believe his ears. Did Jungkook just grant him
freedom and the right to enter and exit the underground headquarters on his own accord?! Though it
is unfortunate that he is likely unable to mix around with them pretty ladies ever again, it is still a
"daebak" deal for his carefree days as a street gangster can finally be back!!!!

"Well, fair enough since I'm already your wife but oh my god yeeeeeeees, I can finally see the
sunlight again! And I've missed the gang so much I can't wait to return okay quick let's hurry the
fuck up I can't wait to install that fucking device into my body," Taehyung cheers in enthusiasm as
he impatiently pulls Jungkook by the arm as he quickens his pace. He doesn't realise that Jungkook is
suddenly blushing uncontrollably at his words like a teenage school girl now.

"I have missed the hyungs too, will definitely return with you for a visit someday when I'm
free......also casually pointing out that this is the first time you have acknowledged the fact that you
are my wife oh god why do you have to say it now we are outside you know do you even
understand what you are doing to me Kim Tae Hyung for God's sake at least give me a warning
before you say cute shit like this," Jungkook low-key flips out as he whines blissfully with a shy
smile and reddening ears, allowing himself to be dragged by the man who he calls wife.

Namjoon who overhears Jungkook's cringy-ass statements instantly chokes on his own saliva and
starts to cough vigorously. The head dark knight has never seen Jungkook being flustered before.

"Well, I can't live in denial forever. Besides I'm already long over the devastated phase. I mean all
these are just a legal arrangement anyway and I've got to admit that I've been living pretty
comfortably over here with you and have been sleeping and eating well so there's really nothing
much for me to complain about. It feels like the past with the tables turned that's all and I'll just call it
bad luck on my part for adopting an unfilial son like you. Doesn't matter, isn't a big deal, been and
lived through tougher times. As for BANGTAN's side, feel free to return to the gang with me any
day when you have less things on your plate but know that over there I'm still the boss and you still
the baby," Taehyungs explains with a deadpan face and shrugs it off.
Jungkook grins upon hearing all that because deep down inside his heart he feels just that teeny bit of guilt for kidnapping his daddy. The fact that his daddy has come to accept this arrangement means the world to him.

"I'm glad to hear you say that, you are so understanding wifey~" Jungkook replies with what is classified as a slight "aegyo" tone that he had sometimes used to speak to his ex-dad while a silent Namjoon shock-blasts into outer space and proceeds to die a little inside again upon hearing the aegyo voice.

5 minutes of silence as Taehyung, Jungkook and the group of dark knights collectively walk onto a travellator as a unit.

Taehyung breaks the silence at a random point in time.

"Oh right! Remember how I was so goddamn embarrassed about the fact that you had kidnapped me for sex and demanded you to lie to the gang that we are having some sort of a reunion trip to Europe? If you're allowing me to return to BANGTAN then at least help me clear up the mess. They absolutely believe that we are in Europe on a vacation right now after that skype call and remember they wanted souvenirs and we half-assed agreed to get them some? How am I going to get them the souvenirs now?" Taehyung suddenly remembers something and exclaims. That's right, when Taehyung was kidnapped he didn't actually want to call for help from his gang mates but instead wanted to bury this whole embarrassing domestic situation down into a vanishing blackhole so that it would never be seen or heard of again. Jungkook had agreed to go with the lie and informed the gangmates about the fact that Taehyung would be away with him on a "Europe trip" on a skype video call so that his beloved hyungs from BANGTAN wouldn't worry about Taehyung's disappearance. After all, Jungkook had loved and still loves BANGTAN for all the wonderful childhood memories they had given him in the past.

"Oh right I've almost forgotten about that. No worries, I'll send a team over to Europe to buy a chunk of souvenirs from there. I'll tell them to get a little of something from all the major cities to make it convincing so that when you return to BANGTAN you can cover up the lie temporarily."

"That would be great. Thanks kook."

"You're welcome my dear wifey. But you know we'll still have to tell them the truth someday right?"

10 seconds of stiff silence.

"Yeap I know."
In this instant, both men let out a synchronized deep sigh. There's a Chinese saying that goes "you can't wrap fire with paper" i.e. 纸是包不住火的. No matter how embarrassed Taehyung is currently with the fact that his son is fucking him and no matter how sorry Jungkook feels towards BANGTAN, they'll probably need to start thinking about how to break the shocking news of their marriage to the BANGTAN gang soon.

At this particular juncture both men fall into deep thought as further conversation ceases. It had mostly been like this between them in the past anyway - when there was nothing to say, they wouldn't actually bother to say anything. Another 5 minutes of silence before the travelator ends in front of a row of 3 elevators.

There is nothing else there, no room or office or whatsoever, just an empty space with 3 elevators.

Looking at Taehyung's confused face, Jungkook explains: "The central office we are heading to is 3.2km below our current location and it's the deepest we could dig into the Earth's solid lithosphere before we combust and die from the Earth's core heat. While we are currently at level B8 now, the central office is hidden all the way at the lowest floor for security purposes - B44. Got to tell you that the total time for this elevator to take us down to the central office is a long 33 minutes. You are not claustrophobic right?"

"Nope. But I gotta say that 33 minutes is long as fuck and do you guys seriously have 44 basement levels in this place?!"

"Yes, there are 44 underground levels from B1-B44. I also need to agree that 33 minutes is too lengthy for an elevator ride and it's annoying especially when I need to make multiple trips to the central office. Fortunately we will be upgrading the lifts to high speed elevators next summer," Jungkook explains then turn around to look at his bunch of dark knights as he instructs: "We can't fit everyone in the same elevator. You guys take a separate one, we will meet at B44."

"Yes boss."

***

Currently, Jungkook and Taehyung are waiting silently next to each other in one of the three elevators to hell wait no I'm kidding to the underground level B44 some 3+km underneath the Earth's ground surface. Well, one unique characteristic of the elevator has got to be the fact that it is cladded with mirrors from all directions left right front back top under, giving Taehyung an illusion that he is in some sort of a creepy infinity complex because when the mirrors reflect off one another, limitless images of them are obtained at every fucking angle possible and it also isn't helping that the elevator
is currently making grumbling sounds as it descends through thick layers of tough rock and soil while casually transporting them deeper into the Earth's crust. Damn, this shit definitely needs an upgrade soon. There is also a certain amount of tension in the air as the both of them silently watch the displayed level decrease excruciatingly slowly on the small electronic screen from B8 to B9 to B10 to B11 and so on.

Alright, at this point in time, frankly Jungkook isn't looking at the screen no more because his eyes are busy checking out Taehyung's juicy and perky little piece of hot ass. Jungkook hasn't seen Taehyung dressed up in tight skinny jeans since the very day he had kidnapped Taehyung. Generally, Taehyung prefers to wear comfortable baggy pants with weird patterns back at the central mansion when he isn't out for gang activities. If they haven't went out today, Jungkook would have almost forgotten what hot piece of stuff Taehyung can be when channelling his usual gangster fashion.

Wow....daddy never fails to amaze me...that booty though....need to fuck it so bad....Jungkook thinks to himself and by the way he isn't fully in control of his primitive thoughts right now and by the time it is B18 he enters a semi-hypnotized state in which Taehyung's behind is ultra-magified and he sees nothing else but those 2 peaches reflecting boundlessly at every angle via the surrounding mirrors.

Shit I got to maintain my composure, Taehyung is going to get a surgery later and I need to get my shit together and stop thinking about sex, Jungkook thinks as he desperately tries to suppress his inner desires. He had already been doing that since day one so it shouldn't be a big problem to do it again BUT THE FUCKING MIRRORS WHY DO THE FUCKING MIRRORS HAVE TO SHOW A THOUSAND IMAGES OF THAT ASS FLOATING IN ALL DIRECTIONS GODDAMIT YOU NUT HELPING MIRRORS YOU NUT HELPING.

After some time, the ignorant Taehyung finally notices where Jungkook's wolfish eyes are landing at. Gulping in slight panic, the older man starts to slowly inch away from his husband towards the wall of the lift while still trying to act completely cool and composed. This is not good, Kook is literally salivating, Taehyung thinks to himself dreadfully as he tries to conjure an emergency escape route if Jungkook decides to pounce onto him because he knows horny Jungkook is extremely unpredictable and may attack at any moment now but he also comes to realize in horror that there is no way he can escape as he is trapped within the four walls of this noisy ass grumbling elevator. Faster elevator, faster, Taehyung thinks to himself, his palms sweating in anxiety.

20 minutes later, both are already perspiring profusely and they both desperately need some fresh air. Jungkook's length is also dangerously hard and his pants feel like it's going to explode but impressively he hasn't made any move towards Taehyung because he wants Taehyung to complete the surgery in ease today so for the past few moments Jungkook has been shutting his eyes tightly while panting heavily in an attempt to prevent further images of Taehyung's ass from infiltrating his sicko mind.
"Hey you ok?" Taehyung checks because Jungkook looks like he's going to collapse.

"Yeah I'm good. We reaching in 5 more minutes. Are you ready for the surgery?"

"Yeap, like you said you told me not to worry."

"Good."

5 minutes passes and the elevator finally opens at B44. A short reunion with the dark knights before they all trudge towards the central office together which is located directly in front of them. After a short schedule confirmation at the counter, Taehyung enters a medical room with a team of doctors. Jungkook waits patiently outside. Namjoon looks at Jungkook, scans down to his crotch area, infers something within a split of a second and looks back up to Jungkook's face again in mild amazement.

"How did you do it? How did you control it?" Namjoon asks curiously.

"I applied some techniques learnt from the cock control books but hell it is still difficult as fuck. I almost fainted inside the lift."

"Good job boss I'm proud of you."

"Thanks mate, you understand me the best."

5 seconds of silence.

"But why did you bother stopping yourself though?"

"He needs to do the surgery with a peace of mind. When muscles are tensed there will be complications."

"Oh. So you mean you wouldn't stop yourself after he finishes the surgery?"
Jungkook's deadpan face breaks into a perverted smirk. "Bingo."

45 minutes later, Taehyung re-emerges from the room looking as lively as before because just as Jungkook said, there really is nothing to be worried about. He walks right back up to Jungkook, totally clueless of Jungkook's upcoming plans. Apart from a trivial nausea which is a common side effect of the anesthesia, Taehyung feels absolutely great.

"I'm done! But just curious where is the tracking chip implanted though?"

"Good question but it's different for every individual and must be kept a secret from them. I mean if you think about it, if a member knows the chip is in his left arm and wants to leave the mafia for good, he can simply chop off his left arm right? We don't want shit like that to happen. Only the doctors and myself know where the micro-implantations are for each and every member."

"Oh. Right. Cool then. I guess I'll just have to accept that a micro-chip is somewhere inside a random part of my body then."

"Mmmhhmm. Anyway we are done for the day. I will promptly start teaching you stuff about the mafia tomorrow. For now let's just hurry to the elevator and go back up, I'm actually very hungry," Jungkook says. Very hungry for a piece of your ass, Jungkook thinks to himself and internally cackles to himself in anticipation.

"Okay I'm hungry too let's go."

And with that, Taehyung enters the elevator cluelessly with Jungkook like an innocent deer walking straight into a lion's den.

All I can say is RIP Taehyung.

***

Once the lift doors close, Jungkook immediately grabs onto Taehyung and slams him hard against the wall, eliciting a surprised gasp from Taehyung. Jungkook then takes out a gun from his suit and skilfully shoots down the four CCTVs which he knows are at the upper corners of the elevator. Taehyung is in shock. What the fuck just happened?!
"You are so gorgeous today wifey... let me love you properly..." Jungkook speaks with a deliberately deepened voice and he cannot wait any longer. Once Taehyung's back hits the hard wall, Jungkook crashes onto Taehyung, pressing their bodies together as he slams his lips onto Taehyung's, slowly nibbling onto Taehyung's plump lips while grinding his hips hotly against the other man. Taehyung's eyes widen in shock. Out of all the chances you could have taken to fuck me at home, you choose the fucking outdoor elevator?! Taehyung can't believe this sudden plot twist goddammit Jungkook is one sick fuck isn't he?!

"Huh?! Mmmmm....didn't you promise.... mmmm...not to touch me for the time being?! What's going on right now!" Taehyung struggles to speak while his mouth is being devoured by Jungkook. However, compared to the wedding night, Jungkook is somehow more skilful with his tongue this time. He goes nice and slow, sticking his tongue teasingly into Taehyung's mouth and swirling it around in a dance, poking hotly on both Taehyung's tongue and the insides on his cheeks trying to replicate what he has learnt from the online tutorials regarding the art of kissing. All the youtube videos detailing the right way to kiss have been watched over 34892048290 times in the past couple of days by Jungkook who has been making tons of study notes regarding this seemingly natural yet extremely complex task. Through the past few days he had learnt that kissing isn't about biting and in fact it's more of a teasing-twirling motion with occasional light romantic nibbles. In fact, biting is a big "no-no" as exemplified in the many "do-not-do" lists he has read from the internet.

Jungkook knows he screwed up the first two times. Being a competitive person that likes to do things right, he feels he absolutely can't afford to screw up anymore.

"Mmmmm...." Taehyung unknowingly lets out a small moan of pleasure before mentally cutting off his windpipe to prevent anymore leakage of such embarrassing sounds. At this point in time the older man can't help but start to indulge in the kiss though blushing furiously in the process because he is supposed to resist Jungkook no?! The fact that Jungkook is suddenly so much better at kissing is definitely not helping him to refuse Jungkook's advances at all, unfortunately.

"Well, I did say I won't touch you in bed, but we are in the elevator now," Jungkook pulls away slightly and points out with a mischievous smirk before trailing down to kiss Taehyung on his exposed jawline and neck while still maintaining eye contact with his wife. He wants to capture all of Taehyung's facial expression when he teases him to the brink of insanity. After digesting Jungkook's logical words, Taehyung's already red face turns a deeper shade of crimson like the insides of a ripened tomato as he looks away from Jungkook's intense gaze gritting his teeth in disbelief. He starts struggling in frustration but is pressed in place by a stronger and bigger Jungkook. Goddamit I should have seen that many fallacies in that offer! Taehyung thinks to himself and internally face-palms and then 2 seconds later melts abit in Jungkook's embrace when Jungkook licks onto a sensitive spot on his adam apple.

Jungkook chuckles at his wife's reaction. The mixture of embarrassment, anger, pleasure and shock on Taehyung's face is just too epic and sexy. He needs to make full use of this 30 minutes they have
together and he wants to see how many more of such faces Taehyung can make when he fucks him hard for the first time in two weeks!

While Jungkook is secretly plotting all the evil things he can do to Taehyung, Taehyung is just trying to survive each moment that is passing by as Jungkook continues to wreck him into a piece of writhing mess. Subconsciously, the panting Taehyung feels one of Jungkook's hand tightening around his waist pulling him closer and the other hand carressing him all over. The hand then sneakily starts traveling down somewhere along his back and before he can react, that sicko of a hand begins to grope roughly onto his ass with too much force as if Jungkook is planning on squashing it into shreds!

"Owww! Get that hand off me!" the fingers dig a little too hard into Taehyung's ass cheeks causing Taehyung to yelp in pain as he reflexively kicks onto Jungkook slightly. Who the hell grabs so roughly?! With that amount of force, his ass is sure to bruise for days!!!

Jungkook instantly releases his iron grasp on the piece of abused ass.

"Sorry daddy am I too rough again? I'll try to be gentle this time so let me take care of you, don’t resist me today daddy," Jungkook apologises cheekily but is not a least bit sorry. Their lips are currently linked by a sticky web of drool with their faces only milli-inches away from each other. Again, Taehyung looks away and avoids Jungkook's gaze.

"Like I can stop you now. Just do it if you want to and get it over and done with. It's just sex, no big deal but you better be gentle. If I don't enjoy this I'll kill you after this I swear," Taehyung warns and internally wails in shame because he can't believe that he has just given Jungkook an outright "good to go" sign. Seeing Taehyung’s scrunched-up victimized face trying to act all tough, Jungkook proceeds to send some light kisses onto Taehyung's forehead in an attempt to quell his distress.

"Understood daddy," Jungkook acknowledges and from then on, their fucking session officially begins.

There is only 25 minutes left before the elevator arrives to B8 - the level that they are returning to so Jungkook can't afford to waste any time. He starts to rip off Taehyung's upper wear while hastily undoing his own tie too and in no time, Taehyung is half naked and shivering slightly in the cold air-conditioned air.

Jungkook then lowers his head and attacks Taehyung’s right nipple, licking and sucking onto the red little bud like a tasty lollipop.
"Nggghhh...." Taehyung jolts in mild shock at the sensation before melting into moans of pleasure. Nobody has licked his nipples before so this is his first time feeling it. In the past he has always been the one eating women's breast and has never gotten licked like this before. To his surprise, it actually feels good. It is also a relief that Jungkook is bothering to do some foreplay now and he appreciates it. Taehyung is a man too and loves sex so as long as Jungkook makes it enjoyable for him, he actually won't mind being cooperative.

Next, Jungkook proceeds to unbuckle Taehyung's belt. He pulls down the older man's pants along with his underwear and throws it to the side. On the other hand, the fully naked Taehyung isn't really happy to see himself fully undressed in an outdoor elevator while Jungkook is still properly clothed so he starts to frantically reach over to fondle with Jungkook's belt. Jungkook is taken aback by the sudden proactiveness of Taehyung.

"Stop being disrespectful you bastard at least undress yourself too," Taehyung sulks as he continue to hastily undress Jungkook. Upon hearing that, Jungkook instantly chuckles with amusement at his wife.

"Okay sorry baby," Jungkook apologises cheekily and allows Taehyung to undress him while smiling at his wife as he eyes the fresh piece of meat in front of him from head to toe. Taehyung still has that serious look on his face and it's sexy as fuck to Jungkook. Besides his face, the broad yet slim shoulders, the toned and glowing skin, the defined legs and calve muscles, the washboard abs also add to the full package and Jungkook finds his length gradually hardening into an erected rock at the sight of his extremely attractive wife.

"Don't call me baby. I'm not a baby. I'm fucking 8 years older than you and you are the baby," Taehyung rambles disapprovingly but blushes when Jungkook calls him that.

Very soon, both of them are fully naked. Jungkook springs into action again once Taehyung is done undressing him as he latches onto Taehyung again like a leech and starts to rub their bare dicks together. "Urghhh........" both let out low growls as they both indulge in the sensation. In the process Jungkook reaches over for a kiss and they both kiss hotly while stroking on each other's dicks. As they moan endlessly in each other's embrace, Jungkook attempts to strike a conversation:

"You are so hot daddy."

"I know."
10 seconds of silence.

You are supposed to say 'you are hot too' dad."

Upon hearing that, Taehyung halts on stroking Jungkook's dick to make a point.

"Stop fishing for compliments and get your head in the sex. Do you still want to fuck or not."

Oh man, Jungkook almost cries internally in sadness upon hearing that.

"Ok daddy."

Conversation ceases here for a while. Dry stroking for a while.

After some time, Jungkook realizes the whole situation is becoming too uncomfortably dry so he grabs a bottle of lube out of his Doraemon of a suit.

"Daddy, see what I brought," Jungkook announces smugly holding the bottle of lube in the air proudly like a champion.

"Mmm that's better. If you fuck me dry again I will promptly chop off your dick in your sleep and feed it to the dogs for supper."

Jungkook ignores the vicious warning and pours some lube onto his hands in excitement. He proceeds to rub the lube all over Taehyung's body while pressing Taehyung against the wall of the elevator. At this point in time his hands start to travel downwards to Taehyung's lower region as he spreads the lube all over Taehyung's inner thighs and then finally onto Taehyung's ass crack.

Using the mirror at the back, Jungkook can clearly see Taehyung's cute and perky ass seducing him to fuck it good. The younger man draws circles with his middle finger on Taehyung's tiny little hole while sensually licking onto Taehyung's earlobes, eliciting a blush from Taehyung. Oh god this is too intimate, Taehyung thinks to himself.

"Stop teasing already and start prepping me."
"Aren't you a little impatient?"

With that being said, Jungkook pushes in two fingers into Taehyung's hole and Taehyung instantly starts becoming restless again.

"Ahhh...." Taehyung yanks his head back in pain as he starts to pant heavily, feeling the fingers stretching his hole that has been unused for more than 2 weeks. Oh god why is it so painful like the previous time?! Clearly a butthole isn't as accustomed as a vagina when it comes to penetration! Taehyung curses innately in agony. Though the lube does help to soothe the sensation a little but oh god it still fucking hurts. The older man instinctively tries to push Jungkook's hand away but Jungkook just holds Taehyung firmly in place.

"Be good daddy, it won't hurt after a while," Jungkook coaxes firmly as if he is an expert in sex though really the only sex he has ever had was during the disastrous wedding night with Taehyung. He leaves his fingers inside for a good minute so that Taehyung can adjust to the intrusion, feeling Taehyung's uncomfortable ring of muscles clenching and unclenching onto his fingers.

"Ahh..mmmmm.." cold sweat breaks out of Taehyung's forehead as he grimaces in helplessness. Jungkook who is a closet sadist starts to feel his already hard cock bulge further as it begins to throb in excitement. After feeling that Taehyung is a little more relaxed around his fingers, Jungkook starts to thrust the fingers in and out of Taehyung's hole, occasional scissoring and spreading the tight ring of muscles.

"Ngggh...ahhh.....haha....owww....ngghh...haha..." Taehyung is restlessly squirming around now, tipping his toes to increase the distance between his ass and Jungkook's fingers. His whimpers are mixed with nervous laughters as he tries to stop himself from freaking out because it's painful as fuck. In this moment, one of his trembling hand is firmly grabbing onto Jungkook's broad shoulder as if it will help him feel any better. Jungkook notices Taehyung's discomfort and slows down his preparation process, thrusting the fingers in and out at a slower pace. Also, the younger man notices that they are reaching B8 the next level. Damn, 30 minutes passes by too fast but hell no are they going to stop now. Jungkook immediately reaches over to the buttons which are within arm's length and swiftly cancels the B8 stop and presses B44 again to which the lift immediately stops ascending and starts to descend again. Bravo! There's more time for sex now! Grinning with a perverted look, Jungkook promptly returns his attention to carefully finger a clearly distressed Taehyung.

After what seems like an eternity, Taehyung's painful whimpers finally turn into pleasurable moans.

"Faster you bastard there there yes THERE FUCK YES!!" Taehyung suddenly bucks his hips and throws his head back upon feeling his prostate being rammed full-force by Jungkook's fingers to
which Jungkook smirks in victory having had discovered Taehyung's sweet spot. The younger man
then proceeds to kiss Taehyung on the lips gently again while removing his fingers slowly. From the
mirror behind, Jungkook can clearly see Taehyung's asshole gaping and dripping lewdly from the
sudden emptiness.

"I think you'll like my cock more than my fingers baby," Jungkook whispers seductively into
Taehyung's ears, grabs onto his already enormously bulging dick, rubs it a few times up and down
Taehyung's ass crack teasingly before pressing it into Taehyung's hole.

Of course Taehyung jolts in physical shock again upon the penetration by a certain Jung cock.
"Fuck...!" Taehyung almost chokes on his breath as he feels the width of his hole expanding
painfully to the maximum and he is instantly reminded of how it feels like to be fucked by that huge
cock of Jungkook. The older man knows that he won't be able to get used to Jungkook's ten-inch
dick anytime soon as tears start uncontrollably forming in his eyes. Due to the intrusion, his legs are
also magically weakened so to prevent himself from falling to the ground, Taehyung quickly wraps
his arms around Jungkook's neck to keep himself in place because if he sinks down further it means
his ass will have to advance deeper onto the impaling cock. At this point in time, the hypersensitive
Jungkook who is determined not to screw up his sex again notices Taehyung's trembling legs and
quickly grabs onto his thighs and lifts them up.

"Wrap your legs around my waist come on," Jungkook instructs. Taehyung who is already not
thinking straight can only comply. In lieu of Taehyung's misery, Jungkook stops intruding after his
dick is approximately one-quarter it's way into Taehyung.

He just stops there while allowing Taehyung to adjust as he holds onto Taehyung's waist to support
his whole body weight.

"Ahhhh...." Taehyung grimaces, his legs trembling as he tries to wriggle up against gravity.

"Hush hush, you're doing great baby. Relax," Jungkook soothes Taehyung and kisses the tears that
are springing free from the side of Taehyung's eyes.

"Haha stop calling me a baby and treating me like one. I'm okay just waiting for them muscles to
loosen up......" Taehyung explains and is still trying to be tough though his veins are already popping
out dangerously on his neck not to mention the fact that he is low-key already crying.

1 minute passes as Jungkook and Taehyung hang stationary in position for Taehyung to adjust.
Taehyung gets confused at a point in time from the lack of movement.
"Aren't you gonna move Kook? Did you dick spoil or something?"

"Not going to move until you say you're okay."

Upon hearing that, Taehyung internally applauds his son's ability to control his impulses. Well, he has Namjoon's cock control book to thank.

A few seconds later, Taehyung tells Jungkook to move and Jungkook starts to thrust another quarter of his dick into Taehyung.

"Stop! Shit this hurts like a motherfucker!!!!" Taehyung screams at that point and tells Jungkook to add more lube to which Jungkook obeys.

So they stop there for another minute adding in the whole bottle of lube and waiting for Taehyung to adjust while both panting heavily in the process.

"Dad let me try something," Jungkook speaks when he suddenly has a kinky idea. In this instant, he pulls out his dick and thrusts it in again but only till his dick is a quarter inside.

"Urhhh..." Taehyung moans at the sudden movement, his eyes widening slightly at the sensation before dilating again. Jungkook then pulls the D out again and thrusts it back in still at the same depth being a quarter of his full dick length into Taehyung to which Taehyung gasps in surprise. Seeing that Taehyung likes it, Jungkook repeats the movement a few times as sinful sounds of slushing fill the air. In no time, he has sped up his shallow thrusts so fast that Taehyung is drooling uncontrollably in pleasure and writhing inside his arms.

Taehyung is literally dying from the amount of Jungcock stimulation and Jungcock teasing at his hole which is threatening to overwhelm all of his senses. His hole is currently dripping lewdly in both Jungkook's precum and the lube as Jungkook continues to scoop mischievously in and out of his tight hole.

"Ahhh....stop teasing kook, just fuck me nice and deep...." Taehyung murmurs with half-lidded eyes, his saliva drooling all over from inside his lips. While his dick is currently painfully hard from the overwhelming pleasure he is getting, the rest of his body is entirely soft and helpless against Jungkook's mischievous teasing.
"As you wish daddy. Oh right can you help me click the B8 button on your right?" Oh they are reaching B44 again. Taehyung obediently complies and once he has done so, he retracts him arm and slings it back around Jungkook's neck to prepare for what is to come.

At this stage, Taehyung is already fully red in face, his mouth dripping incessantly with drool, his eyes half-lidded and slightly zoning out and most importantly, his glorious dick is also erecting upwards in full attention signifying that he is actually turned on as compared to the previous time on the wedding night. To Jungkook, this image is absolutely gorgeous. Jungkook mentally snaps a picture in his head of this beautiful moment as he tightens his grip onto Taehyung's waist. Slowly, he pulls Taehyung's waist downwards while thrusting his dick upwards, sinking his dick fully into Taehyung such that his balls touches Taehyung's ass. Taehyung tenses up but immediately relaxes when Jungkook kisses him firmly on the lips, though he is still trembling uncontrollably from the entire length of Jungcocker up his unseasoned ass. He feels like he is being filled fully by Jungkook's cock all the way to the brim to the ends of his stomach goddamit it hurts but it hurts so good this time.

"Cling on tight, I'm going to move..." Jungkook announces and starts to move rhythmically - in and out, in and out, in and out, shallow and deep, shallow and deep, shallow and deep to which Taehyung moans continuously in part pain and part pleasure.

"Faster," Taehyung instructs after some time.

"As you wish," Jungkook replies and with that, the younger man starts to thrust in at increasing speed into Taehyung.

"AH!!!!" Taehyung screams and clings on tighter to Jungkook as he feels the dick ramming into him at a pace faster than he can handle. Goddamit, the gravity in this position is killing him. Due to the fact that his entire body is lifted from the ground, the only pressure point when he sinks down is none other than his hole i.e. the pressure of the intruding dick is fully concentrated inside his ass and can't be redistributed because his only body contact at his lower region is Jungkook's dick inside his hole which is currently fucking up into him like a savage all while he sinks down helplessly due to gravity.

Taehyung begins to forget his own name as Jungkook continues to thrust up into Taehyung.

"Kook... ahhhhh.....AHHHHH!! FUCKKK!!!" Taehyung can no longer hold back his moans and screams. Uncontrollable tears flow out like an open tap as he starts to sob in the overwhelming pain and pleasure. It really is embarrassing to cry like a virgin each time during sex with Jungkook but somehow the tears keep flowing like a river even though he keeps mentally telling himself to hold
them waters back. In fact, Taehyung is currently being bobbed up and down at a furious speed from Jungkook's insane thrusting motions while balling his eyes out like the crybaby he never wanted to be.

"Taehyung ahh... Taehyung...you are so gorgeous... I love you... I love you so much..." Jungkook moans too as he feels like he is going to explode from the amount of pleasure that is sweeping through his entire body. Taehyung's warm and tight hole is pulsating, his ring of muscles clenching and unclenching uncontrollably around Jungkook's dick to which Jungkook feels as if his dick is being pumped to the brink of sanity. God this is so good this is so good... Jungkook thinks to himself as he indulges in the tingling butterfly sensation radiating from his high-as-fly dick.

After some time, Jungkook suddenly pulls out, releases Taehyung from his embrace and flips Taehyung over such that Taehyung is facing the mirror directly behind him. Taehyung looks at himself in the mirror in shock but before he can react, Jungkook hastily enters again from the back.

"Ahhh!" Taehyung screams in shock and instantly melts into marshmallow softness again. He clings on to the wall as Jungkook bangs him from behind into oblivion.

"Look daddy, I want you to see who is fucking you right now. Me. Jeon Jung Kook. You are my wife and you are mine only," Jungkook switches to boss persona in 2 seconds. He is suddenly feeling an intense urge to possess Taehyung hence the sudden possessive words.

"Mmmm... yes I'm yours and yours only..." Taehyung is apparently fucked senseless if not he'll never say such submissive shit in a thousand years. All he sees is himself being fucked into a mess in the mirror and somehow in this cloudy state of a mind he really believes that he belongs to Jungkook. Upon hearing Taehyung's unexpected statement, Jungkook's eyes widen in surprise as a pleasurable bolt of a lightning strikes through the entirety of his sex organ.

Did Taehyung just said what he said?! My god, fuck! Jungkook goes berserk and pounds into Taehyung at full force from behind and before Taehyung can even catch his breath, Jungkook unexpectedly reaches down to grab onto Taehyung's dick as he strokes his dad's length at a furious pace.

"I'm going to cum I'm going to cum!!!" Taehyung is crying and screaming and spasming as Jungkook quickens both his stroking and fucking and within 5 seconds, both of them climax together and orgasm so hard they almost knock out right then and there inside the elevator.

For a long time, both men splay on the floor watching the display screen while still panting heavily.
While Jungkook is recovering well, Taehyung is still shaking from the mind-blowing sex that has just occurred a few moments ago. Having both his front and back played like that feels something akin to a supernova of nerve explosion for him.

The display screen ticks on - B20...B19...B18...B17... at B12. At B12, both start wearing back their clothes to which Jungkook proceeds to help Taehyung with said task because Taehyung looks too exhausted to even move a finger.

At B8, Jungkook emerges holding a semi-conscious Taehyung in bridal style out of the elevator. They both smell of sex. The dark knights who have been waiting there patiently for an hour proceed to resume to their duties, following closely behind Jungkook with deadpan faces as they all trudge back collectively towards the travellator which will transport them back to the central mansion.

"Let's just do it in bed next time..." Taehyung murmurs softly in Jungkook's embrace.

"Hmmm... I can't guarantee when I'll be turned on though," Jungkook says nonchalantly to which Taehyung tenses up in murdering rage.

"Fuck you I should have thrown you into the sea 13 years ago or sold you for some good money!" Taehyung curses with a dry cracking voice before softening in exhaustion again. Shortly after, he falls asleep in Jungkook's arms due to fatigue.

Jungkook smirks at his wife's cuteness. He really enjoys pushing Taehyung's limits and see him get adorably angry. Hmm... where should they have sex next time? In the forest bushes? In the movie theatre? In BANGTAN secret hideout's medical room? Jungkook lets his mind run free. But of course nobody knows for sure, not even Jungkook himself as all that will depend on his dick's mood at any given point in time.

"Namjoon, compile a list of the best places to have outdoor sex. Send it to me in 2 days. I need more inspiration."

"Yes boss. I personally have a recommendation though."

"Say it."
"On an airplane."

Upon hearing that, Jungkook breaks out into an unrestrained cackle.

"Didn't know you were this kinky, Namjoon."

Namjoon's deadpan face breaks into a smirk.

"Always am, boss. Always am."

---

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don't have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden_tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don't forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
A Taste Of Freedom

Chapter Summary

Jungkook finally allows Taehyung out of the underground mafia headquarters. Taehyung reunites with his gang and feels recharged.

“The camera is an instrument that teaches people how to see without a camera.” — Dorothea Lange

***

Location: BANGTAN gang’s hideout zone in district #7 of Taehyung's village

Date & Time: 2nd October 2017 2:11PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, 1 month 1 day into marriage]

***

In the span of 2 weeks, Taehyung had more or less acquired the basic knowledge he needed to know about "The Mafia Origins" though with his head nearly combusting into flames. The process of learning was definitely not a smooth-sailing one because Taehyung was never a bright student in the first place. Hell, he was never a student, so learning anything from scratch would be pretty tough for him not to mention what he was trying to internalize were chunks of complicated mafia history plus he was never good with directions so memorizing all the routes to the important underground chambers and to the countless entrances and exits in this giant maze of a compound was definitely an exceptional feat for him. However, he sucked it up and pressed on, determined to attain the minimal freedom Jungkook had promised to give him upon completion of his readings.

Unfortunately, the crazy sex drive of Jeon Jungcock also meant that Taehyung wasn't able to catch much sleep at night ever since he had absent-mindedly murmured "let's just do it in bed next time" to Jungkook right after the elevator sex event so just imagine how Taehyung was dealing with all that agonising mental stress while at the same time feeling like he might knock out any moment due to the intense muscle aches and fatigue from them sleepless nights.

But of course Taehyung didn't, in any instant, hate the sex with Jungkook at all. Initially he was resistant but he soon realised that he was starting to like the many out-of-the-world sensations and surprises associated with being roughly manhandled around and somehow Jungkook had never failed to amaze him each time with his various fuck fantasies and undying stamina. Taehyung
thought he would get used to it but no. Never. One moment he could be slammed against the bed post, bent over and taken mercilessly from behind and the next moment he could be thrown over the kitchen table with a hand choking onto his neck and a dick shoved into his mouth. Sex was always so raw and so rough with Jungkook and each session was memorable for Taehyung. While Jungkook had been occasionally gentle, his gentleness was rather unnatural and forced so after some days Taehyung just told the mafia boss straight in the face to cut the fuck out of being nice and just fuck him the hard way. Taehyung's a grown-ass man after all, he felt that he had acclimatized well to the pain and in contrast it was even more disturbing for him to witness his young ex-son Jungkook getting all cooly-smoochy with him. They had never been close before so to Taehyung the forced intimacy was rather cringe-worthy. On the other hand, though the sex was painful, Taehyung had gradually grown to like it in a way he could have never imagined. In fact, he had come to realize that the sensation of prostate stimulation was indeed an extraordinary thing and frankly speaking more orgasmic as compared to frontal penial stimulation. It almost felt like a tight hug at the base of his cock and Taehyung secretly loved it to pieces when Jungkook had held him down and pounded into them bundle of nerves there in his rear end. Well, only Jungkook could make him scream in pain yet leave him writhing in pleasure and begging for more. Hmmm....maybe he really didn't mind having Jungkook as his lifelong sexual partner after all. Taehyung had always preferred rough over vanilla and the animalistic sex he had experienced with Jungkook so far was starting to kick him off in the right way.

However, the older man was still not quite sure how to feel about his love for Jungkook. How could he convert his 8 years of fatherly love towards Jungkook into romantic love? That would definitely take him sometime to figure out. It was already weeks into the marriage and although he had admitted on the surface that he was Jungkook's wife, he was still feeling painfully awkward with the new husband-wife relationship. How was he supposed to act in front of Jungkook? How was he supposed to feel about Jungkook? How was he supposed to love Jungkook? He was trying very hard to view Jungkook as a partner but there were still internal struggles like this and Jungkook wasn't helping in this aspect too because these few days he was always busy settling mafia matters over his phone or laptop and had spent less quality time with Taehyung.

Kook why can't you at least..... chase me a little? Taehyung had thought with a pout evident on his face on several occasions when he was left alone in the mansion. For goodness sake you kidnapped me and forced me into a marriage so can't you at least do a decent job in helping me fall in love with you? Taehyung would think in frustration sometimes when Jungkook leave him at home for days when he was out for missions to them foreign countries like Russia or Mexico. Urghh... at some point Taehyung actually couldn't believe that he was starting to act and think like a neglected housewife desperate for attention but really, being trapped like that in an underground cage meant that the only person he could turn to was Jungkook. Jungkook, Jungkook, Jungkook, that was all Taehyung could think about then and yes, Taehyung himself had actually come to realize what he was feeling was probably some sort of a stockholm syndrome effect but he couldn't bring himself to care more because what he needed to care about at that time was still finishing the mafia readings that Namjoon had collated for him so he had to put his emotional turmoil aside first to study.

This conversation happened around 1 week ago during Taehyung’s intensive study period:
"Kook can I go out yet? It's been almost a month since I have arrived here. I'm sucking at this I really can't study anymore," Taehyung whined desperately with panda eyes from the lack of sleep while burying his face into a mountain of paperwork at their bedroom desk.

Jungkook didn't back down.

"Don't make me repeat myself. You are not allowed to go out till you finish all the readings Namjoon collated for you. Also you'll have to pass a test afterwards just to check if you've internalised everything," said Jungkook with a strict matter-of-fact tone while settling some administrative stuff over his laptop.

On a side note, Jungkook's laptop or any computer used within the mafia headquarters is highly protected with the mafia's own formulated privacy algorithm. The electronic devices and gadgets the mafia entity uses are safe from law enforcers' location tracking and hacking. So even if they use websites such as Google or social networking sites such as MSN, their location tags will automatically jumble into another random address or can even be manipulated if they so wish and also their searches are completely untraceable leaving not one single footprint online. Being the most secretive crime organisation in the world isn't easy and "The Mafia Origins" has to constantly up their game and be ahead of the rest of the world when it comes to cyber protection and technology. No worries on this issue though because they are still miles beyond the reach of the police. In other words, "The Mafia Origins" is an invisible and invincible shield nobody can break through at this point in time.

Alright back to Taehyung who is currently quaking at Jungkook's words. Did Jungkook just say "test"? Taehyung thinks in disbelief to himself.

"Test!!?!?! But but but you didn't warn me about that earlier and I have never taken a test before in my life and I really can't read anymore of this really my head is going to explode soon ---"

"Shut up and read Taehyung. Whatever you're learning now is only the basic history and structure of this underground headquarters so stop complaining. You are lucky I didn't tell you to learn morse codes and Russian before I let you out."

10 seconds of silence. Jungkook sure knew how to be strict in serious moments like that and Taehyung couldn't hate it more.

"Sorry..." having been told to shut up, Taehyung apologised and compliantly diverted his attention back to the sea of words that Namjoon had painstakingly converted into simple conversational Korean for Taehyung. The diagrams were also simplified but to Taehyung all those were still beyond
his ability of comprehension.

At this juncture, it was a point to realize that there were already some noticeable changes in terms of the dynamics between the both of them after marriage. For instance, Jungkook had started calling Taehyung by his name instead of the honorific term "Daddy" unless when they were having sex. He also liked to call Taehyung by the term "Wifey" when he wanted to tease the elder. On the other hand, Taehyung was starting to become increasingly tamed after being locked up in his new home and one really couldn't blame him because to be fair he was out-of-touch with his previous gangsterhood and out-of-touch with his previous friends and basically he was out-of-touch with whatever that was happening in the world up there at that point in time and if that sort of psychological and social deprivation weren't enough, he was also physically fucked till he was too exhausted to lift a finger every night when Jungkook wasn't away for missions so you really couldn't blame him when his hard persona cracked like a soft-boiled egg from that of a ferocious lion he used to be into a helpless subdued kitten. In addition, Jungkook was starting to become stricter these few days because he wanted Taehyung to learn things fast, to learn everything about the mafia world because only then would Taehyung truly be a part of his empire and that fierce side of Jungkook was a little bit scary and unapproachable to Taehyung.

5 passing minutes of Taehyung seeing stars in the chunk of descriptive paragraphs and complex maps. Taehyung looked over at Jungkook but Jungkook's eyes seemed to be fixed on his computer.

2 minutes of head-scratching. Taehyung then looked back at Jungkook again and Taehyung's eyes met with Kook. Taehyung took the chance to send a pleading face as if saying "at least help me a little!" and only then did Jungkook's deadpan facial expression soften slightly. Jungkook let out a deep sigh, put down his laptop and walked over to Taehyung.

"You need my help? Which part?" Jungkook whispered gently and as he arrived close to Taehyung he landed a soft kiss on Taehyung's forehead.

"Everything on this fucking map!" Taehyung exclaimed. He was delighted that Jungkook was finally giving him some attention and was smiling sheepishly yet with excitement at Jungkook. Jungkook could be unpredictable sometimes and Taehyung was always happy to get on his good side.

Jungkook chuckled at his sunshine. Maybe Taehyung really needed some help in digesting all that new information. He grabbed a nearby chair and sat down next to Taehyung and with their faces just inches away from each other, started to patiently teach Taehyung with the patience Taehyung never had for him in the past.

***
5 days later, Taehyung took and passed the exam which was also set by Namjoon and invigilated by Namjoon. Since Jungkook wasn't around during the test, Namjoon explicitly gave away some clues and warnings using facial expressions like "duh" and "good" and "uh-uh you better change your answer" so with Namjoon's help, Taehyung was able to pass his test with flying colours. Of course when it was announced that he had passed the examination, Taehyung almost burst out crying like he did it he finally did it! After 1 month of being trapped in this hell hole of a place he finally earned himself a ticket to freedom and he couldn't be happier!

"These are the keys, congratulations Taehyung," Jungkook said with a gentle smile and passed Taehyung the shining beautiful keys before continuing, "but of course always inform me before hand if you have things like gang fights or gang negotiations coming up. And remember: no red light district or you're dead."

"Okay I get it how many times must you repeat this! Stop nagging like an old man would you?"

"Hey you little --- you are 8 years older than me so who's the old man here huh?!"

"You! You are the old man!" Taehyung rebutted playfully and sprinted full speed away with his keys and of course Jungkook easily chased up to him, grabbed him and threw him over his shoulder.

"You clearly need some discipline baby. I'll show you what your old man can do to you all night long."

"Hey no no what the fuck Kook it's not even 8pm yet put me down PUT ME FUCK DOWN!!!!"

RIP Taehyung.

***

Currently, Taehyung is slowly making his way over towards BANGTAN's hideout area with uncontained anticipation and excitement. The nearest exit from the underground mafia headquarters is just 20 minutes away from his old village but of course he isn't rushing. In fact, he takes his time
walking in a swagger because he is enjoying every moment of his new-found freedom and somehow it feels really good to be walking under the scorching sun in the open streets which he hasn't gotten to do in the past month. Needless to say, another low-key reason why he can't walk fast is none other than his husband's "ahem" which is causing him to be permanently limping from all that sweet pain between his legs. Taehyung is starting to get used to that feeling by the way, to the point where he is hardly even aware that he is not walking straight.

Finally, Taehyung arrives at the doors of the BANGTAN's hideout zone and at this point Taehyung's body is already a 99 percent drowned in adrenaline. It feels like it has been an eternity since he had returned and the gang leader can't wait to see everyone again. Hell, he can't wait to see Jimin fooling around like a little mochi and Hoseok jumping around energetically and Jin snapping photos randomly and munching onto food like a squirrel! He had missed them so much so much so much!!!!

"I'm back folks!!" Taehyung exclaims once he surfaces in the underground basement containing a full room of gangsters to which All BANGTAN members who have heard the familiar voice immediately stop whatever they are doing to gaze at their respected leader. Is this... IS THIS THEIR LEADER KIM TAE HYUNG?! AFTER 1 MONTH HE FINALLY RETURNS?!!!!

5 seconds of silence owing to human's slow reaction time before celebrative chaos erupts in the whole place.

TAEHYUNG IS BACK FROM EUROPE!!!! Jin, JHope and Jimin who are also just around the corner proceeds to sprint towards Taehyung. Once they reach their beloved friend, they immediately pounce on him to send him a violent massive bear group hug while the rest of BANGTAN starts to cheer loudly hurling greetings to their almighty boss.

"WE MISSED YOU BOSS!!!!!!"

Chaotic screaming, beer bottle caps opening and hurray noises for 20 minutes in the compound.

20 minutes later after the craze dies down, Taehyung settles down for a mahjong game with Jin, Hoseok and Jimin at the mahjong table. Nothing special, just four men sitting together fiddling tiles while chatting.

"Taehyung ah, how's your Europe trip?" Hoseok breaks the silence.
"Pretty good I'd say. I've seen the Eiffel tower in Paris and it is quite a stunner. Germany's Berlin wall is well, just a piece of wall which is intriguing but overall my favorite has got to be the waffles in Netherlands and damn I love those weed brownies too. Here, I brought back some souvenirs for you guys as promised," Taehyung recites the research he had made regarding the main attractions and features in Europe and throws the bag of souvenirs Jungkook's men had gotten for him to each of his three friends. He knows that they will most definitely ask him about his trip and he doesn't want to get tongue-tied hence essential research was done. However, while doing his research, he starts to think that maybe it will actually be a good idea to go for an overseas trip with Jungkook but Jungkook always seems to be so busy so the elder isn't entirely sure whether it's appropriate for him to ask for a...ask for a .....honeymoon maybe? Usually honeymoons come after the marriage right? So why isn't Jungkook bringing him on one?

"BELGIUM CHOCOLATE AND MACARONS!!!!!!!" Jin's shouting snaps Taehyung back from his thoughts. The photographer catches his gift and upon realization that he has just received his dream foods, he screams in disbelief and almost dies in happiness. He then whips out his camera and starts taking food photos as expected.

"Wow these branded clothes and limited edition shoes are so dope mann thank you brother," Jimin checks out his gift and thanks Taehyung too.

"You guys have to thank Jungkook, he is the one paying for all these goods," Taehyung reminds them and suddenly blushes at the thought of his husband. Oh man, this stockholm syndrome getting real serious.

"Oh right! How is Jungkook? He sounds really different on the phone. Couldn't really see his face clearly on the previous video call too due to a bad internet connection," Hoseok asks in curiosity.

"Pretty good actually," Taehyung answers and then reaches over to his wallet fishing out a recent photo he had taken with Jungkook and flashes it to his 3 friends. It's a safe welfie photo: they aren't kissing or doing anything suggestive and the background isn't revealing of any mafia information so he deems it fit to show them for now.

"OH MY GOD KOOK IS BIGGER THAN YOU NOW HE USED TO BE SO SMALL!!!!" Jin screams in disbelief again but this time with 3 macarons stuffed into his mouth.

"Haha he really is bigger than me..." Taehyung says and blushes hard again when he is reminded of something.

"This is amazing. Wow can't believe he grew so much in 5 years...." Jimin gapes in awe.
"Bring him back soon okay we want to see him!" Hoseok adds with a sunshine of a grin to which Taehyung agrees.

"I'll bring him back next time, I promise. He's just a little busy currently with work so once he's more free I'll definitely drag him over to visit you guys. Oh yes: I won't be staying in my old house anymore because Jungkook wants me to move in with him into his mansion so don't go over to my old address to find me. Poor him, 3 years ago his birth father passed away so he's living alone till a month ago when he came back to look for me. He wants to take care of me and misses me so I thought why not? Anyway, my decision is final: I've decided to move in with him."

"Oh poor Jungkookie! He must have been really sad when his birth father passed away but it's cute that he wants to take care of you. I'm so happy that he is a filial person and came back to find you! No worries please go on to live with him oh god how I wish I have a son like him..." says Hoseok with a hopeful and dreamy face.

Seeing how Jungkook's image is being painted as a "returning filial adopted son", Taehyung starts to imagine the multiple ways his lovely friends may react when they find out that Jungkook had kidnapped and forced him into a marriage.

"Where do you guys stay now?" Jimin asks.

Good question.

"Here," Taehyung says and gives them an address to a house but of course it is not the address to the underground central mansion. Unbeknownst to them, that house Taehyung is giving them the address to houses one of the secret entrances to the underground headquarters and also serves as Jungkook's and Taehyung's second home in the real world. But Taehyung only learnt about that house recently when he was given freedom. In fact, Jungkook had already planned for this double-house concept with one house above and one below ground but linked 3 years ago and hired people to build it in preparation for the marriage and when Taehyung learnt about how the two houses are secretly linked via travelators and well-built underground tunnels he couldn't help but applaud internally --- that's some pretty sick engineering and design right there.

"Wow is the house really big? Since you say Jungkook is rich?" Jimin asks curiously.

"Really big. I'll invite you guys over next time for a pizza party," Taehyung suggests casually to which Jin starts spazzing out again.
"PIZZA!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!" screams Jin as he almost faints from the excitement.

***

Some moments later, Taehyung adjusts slightly in his chair during the intense mahjong session to which his jacket droops down a little revealing some fresh purple hickeys over his neck and chest. Hoseok who is sitting directly opposite Taehyung immediately notices. Wow, those hickeys are crazy they look more like dark gruesome patches of battle scars, Hoseok thinks to himself.

"Taehyung ah, European girls are pretty wild aren't they?!!" Hoseok asks in part disbelief and part amazement pointing at the hickeys.

Upon hearing Hoseok's words, Taehyung's face immediately flushes deep red as he frantically pulls his jacket up.

"UHhhhh.... Yeahhh!!! Hahahahaha they are so wild and crazy!!"

Jin, Hoseok and Jimin collectively look at one another and go, "OOOooooooOOOOO...."

***

Some moments later when Taehyung takes a break to fetch himself some coffee Jimin notices something too.

"Hey Taehyung are you limping??!!? You okay brother did someone hurt you?!!" Jimin says in part disbelief and shock.

"Uhhhhhh..... yeahhh am I limping??!!! Hahahahaha Kook and I went for some strenuous mountain climbing too in Europe and probably this is because my legs aren't fully recovered yet from the muscle aches so you can imagine ----"
4 hours later, Taehyung needs to leave for home. He is currently feeling so refreshed after spending quality time with his BANGTAN members but for now he needs to bid them goodbye and return to his husband Jungkook. Just before he leaves the hideout zone, Jin abruptly stops him.

"Wait Taehyung! I suddenly remember something: do you want Jungkook's childhood photos? I have an album of them! Previously I didn't want to pass it to you because I didn't want to remind you of the trauma of having lost Jungkook. You were so sad then when Jungkook left so I kept them first for you."

Upon hearing that Taehyung is stunned. Did Jin just say Jungkook's childhood photos? Jungkook's CHILDHOOD photos?!!

"Oh yes now that I think about it you took tons of photos of Jungkook when he was still around. Pass them to me I want them. And was I sad? I thought I hid my feelings well."

"No you didn't. You were in a zombie mode for half a year after he left and you had tears falling from your eyes randomly without you yourself even realizing it."

"Really?! Holy shit I didn't know I was this crazy."

"Yeah but it's good that Jungkook is back with you now. Wait a moment I'll go grab them for you," Jin says and runs off. 5 minutes later he returns with a huge file of photos and passes it to Taehyung.

"Thanks Jin you're the best," Taehyung says with a smile and with that, he starts trudging back towards the mafia underground central mansion. Well, Taehyung definitely can't wait to share his first day back with BANGTAN over dinner with his husband Jungkook and he also can't wait to laugh at Jungkookie over his baby photos.

Gosh Jungkook used to be so cute, Taehyung thinks to himself in surprise upon viewing one of the photos. However, he stops himself from seeing more of them for he wants to view it together with Jungkook.

It will be nice for both of them to reminisce their past together now that they are a married couple.
Jin's Photos

Chapter Summary

According to readers, this is one of the best chapters of this story.

Taehyung and Jungkook review Jungkook's childhood photos together and things get emotional.

“What I like about photographs is that they capture a moment that’s gone forever, impossible to reproduce.” — Karl Lagerfeld

***

Location: "The Mafia Origin" Secret Underground Headquarters Central Mansion

Date & Time: 2nd October 2017 7:30PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, 1 month 1 day into marriage]

A smug Taehyung arrives home at 730pm sharp with a pack of foetus Jungkook photos in his hands.

"I'm back!" Taehyung announces his own return in a zestful tone after seeing Jungkook's shoes placed neatly at the side of the door signifying that the younger man is already home from work. The older man is currently on a roll because of the perfect afternoon he had spent with BANGTAN and he cannot wait to discuss his day over dinner with his ex-son Jungkook who is currently occupied with cooking dinner in the kitchen.

"Give me 5 more minutes," replies Jungkook while busily fiddling with pots and pans. Jungkook is a person that can be cheeky and playful at times but when it comes down to completing tasks, he will always be exceptionally focused in whatever he sets out to accomplish. This applies to everything he does be it managing the mafia, solving organisational issues or simply just cooking dinner like what he is doing now.

Upon hearing Jungkook's response, Taehyung shouts an "okay!" in acknowledgement before removing his shoes and jacket only to throw them haphazardly on the floor like how he always did in the past. He then proceeds to splay comfortably in the living room waiting rather impatiently for food.
For a split second there is a perceived deception in Taehyung's mind as if nothing has changed. In the deception, Jungkook is still his little obedient son cooking away in the kitchen preparing dinner for him and that he is still the almighty father in control at home. Somehow this nostalgic remembrance pains Taehyung in which an indescribable wave of a heartache ripples through his chest as if to remind him of the days in the past that he could have treasured more. Jungkook was such a good son and just thinking about this brings tears to his eyes.

Thankfully, Taehyung's mind gets abruptly taken over by the immense hunger radiating from within his stomach after some time.

"Kook! I'm really hungry so don't make me wait any longer. Hurry up...please," Taehyung rushes Jungkook rather impatiently but when he just so remembers that the current Jungkook isn't the Jungkook he can order around like how he did in the past anymore he quickly adds the magic word at the end of his sentence to round his command off with some manners just in case.

Well, it's just the first day back with the BANGTAN gang and Taehyung is already feeling more superior and confident of himself hence the new-found bravery to command his husband like this. Taehyung is a gang leader after all and he has been living the thug life ever since he was a tender age of 10. Though it is true that Taehyung is appearing to have become more vulnerable and submissive recently due to the forced marriage with his ex-son muscle Kook, deep down in his heart Taehyung's true self is still like that of a king. In fact, within 5 short hours of reunion with BANGTAN, Taehyung has already started to revert back to how he was like in the past: straight-forward, spontaneous, nonchalant, arrogant, vulgar, and basically mother-fucking bossy but of course Taehyung also knows that he can't be too rude to the current Jungkook unless he wants to end up with a brutally torn ass so Taehyung skilfully coats his commands in an aegyo tone before topping it off with the "please" word hoping that he can get his point across without triggering his unpredictable husband.

Fortunately, Jungkook is far from triggered this time. Upon hearing Taehyung's cute yet demanding call, the younger man breaks out into a heartwarming smile instead. It has been quite awhile since Taehyung had dared to blurt out his wishes firmly in his face probably due to fear and for that Jungkook is beginning to feel a tad bit of regret and sadness. Secretly in his heart, Jungkook feels rather guilty for the way he had been treating his dad with the intense kidnapping and the forced marriage and all so when Taehyung finally reverts back to acting more comfortably around Jungkook, the younger man can't help but feel consoled and thankful for the change.

In less than 3 minutes, Jungkook finishes up his cooking and starts to bring the dishes out into the living room's dining table.
"I'm done. In a good mood baby?" Jungkook asks with a sweet smile as he pops into the living room with 2 freshly-cooked dishes on his hands. Chef Jungkook then professionally sets up the utensils and the rice bowls before scooting over to Taehyung to land a quick peck on his cheek.

"Fuck yeah. Let me tell you about my day."

This time Taehyung chooses neither to comment on what Jungkook is calling him by nor did he flinch a single bit at Jungkook's kiss to which Jungkook's heart abruptly skips a beat of victory.

Sometimes, it really is the smallest actions that people remember in their hearts.

Dinner commences as Taehyung begins to share his first day with BANGTAN enthusiastically with Jungkook. Jungkook eats quietly, listens, nods occasionally, throws in a few comments when needed and basically just smiles blissfully back at his energetic wife. It's been quite a while since Jungkook has seen Taehyung being so radiant and purposeful. To Jungkook, this side of Taehyung is too inspiring and beautiful. Jungkook doesn't even mind when Taehyung starts to shamelessly brag about how BANGTAN has expanded to more than 300 members within this 5 years under his leadership. To Jungkook, Taehyung's contented and passionate eyes are just like rare diamonds in the sky and in this moment Jungkook realizes that he is willing to give just anything to make Taehyung this happy forever.

Thank you hyungs, Jungkook silently thanks the BANGTAN family for bringing the life back into his wife just like how they did to Jungkook in the past when Jungkook had first entered the village. Jungkook also makes a mental note to bring Taehyung on a surprise honeymoon trip after his current mission. It's really not that hard to read into Taehyung's mind because although Taehyung doesn't explicitly say that he wants to go on a vacation, that part disappointed and part hopeful tone he uses while speaking about Europe just gives it all away.

***

After dinner, Taehyung suddenly whips out a file and dangles it in front of Jungkook's eyes with a mischievous smirk on his face when Jungkook is still busy with some dish-washing.

"Hey Kook, know what's inside?"

"What? And what's with that evil grin?"
"This is......none other than a compilation of your baby photos from Jin," Taehyung speaks as his grin gets wider.

Wait. Did Taehyung just say that those are his childhood baby foetus photos? Oh god no those things are meant to be obliterated from the face of Earth!

"Hey hey pass them to me," Jungkook instructs with a serious face currently burning in mortification. He vaguely recalls Jin occasionally snapping photos of him in the past when he least expected it. Who knows what kind of embarrassing baby photos there might be inside that file and no he can't let Taehyung view those photos because he's supposed to appear cool and badass in front of his wife! Jungkook doesn't want to be reminded of the past when they are still father and son! Jungkook wants to be Taehyung's badass mafia boss husband!

"Hell no am I passing this to you, I'm going to hang them all over the house!" Taehyung teases cheekily and runs away.

"Hey no you --- come back here!" Jungkook warns and breaks into a sprint.

Couple chasing for 10 minutes around the house before Taehyung finally gets caught.

Shortly after, a tickling torture session commences for Taehyung which ends up with both parties breaking out into endless bouts of laughter.

If Jin was here he would definitely snap a photo of this beautiful moment.

***

10 minutes later the two of them finally settle down on the comfortable sofa in the living room sitting side-by-side while still panting heavily with the pack of unseen photos in their hands.

"Kook believe me I really haven't seen these photos. I waited so we can view them together. This is going to be lit."
"Promise you won't laugh at me."

"But the whole point is to laugh at them together! Come on don't be a spoil sport."

"Fine. Laugh all you want but after this session I'm keeping the photos," Jungkook finally gives in and nudges for Taehyung to reveal the photos from the opaque file. In the process the younger man has his lips pressed into a thin line as he cups his hands around his ears in anticipation of what is to come. To be honest he is actually also curious to see his own photos. What kind of photos did Jin take?

On the other hand, Taehyung quickly reaches into the file and randomly fishes out one of the photos to flash it in front of both of them.

In this instant, both stare at the first photo with their mouths agape as they take some seconds registering it.

A collection of the past unfolds before their eyes.

***

Photo 1 - A traumatised yet extremely cute 7 year old Jungkook crying his eyes out in the embrace of Hoseok whose excited face was like "baby don't cry come to uncle hobi~". A sea of gangsters was crowding around Jungkook with happy faces. Taehyung wasn't in the photo but he was presumably where Jungkook was desperately looking at in the photo i.e. to his left. This was taken on the day Taehyung first brought Jungkook to the BANGTAN hideout zone to introduce his son to the whole gang. The date was also printed at the bottom of the photo. [September 2004]

"Oh god THIS," after 3 seconds, both recognizes the scene and blurts out the exact same words at the same time but with different facial expressions. Jungkook is literally burying his face into his hands thinking "just kill me already why am I allowing my wife to view all these uncool photos?!" while Taehyung's expressionless face cracks into a smile as he zones out a little.

"You were so cute Kook! What happened to you!"
"How is that cute I was crying my eyes out for goodness sake!"

"It's cute Kook. Anyway I've decided to keep this photo so don't try to hide it from me," Taehyung says possessively and places the photo in his pocket. They then move on to other photos. Tons of cute 7-year-old Jungkook photos come into view and each time Taehyung's heart just melts softer into mushy marshmallowness while Jungkook majorly cringes out at the side. The younger man sneaks disdainful peeks over at the overly-excited Taehyung who is currently making all sorts of cooing noises and remarks like "oh my son I've missed you", "your eyes were really watery and innocent when you're seven can't believe you turned out to become a monster", "this is so cute can you revert back to this please", and "god why can't you just stay like this forever!".

"You know you never once told me that I was cute in the past though," Jungkook recalls and blurts out with a blank face.

"Well, I didn't realize that you were cute till you become this "uncute". Look at you now: the exact opposite of cute."

Jungkook rolls his eyes and keeps silent. Taehyung smirks.

"Or do you want me to call you cute? Hey there cutie sweet cheeks~" Taehyung teases playfully with a mischievous smile while reaching over his hand to daringly squeeze onto Jungkook's right-side cheek.

"You know what? You are getting it tonight," Jungkook retaliates with a warning to which Taehyung immediately shuts up and move on with the stack.

The next photo they linger on is a peculiar one.

Photo 34 - A slightly confused and helpless 8-year-old Jungkook holding hands with Taehyung. Location was just outside Taehyung's house. In this photo, Jungkook was still much shorter than Taehyung so his hand was hanging in mid-air to clutch onto Taehyung's who was so much taller than he was. Also, Jungkook's haircut looked absolutely horrible because 2 days before this photo was taken Taehyung had pulled Jungkook aside only to savagely cut away his overgrown hair in an unplanned forced haircut. Jungkook was looking up with a pout at a very angry Taehyung who was seen to be screaming at the top of his voice into his phone. Jin took this photo presumably because it was an interesting scene: they were holding hands intimately but both looked troubled. [January 2005]
"I was wondering why you were screaming so scarily," Jungkook speaks.

"If my memory isn't failing me this was when the HWARANG gang kidnapped and threatened to throw one of our members into the sea and called for a negotiation. Thankfully we rescued that fella in time."

"Oh. I was really shocked at that point, couldn't really comprehend what you were saying because you just suddenly shouted crazily into the phone and I still remember this till now."

"Couldn't help it, desperate times call for desperate measures. On a side note that haircut really suits you. I was so proud of my hairdressing skills!"

"Shut up Taehyung I was so traumatised because of that! You were so mean to me and this haircut was so terrible I hated it."

"Are you serious? I thought it was a fantastic bowl cut!"

In this instant Jungkook face darkens as he reaches over to pinch Taehyung hard on his right butt cheek as an issue of warning to which Taehyung instantly jolts in pain and screams, "fuck c'mon this was already in the past!"

They move on and soon enough they find another photo to linger on.

Photo 47 - 8-year-old Jungkook holding a huge candy that Jin had just given him, smiling with euphoria into the camera. A big hearty smile with no visible worries on Jungkook's youthful and beautiful face. This shot was a close-up shot and one of the few non-candid photos. [August 2005]

Taehyung's heart immediately clenches. He remembers it, he remembers how he gradually grown to like Jungkook a little too much, how he started living each day to see Jungkook smiling innocently and heartily like this. He had wanted and still wants to protect this boy forever.

Taehyung stares in awe and nostalgia at the hypnotizing photo unable to utter a single word. He can't believe that time had passed by so quickly and that this little boy in the photo has grown up to become the man beside him.
"Finally a decent picture where I don't look helpless or confused. And seeing this really makes me miss Jin hyung so much, he used to give me so many candies," Jungkook reminisces with a heartwarming smile.

"I'm keeping this photo," Taehyung says firmly, tears starting to well up in his eyes.

They move on. A progression from helpless Jungkook to numb Jungkook can be seen via the photos as he progresses into the "tired-of-everything" teenage phase of life. Jungkook is also seen to smile less and less. In this instant Taehyung heart breaks into million pieces under the clear presentation of Jungkook's evolution in the photos but he doesn't say anything.

Sometimes feelings can't be put into words.

They finally stop at photo 61 which is a rare smiling-Jungkook photo.

Photo 61 - Jimin, Hoseok and Jungkook standing in a row dancing happily. They were all sweaty but having a fun time. [April 2006]

"Wow.....seeing this makes me miss the hyungs really much..." Jungkook says as he reminisces the past. It's his turn to have tears uncontrollably welling up in his eyes. He remembers how joyful he was when they taught him dancing or whenever they came over to spend some quality time with him. Life was so hard then, but around the hyungs he could momentarily forget all his troubles and just indulge in some fun and entertainment. This photo captured the most iconic moment of his childhood and that was the raw happiness he had shared with the BANGTAN hyungs.

"You guys were having so much fun when dancing. I've always wanted to join in but honestly I was scared that I'll look like an idiot," Taehyung admits with a sheepish grin.

"Really?! I thought that you didn't like dancing. Okay I've decided, we are going to dance together later and I'm going to teach you some moves. It'll be great if we share the same passion."

"I don't mind, but just saying I might be a little clumsy."

And with that they move on again. Tons of photos of Jungkook transiting from powerless and tired to powerful and determined Jungkook. They stop to observe photo 88 in detail.
Photo 88 - A close up shot of Jungkook in the midst of completing a pull-up. His face was etched with determination and his eyes cold with grit, staring firmly ahead focusing on his task seemingly unaware of the camera which had taken the photo from a side angle. He was wearing a black singlet and his youthful muscles were starting to become toned and shapely at a mere age of 9. He was overwhelming with boyish charms and looked more mature than an average 9-year-old kid. [June 2006]

"Wow Kook this shot was really good. It could've been an advertisement to some sports drink. Jin should totally become a professional photographer."

"Taehyung ah, you just need to admit that I'm good-looking," Jungkook says smugly leaning over to Taehyung with a mischievous smirk.

"Shameless," Taehyung murmurs before Jungkook snatches a quick kiss causing Taehyung to blush slightly.

They move on again before stopping at a particular photo 101.

Photo 101 - 10-year-old Jungkook was talking to a hot gangster noona 2 years older than him. While hot gangster noona was looking in awe at Jungkook, Jungkook looked absolutely disinterested. Hoseok and Jimin were seen cracking up at the back. Taehyung was smirking. [May 2007]

"What's this Kook I can't really remember......oh right she was one of GOT7 gang member's daughter and she actually had the guts to ask you for your number! We were so shaken that our Jungkook was all grown up and attracting women."

"God can't you guys tell that I just wanted to get out of that situation? And godammit you guys did nothing to help and just stood there to watch a good show on purpose!"

"Heh. Sorry we found it amusing and wanted to see how you'll resolve it yourself. Honestly she was good-looking and we were wondering why you rejected her in the end. Hell, should have totally foreseen that you were gay."

Jungkook shrugs upon hearing that.
"Actually I don't consider myself totally gay. I actually do find some girls pretty attractive just that I'm not interested in them," Jungkook says nonchalantly.

Upon hearing Jungkook's words, Taehyung widens his eyes in disbelief.

"What?! Really?! You are bisexual?! You are capable of liking girls?!

"I'm not sure, though I do know that I don't get hard easily when looking at girls."

Taehyung's shocked face converts back into a deadpan one.

"Then that means you're a pure gay you idiot."

"Hmm. Though I can't get hard when looking at any guy either because honestly my dick only gets hard when I see you baby, isn't that more than enough," Jungkook says in a cheeky tone.

Well, a loyal Jung cock is a good cock isn't it?

Upon hearing that, Taehyung majorly cringes, shakes his head, sighs and moves on to the next photo. Can that brutal dragon of a horny jungcock be this loyal? Taehyung highly doubts it but secretly loves what Jungkook had just said in the most creepy way possible and as they sieve through the many photos, young Jungkook could be seen growing up rapidly and becoming physically fitter and stronger. His gazes were like that of a hawk's eyes: focused and intense. Sometimes he would catch Jin snapping his photo and would look into the camera just in time. He wouldn't smile at all and would just look straight up into the camera as if to say "gotcha" and from his eyes he told a different story each time.

It takes them awhile to reach an eventful photo.

Photo 134 - Jungkook was crying tears of joy while being crowdsurfed around the BANGTAN hideout zone. That was the day 11-year-old Jungkook had successfully beaten Jimin and Hoseok in two sparring battles to earn himself a place as BANGTAN's official member. [March 2008]

"Man... that was the happiest day of my life," Kook beams in pride as he remembers that heartfelt
"Yeah. I was so happy and proud of you when you won too, but honestly I was just really scared. I was afraid you'll get hurt."

Upon hearing Taehyung's words, Jungkook stuns there for a few seconds. Those were the words he had wanted to hear coming out of Taehyung's mouth 9 years ago. Taehyung would never in a million years say words like this to him as his dad in the past. Jungkook's heart starts to pang in mixed emotions. Oh god why is this photo viewing session getting so emotional.

They move on and stop again at the 154th photo.

Photo 154 - 12-year-old Jungkook piggy-backing a hurt Taehyung after one of the gang fights and looked like he was nagging at Taehyung. At the age of 12, Jungkook was only half a head shorter than Taehyung and was already an extremely experienced fighter. While Jungkook was holding Taehyung with a worried look, Taehyung was just lying comfortably on Jungkook with a "it's great to have someone to lean on hell I don't even care if he's nagging at me" look. [July 2009]

It was an interesting scene because of the role reversal: Jungkook actually looked more like the parent in this photo, reprimanding Taehyung for not taking good care of himself while Taehyung just silently accepted Jungkook's gentle nagging. This photo immediately causes Jungkook's heart to swell in pride. He is proud that on many occasions he had managed to protect Taehyung. Taehyung had saved him twice when he was almost killed and protecting his savior was Jungkook's biggest honor and it still is till today. Besides, Taehyung just looked too cute lying comfortably on his back like that. Too bad he wasn't able to see his dad at that point in time because he was busy piggy-backing and nagging at him. This photo clearly demonstrates his inner wish to protect and love Taehyung and hell he really loves this one.

"This is my favorite photo till now, I'm keeping this one!" Jungkook exclaims and instantly grabs the photo over with a wide grin.

They move on and linger at photo 163.

Photo 163 - Jungkook silently reading an encyclopedia looking extremely focused in thought. [November 2009]

"Wow I can never sit down and read books like that. You're amazing," Taehyung gawks in
wonderment. His husband sure was smart and resourceful from a young age. Having had recently sat through a painful study period to learn complicated mafia matters, Taehyung really finds it amazing that Jungkook could just voluntarily sit himself down to study.

"Thank you. I'm actually honoured because you rarely praise me."

"You deserve it for this one."

Unknowingly, they are already near the end and there are few remaining photos left. They stop at the 174th photo.

Photo 174 - Jungkook had fallen asleep in BANGTAN's hideout zone after an emergency meeting. Taehyung was putting a blanket on the unconscious Jungkook. [March 2010]

This time it's Jungkook's turn to melt into a pile of marshmallow softness. Taehyung stares at this photo with a blank face.

"Awwww Taehyung that's so sweet I feel the love~" Jungkook suddenly leeches onto Taehyung landing many kisses on his wife's cheeks.

"God stob it this is just a simple action oh god why do Jin have to take awkward photos like this urgh."

The next one they stop at is a particularly suggestive photo.

Photo 183 - Both Taehyung and Jungkook were sitting at a bench resting during one of the rounds with towels sling around their necks. It was summer and the sun was scorching, making the photo glow in all that heavy sun rays. Taehyung was furiously gulping down a bottle of water and Jungkook was looking over at Taehyung dreamily. He looked like he wanted to eat Taehyung alive. [June, 2011]

"Shit!" both Taehyung and Jungkook look at each other and exclaim in harmony. Jungkook's facial expression was hard to miss in this photo and Jin must have noticed something. Taehyung face palms. How old was Jungkook then? Taehyung checks the date again. 2011 so Jungkook was like...13?!
"Do you think that maybe Jin knows? Shit this photo is really suggestive..." Jungkook asks in concern.

"With this photo I think there's a high chance he knows something. Oh god how am I suppose to act around Jin now. And seriously since when did you start having feelings for me?!

"Like...when I was 12 and a half?" Jungkook confesses carefully with an apologetic grin.

Taehyung face palms again innately. So for 2 and a half years he was sleeping together in the same bed with this wolf who probably took advantage of his ignorance.

"You're too hot Taehyung I tried stopping my thoughts but I really can't."

"Oh wow that's nice to know."

"Sorry."

Both want this photo to be obliterated from the surface of Earth.

Before they know it, they have come to the last photo.

Photo 199 - It had started snowing when the BANGTAN members were just leaving the hideout zone for their daily rounds in the evening. Taehyung and Jungkook were throwing snowballs at each other in this photo. Both were smiling like kids. 15-year-old Jungkook was already almost the same height as Taehyung but looked a lot younger and was still slightly smaller in size than Taehyung. That was also the exact day when Jungkook left Taehyung i.e. within less than 24 hours after this photo was taken. This was also their last photo together and at that point in time they looked more like brothers rather than father and son. It was also the most beautiful photo of the pile with the snow, warm evening lights and their smiles. [December 2012]

Upon seeing this photo, Taehyung stuns for a moment and then without warning, tears start to flow out from his eyes like an open tap. Within the next minute he is already silently sobbing. Honestly he had never gotten to resolve the grief and pain he had felt when Jungkook had abruptly left him that fateful day. To be suddenly reminded of this traumatic event is like having a knife cut deep into a
healing wound again and Taehyung suddenly finds himself surging in a sea of overwhelming emotions.

"Oh no why are you crying? We are supposed to laugh at all these together remember?" Jungkook is immediately concerned when he notices Taehyung's tears. He pulls Taehyung tightly into his chest.

3 minutes of silent sobbing as Taehyung struggles to find words.

"Sorry I just... I just can't help it...the day when you left... all I wanted was a photo like this to remember you...... I thought I've lost you forever...I've regretted not once telling you that I loved you......I had never felt this much pain before in my life... you were my only family and I thought I lost you......I really.... I really missed you so so much...."

That statement. That statement Taehyung just said. Jungkook's heart instantly breaks into a thousand pieces.

The past 30 minutes they have been browsing through all of Jungkook's photos together and it is as if they have relived his childhood and their 8 years together again. It is like seeing their lives flash past right in front of their eyes. Taehyung suddenly realizes how terrible he was in the past. There were so many moments in those 8 years that he had taken for granted and there were so many moments in those 8 years that he could've treated Jungkook better. He didn't give Jungkook much of a childhood and most of the happy moments in Jungkook's life had seemed to be with Jimin, Hoseok and Jin. Of the near 200 photos Jin collected of Jungkook, Jungkook was smiling in less than 10% of them.

"I could've watched fireflies with you...I could've brought you out to the movies.... I could've at least flied a motherfucking kite with you..." Taehyung murmurs with tears through his hiccups, his sobs getting more and more vigorous every passing second.

"It's okay baby, you didn't have all that when you were a child too. We can still do all those things together now, we can watch fireflies at night by the field, we can go to tons of movies, we can go kite flying on windy days too I promise..." Jungkook whispers gently into Taehyung ears as he sends endless kisses to Taehyung's temple to soothe him.

"Don't leave me again....I can't live without you...don't disappear again...."

"Hey I'm not going anywhere. I'm here, I'm right here with you."
Time never waits for people. It just passes by silently and mercilessly without warning. Many people live life recklessly and forget to appreciate the present moment and then years down the road they look back only to regret certain choices they've made in the past. They have neglected the present moment, neglected the fact that one day the present will become the past and that the past can never be changed. It becomes history and an unchanging part of their identity. For Taehyung and Jungkook, these unchanging memories were brilliantly captured in snapshots by Jin.

Without these photos, they could've never been able to undergo the reflection they are currently going through right now.

While Jungkook and Taehyung can never change the past again, they will always have the power to change the present and future.

They still have the rest of their lives ahead of them to write good memories.

Jungkook allows Taehyung to sob in his chest. After around 10 minutes, Taehyung starts to break into a giggle. He slaps his hand on his forehead and says, "oh god what is wrong with me."

"Feeling better?"

"Yeap I just needed some release. I'm good now.""Sure?"

"Yeah."

"Okay."

They stare at each other deeply for a minute before Taehyung reaches over and crashes his lips onto Jungkook.

“All photographs are memento mori. To take a photograph is to participate in another person’s (or
thing’s) mortality, vulnerability, mutability. Precisely by slicing out this moment and freezing it, all photographs testify to time’s relentless melt.” --- Susan Sontag

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don’t have an account/are on incognito mode?

Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden__tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don't forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
Actually the first fully consensual sex in the story. Yeah I know it's fucked up but let's just be happy that the couple is finally happy okay? This is also the last chapter of season 1. Enjoy reading~

“There’s a huge difference in sex and making love. We have sex with someone who can satisfy us physically, but we make love to someone who can satisfy us soulfully and eternally. Once you realize the fine-line between making love and having sex, you will understand the meaning of life. Life isn’t only about survival, it’s about living and so is making love. We have sex to satisfy our lust and hunger, which is nothing, but survival, but we make love to feed our soul and our mind, to fill a void that is there since a long time, that longs for a partner and that needs someone whom we want to spend the next morning with.

When you have sex just for physical pleasure, you are ashamed and guilty at one point of life or another, but when you make love to someone who means everything to you, you are always proud of it. Never in life, not even a single time, you regret that time and the moments spent with that person. You will always rejoice it and remember it with equal passion and joy.” — Mehek Bassi

***

Location: "The Mafia Origin" Secret Underground Headquarters Central Mansion

Date & Time: 2nd October 2017 9:49PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, 1 month 1 day into marriage]

***

Jungkook and Taehyung make love for the first time today.

It starts from the sofa when Taehyung leans in to deliver Jungkook a kiss. It is indeed a special kiss different from any of the ones they have shared together in the recent past. It is soft, endearing and tender like the swaying dandelions in the breezy California grasslands yet it is also an impactful testament and statement of Taehyung’s profound emotions, attachment and undying passion for the love of his life.

After all this time, his love for Jungkook has never faded. It's hidden deep within but it is always there. The presence of these photos has evoked the deep feelings he had been burying for Jungkook and suddenly everything becomes so crystal clear.
Jungkook is his only family and will always be his only family. Yes, he may have started out loving Jungkook as a son, but as Jungkook grew it is obvious that through the many photos reflecting the passing of time that the younger man had gradually grown into a brother, a friend, a protector whom he could trust and lean on on many occasions.

They call themselves father and son out of convenience for so many years but what they have between them is much more than that definition.

They are everything to each other, *everything*. It hurts so much for the both of them when Jungkook had vanished without a trace for 5 years but now he is back again and they are married.

Taehyung had forced Jungkook to be his son 13 years ago, and a month ago Jungkook forced Taehyung to become his spouse. What started out as an accident becomes a never-ending entanglement of both their fates. What started out as Taehyung's way of loving Jungkook inevitably becomes the way Jungkook loves Taehyung back too.

A never-ending cycle of mutual destruction and mutual love.

Love. A sense of attachment that men would never in a thousand years verbalize to their friends, brothers and sons. Will Taehyung ever know that his love for Jungkook had been incredibly defective in the past? Maybe he will come to realize a speck of it like what he was experiencing just a few moments ago upon viewing those nostalgic photos and that realization was capable of bringing tears to his eyes, but he will never be able to understand the true magnitude of his past actions.

A love that was defective and precisely because it was defective, Jungkook found it hard to forget and sometimes the most painful things are the ones that stick in people for the longest of time.

A love so defective yet it was and still is so strong, raw and powerful. Their love has changed from that between a father and a son to that between two brothers and then when Jungkook gradually matured into a teenager they became friends and gang mates and now they are finally lovers.

Life is simply amazing and unpredictable isn't it? Who would've known that 13 years ago when they've found each other on the cold midnight streets that they would have become each other's soulmates?

Yes, if there needs to be a word to define their timeless relationship, it'll have to be soulmates.
They are soulmates intertwined in fate: they met each other, they saved each other, they broke each other and they loved each other and they will always, always complete each other.

Jungkook widens his eyes the instant their lips connect. After a momentary shock due to Taehyung's unexpected spontaneity, he closes his eyes, holds onto Taehyung and kisses back like it is the most natural thing to do in the world. Instead of dominating over Taehyung like he would in the past, Jungkook instead allows Taehyung to lead the kiss this time.

On the other hand, Taehyung notices how kissable Jungkook's lips are for the first time. They are smooth and soft like a gummy sweet and Taehyung can't believe that they are the same pair of lips that used to violate him. The current Jungkook is much more loving and endearing compared to the one that had kidnapped and forced him into this marriage and upon realization of the change Taehyung can't help but smile in relief.

People always change for the ones they truly love. They change for the better so that they can love their loved ones better.

In the process of the loving kiss, Jungkook notices how skilful Taehyung is when it comes to kissing and he is abruptly reminded of the fact that while Taehyung is his first, he is far from being Taehyung's first for Taehyung had been with hundreds of women before him and had probably kissed all those women like this before but for some reason Jungkook can't feel any anger or aggression at that triggering thought this time.

Who doesn't have a past right? He accepts and respects Taehyung for all that he has been through and all that he is now. While Jungkook is feeling a tad bit jealous, he also knows that Taehyung is by his side now and that's all that matters. First doesn't really matter now, forever is the one that does.

The kiss gradually changes from that of a serious and passionate one to that of a playful one. They both just can't stop smiling during the whole duration. They kiss, pull away, look into each other's eyes, giggle and then lean in to kiss each other again. Jungkook holds onto Taehyung's waist and time to time he will rub his hands up and down Taehyung's back, enjoying the sensation that Taehyung's skin is leaving on his palms while Taehyung holds onto Jungkook's face and gently massages his jaws.

"You're a great kisser," Jungkook whispers one time when they pull away. Their faces are still so close that they can feel each other's breath on them.
"Of course I am," Taehyung accepts the compliment with a smug expression before adding,"or am I supposed to say that you're a great kisser too hmm?"

"Nah, I'm not fishing for compliments this time," Jungkook smirks at the reference to the elevator sex episode. Taehyung sure knows how to tease him at the correct moments.

"Kook you still have so much to learn. Let daddy teach you how to kiss," Taehyung says jokingly before the both of them instantly crack out laughing. The hand that is rubbing circles on Taehyung's lower back reaches down to deliver a light spank onto Taehyung's ass cheek causing Taehyung to squirm a little. Jungkook then pulls Taehyung's entire weight onto him and hugs Taehyung tightly in his embrace.

They then hug and kiss for another 20 minutes again in close proximity and through the entire process they kept smiling. They really can't stop smiling because there really isn't many moments in their life that can compare to the bliss they are feeling right now: to hold each other in their arms and just kiss like no one else is looking without any more internal restraints and doubts.

They are both free, finally. The love they have for each other have set them free.

After what seems like an eternity, Jungkook decides to take things to the bedroom. He lifts Taehyung up by the waist and hauls his entire body up. Taehyung immediately wraps his legs around Jungkook's waist and slings his arms around Jungkook's neck cooperatively. Jungkook is really strong now so carrying Taehyung like this is almost effortless on his part. Holding his koala wife in his embrace, Jungkook starts walking slowly but steadily towards the bedroom.

In the 2 minutes walk to the bedroom, Taehyung and Jungkook starts by rubbing their noses affectionately but somehow when they reach the bedroom they are already hitting their noses like woodpeckers onto each other's faces playfully and laughing fondly at each other like a pair of lovebirds. Also, upon seeing both of Jungkook's hands being occupied at supporting him, Taehyung decides to tease Jungkook by lowering his left hand to pinch lightly onto Jungkook's left nipple causing Jungkook's eyes to widen slightly in surprise. Upon seeing a response he likes, Taehyung then sticks out his tongue with a "hah you can't do anything to me now" look before Jungkook suddenly crashes his mouth on to Taehyung and starts to suck onto Taehyung's lips. Hell, his wife is so adorably playful and he loves this side of him to pieces. Previously when Taehyung is being his dad he will never show this childlike and playful side of himself and this side of him is just so attractive and mesmerizing to Jungkook.

Once they reach the bed, they kiss and flirt again for a solid 10 minutes before Jungkook pulls away to cup his mouth onto Taehyung's neck, nipping on it tenderly. His hands are holding onto Taehyung's upper arms trapping them firmly in place because he knows that Taehyung can barely stay still whenever he kisses him somewhere sensitive. Soft moans escape Taehyung's mouth as he
allows Jungkook to savour him everywhere on his neck and those sounds are like music to Jungkook's ears. After some time, the younger man's mouth trails down towards Taehyung's collarbone eliciting all sorts of inappropriate sounds from his beloved wife in the process. Also, something hard to ignore comes to Jungkook's attention. In fact, Jungkook just realizes that there are many little moles on Taehyung's body.

Why didn't I notice this earlier? Jungkook thinks to himself and his heart clenches slightly. There is one mole right here on Taehyung's collarbone where he is kissing now, there is another one on Taehyung's neck that he had just kissed and as he pulls away and looks up he realizes that there are also many tiny moles on Taehyung's face. Why didn't he notice it previously? They've had sex so many times before already.

The realization of his neglect to properly know Taehyung hits Jungkook right smack in his heart. He stuns for a little while.

"What's wrong with you suddenly?" Taehyung asks when Jungkook suddenly stops and look at him like that to which Jungkook finally snaps out from his daze.

"Nothing, it just occurred to me that you have many moles in your body. I've never noticed them."

"Oh yes I do have many of them," Taehyung explains and suddenly reaches over to his exposed right upper arm, pinches a piece of it and say, "see the two moles here? When I pinch it like that it becomes an elephant!"

Upon hearing that, Jungkook instantly cracks into a surprised smile at his wife's imaginative mind.

"If you see it like that, then I too have an elephant on my body," Jungkook reveals and shows the "elephant" on his thighs to Taehyung to which the both of them start cracking up wildly again. (If you don't know what I am talking about, watch this) They are clearly on a roll talking to each other about each other and honestly, they've never really taken any time to properly know each other in the past.

There is so much to learn about each other and they are enjoying these precious moments of sharing so much.

"Shall we see if there are more moles on the other parts of our bodies now?" Jungkook says suggestively with a smirk as he starts to pull onto Taehyung's shirt. Taehyung also impatiently tugs
onto Jungkook's shirt and within seconds they are both completely naked to which they proceed to crash their bare bodies together hugging, kissing and grinding onto the other party affectionately.

"Lie down," Taehyung instructs abruptly after some time. It is a surprise to Jungkook because Taehyung has never been the one commanding in bed so Jungkook doesn't exactly know how to react at his sudden pro-activeness. The younger man raises his eyebrow, not entirely sure what his wife wants to do but he follows what he is told.

"Okay baby easy, anything you say," Jungkook says with a cheeky grin before laying still on the bed.

Once Jungkook is lying on his back comfortably, Taehyung swiftly climbs on top of Jungkook and while remaining eye contact with the younger man he suddenly swoops down to swallow half of Jungkook's cock into his mouth.

"Mmmmm!" Jungkook jolts in surprise at the sudden sensation and he sees Taehyung’s eyes light up at his response. Taehyung is a man too and he knows exactly what makes a man feels good. While gently rubbing Jungkook's balls in one hand, Taehyung starts to suck onto Jungkook's dick sensually, allowing his tongue to play with the sensitive tip before bobbing his head up and down the length. Though he is unable to fit all of Jungkook's shaft into his mouth, he tries his best, swallowing Jungkook’s length all the way down till it hits the back of his throat. The older man gags slightly and reflexive tears form in his eyes but he takes it well. Occasionally Taehyung will take a break to catch some breath, pulling his mouth away only to kiss and nip on Jungkook's pelvic area in a gentle fashion.

Throughout the whole process, Taehyung manages to make eye contact with Jungkook time to time and in no more than a few minutes, Jungkook is already choking on his breath from the wonderful sensation and more so, at the sight of his breathtaking spouse who is currently giving him that sensation. He lets out low and deep moans as his torso and neck starts to turn red from the explosive pleasure he is feeling.

"It's good right?” Taehyung asks and smiles up with a smirk at Jungkook. He licks his lips playfully and he knows he did a good job from Jungkook's response. He then proceeds to blow air at Jungkook's cock tip before taking the dick down into his throat again.

"God Taehyung... this is so good... I can come just by looking at you sucking on me like this..." Jungkook says through rigged breathing and with dilated eyes he looks down at his beautiful wife. His dick is already throbbing intensely in precum and thick veins start to pop out dangerously on his rod. Amidst the intense pleasure he is feeling, Jungkook reaches his hand down to caress Taehyung's hair softly as if to encourage and motivate him in the process.
The moment Taehyung starts to do a new trick by flicking his tongue in circles around Jungkook's tip, Jungkook completely loses it.

"Fuck!" Jungkook curses, flips up and pushes Taehyung onto the bed in which Taehyung let out a surprised gasp. The younger man then latches on top of Taehyung and proceeds to kiss Taehyung hotly, tasting his own precum in Taehyung's mouth.

They kiss for another 10 minutes but this time with more passion as compared to the playful one in the living room earlier. A whole lot of grinding is involved and in the process both let out deep growls of pleasure. After the 10 minutes, Jungkook's dick is back into Taehyung's mouth but this time Jungkook is thrusting into Taehyung's mouth rough enough for Taehyung to gag slightly but not too rough to cause him to pull away. Saliva drools out of Taehyung's mouth and some tears are seen to spring out from the sides of his eyes but Taehyung rubs his hand on Jungkook's hips to express that he is welcoming the roughness.

Jungkook pulls out for Taehyung to catch his breath after a while.

"Now it's your turn baby," Jungkook says and before Taehyung can react, he grabs onto the inner side of Taehyung's thighs and bends them over eliciting a short yelp from Taehyung who is tensing up slightly. As Jungkook pushes Taehyung's knees against Taehyung's chest, Taehyung's tiny little hole is lifted and exposed to which he proceeds by blowing air into Taehyung's pinkish hole causing Taehyung to squirm and giggle a little.

"The fuck are you doing? Stop it," Taehyung asks after an amused giggle, pushing at Jungkook's shoulders slightly. Well, the older man doesn't know that his entrance is currently twitching obscenely in anticipation when it feels Jungkook's wet and hot breath against it.

Upon hearing that, Jungkook just shrugs before pushing his tongue out and presses it hard onto Taehyung's entrance catching Taehyung by surprise.

The older man moans and jolts in surprise at the sudden intense pleasure. This is the first time Jungkook is giving him oral and hell, he doesn't know that it will feel so good.

Jungkook chuckles at Taehyung's cute response. He then holds Taehyung by the legs firmly to stop Taehyung from squirming away before proceeding to properly eat Taehyung out. All sorts of inappropriate slurping sounds fill the air and at this moment Taehyung is already moaning so lewdly and squirming so intensely that his veins are starting to pop out from his neck.
"You can't stop moving around hmm?" Jungkook asks cheekily.

"Push that tongue in you motherfucker," Taehyung murmurs through rapid hiccups as he looks down at Jungkook with half-lidded eyes. This is too amazing and he needs more.

Jungkook smirks upon hearing Taehyung's request. He just loves to push Taehyung to the brink of insanity like this. It is an interesting sight for him because Taehyung is currently grabbing onto his hair trying to yank his head away but his mouth is demanding for the exact opposite. Jungkook decides to listen to what Taehyung is telling him to do verbally in which he starts pushing his tongue through the tight ring of muscles into Taehyung's warm tight hole, twirling it inside and pressing it against Taehyung's tight inner walls.

"Uhhh!" Taehyung let out a short gasp as his body muscles instantly tenses up including the hardening rod between his legs.

At this point in time Jungkook just can't stop chuckling at Taehyung's response. Taehyung has always been extremely vocal in bed which to Jungkook is amusing yet endearing at the same time. He hasn't even touched Taehyung's cock and he is already a goner like how he is right now. Hmmm... let's see what will happen when I kiss you right there, Jungkook thinks mischievously to himself. He wants to see how his wife will react when he sucks tightly onto his sexual organ so upon that thought Jungkook swiftly pulls away from Taehyung's wet hole, lands two rapid kiss on Taehyung's unaware cock before swallowing it whole into his mouth to which Taehyung jolts explosively in surprise.

"Ah! You motherfucking son of a bitch!" Taehyung screams a chunk of profanity as usual before letting out rapid succession of moans not to mention that he currently looks like he's going to concuss right there and then from the intense pleasure he is feeling. Taehyung tries to push Jungkook's head away but then five seconds later he is holding onto Jungkook's head firmly in place while thrusting his hips into the younger's mouth uncontrollably like a lustful tiger and then five seconds later tries to squirm away again like a helpless kitten. Jungkook tries not to burst out laughing at the duality and continues on the blowjob. He doesn't even care when he gags slightly. This is too cute, he needs to bring it up tomorrow during breakfast and laugh at Taehyung about this.

After some time, Taehyung finally regains control of some of his senses. He looks down and sees his own cock perpetuating into Jungkook's red lips. While his cock is not as impressive in size as compared to Jungkook's, he is still relatively well-endowed compared to the average Asian so it's definitely not an easy feat for anyone including Jungkook to swallow his cock whole. His eyes meet with Jungkook's slightly tearing up eyes and he suddenly feels like something is not right. No, Kook
is too precious to gag on my cock oh god he is not even 21 yet, Taehyung thinks in deep concern to himself. While Taehyung is definitely not a parent of Jungkook anymore, something about Jungkook still triggers protective instincts in him especially when Jungkook looks up at him with watery eyes like that. No, just no.

"Okay that's enough you can fuck me now while you're still hard," Taehyung tells Jungkook to cut it out while still panting heavily from the blowjob.

Jungkook pulls away and looks at Taehyung with innocent eyes. *Blink blink, blink blink.*

"No don't look at me like this. Fuck me now."

Jungkook breaks into a wolfish smirk.

"What's the magic word, daddy?"

"Don't daddy me now I'm warning you."

"Magic. Word."

"..."

"Or I'm leaving you like this."

"Fuck you."

"I'm seriously going to leave if you don't ---"

"Okay fine *please* fuck me."

Jungkook chuckles again in happiness.
"As you wish daddy."

With that, Jungkook grabs onto some lube by the bed's side-drawer and prepares Taehyung for a few minutes. Taehyung winces in pain but takes it well. In fact, these few days Taehyung has learnt how to properly relax so the preparation process doesn't take as long as the first few times.

"Ready?" Jungkook positions his cock at Taehyung's dripping entrance. Currently he is above Taehyung now in the bed while Taehyung is lying on his back facing him in the classic missionary position.

"Yeah," Taehyung says in acknowledgement as he looks down at full attention as Jungkook inserts his cock in.

The insertion process is quiet as both hold on to their breaths. Halfway in Taehyung starts to pant heavily while trying to push Jungkook's hips away and Jungkook immediately notices. He sends soothing kisses onto Taehyung's chest but otherwise pushes Taehyung's hands away.

"You can take it, relax a little," Jungkook whispers gently. He then holds onto Taehyung's hips before slowly pushing all his way in to which Taehyung instantly lets out a long moan of part pain and part pleasure when he feels himself being slowly filled to the brim by Jungkook. Once all the way in, Jungkook crashes his lips onto Taehyung in a hot kiss and lowers his entire torso down to Taehyung, hugging him in a tight embrace while his entire length is still inside Taehyung before thrusting slowly but steadily into Taehyung while still kissing him. He starts with shallow and slow thrusts before accelerating faster and faster, causing Taehyung to hiccup and throw his head back from the intense sensations he is feeling now. In the process Jungkook lands soothing kisses onto Taehyung's lips because he can feel Taehyung writhing in some discomfort and he can also see tears starting to form in Taehyung's eyes.

"You okay?" Jungkook asks to check.

"Yeah...don't stop moving..." Taehyung grits his teeth to speak between gasps.

Upon hearing Taehyung's words, Jungkook hugs the man beneath him even tighter in his arms such that there is not a single bit of space between both their torsos. He then proceeds to thrust his lower region into Taehyung furiously.
The sound of skin slapping against skin fills the air and after awhile Jungkook starts to pant heavily from the intense pleasure he is feeling as well. It feels so good to be inside Taehyung, it feels so good to be wrapped so tightly by his beloved spouse and he wants Taehyung to feel the same way too. Jungkook wants to reduce Taehyung's pain and give him the most pleasure out of the sex they are having now. In lieu of that thought, Jungkook starts to thrust in at different angles in search for Taehyung's prostate and finally after some moments Taehyung forcefully bucks his hips and lets out a short and powerful gasp. His eyes widen in shock but soon melts into an eye-roll from the intense pleasure he is feeling and Jungkook knows in that instant that he has found Taehyung's sweet spot. He hastily grabs onto Taehyung's hips and fucks hard onto the bundle of nerves at the same angle into Taehyung.

Slam! Slam! Slam! Slam! Jungkook delivers the fast and hard thrusts, his cock digging deep into Taehyung's hole and hitting directly onto Taehyung's prostate each and every time.

This time Taehyung is overwhelmed by an intense orgasmic shock.

Surprisingly however, Taehyung doesn't make a single sound. Instead, his mouth is wide agape in a silent scream and his eyes start to roll uncontrollably to the back of his head. His brows are furrowed and he permanently looks like he is going to cry but he just freezes there in a contorted face. Along with his unrelaxed face, Taehyung's whole body is also tensed-up as Jungkook fucks into him so fast and good not allowing him to catch his breath in the whole process. In this moment the whole bed is shaking vigorously from Jungkook's crazily impactful thrusts and after some time it start to creak dangerously as if it might break any moment. Taehyung who is taking all that under Jungkook suddenly doesn't know where to put his spazzing hand so he curls it up into a fist and starts hitting Jungkook on the chest and then five seconds later starts biting onto his knuckles and then five seconds later uses his hand to cover his eyes and then at some point he reaches his hand up to grab onto Jungkook's chest and then after that curl it into a fist only to bite at his knuckles again. In short, Taehyung’s actions don't make any sense anymore because he is currently being fucked senseless.

"Mmmm....mmmm..." Jungkook lets out growls of pleasure as he enjoys the pleasurable sensation coursing from his lower regions to the rest of his body but to him what is more beautiful right now is the orgasmic look on Taehyung's face and Taehyung's priceless bodily reactions from his uncontrollable senseless fidgeting to how he is hitting against his chest time to time during the entire process.

After some time, Jungkook feels an explosive sensation pooling up in his sexual organ as if Taehyung’s insides are like a vacuum sucking him dry.

"I'm going to cum!" Jungkook is the one that screams this time. He sends a few hard and deep thrusts into Taehyung and finally releases his load explosively into the older man.
"Urgh!" Taehyung finally finds his voice back and lets out a hard scream when he feels his hole being filled with Jungkook's essence. He climaxes too two seconds later and both of them tense up in the orgasmic shock before softening and relaxing in post-orgasm at the same time. They pant together in harmony. After a while, Jungkook collapses on top of Taehyung and once again starts to kiss him passionately.

5 minutes of kissing.

"Was it good?" Jungkook breaks the silence after Taehyung has calmed down from the sex.

"Hmmm...can be improved. I'd grade it about 7/10 I guess."

Both crack into wild laughter. Sometimes it really is hard to tell if they are just fuck buddies or lovers. The way they interact is rather peculiar, light-hearted even and even during such times they rather not speak about anything too emotional or deep.

This is just the way they are. This is just the way they have been interacting all through the past 13 years. There is a familiar and safe feeling in such an atmosphere but sometimes they get a little lonely without knowing it themselves.

2 minutes later Jungkook starts to suck onto a newly-discovered mole on Taehyung's ear.

"14," Jungkook counts the 14th mole he has seen on Taehyung and registers it into his mental map of Taehyung's body. The younger man who has been observing Taehyung's ear up close also notices in surprise that Taehyung actually has three ear holes instead of two. The older man usually wears only two studs per ear so Jungkook never noticed this little extra information about Taehyung. Well, everything learnt about Taehyung is precious and needs to be remembered so Jungkook makes a mental note on that fact too.

"By the way does Jin have your childhood photos too?" Jungkook asks curiously while holding Taehyung's ear closely to observe it. Currently he is like a scientist observing a rare specimen and yes, Jungkook has always been an extremely focused boy be it in terms of managing the mafia, solving organisation issues, cooking delicious dinner or just you know, simply observing something about Taehyung like what he is doing now.

"I think he does. He has been taking photos from the week we were thrown out of the
orphanage together with Jimin and Hoseok. We were out on the streets one day and a young and well-dressed boy our age took a photo of Jin. They talked a little and it ended up with the kid gifting Jin the camera and leaving after that with the adult he was with. Strangely I still remember this incident as if it was something important."

"Great! Can we look through your childhood photos together too?" Jungkook asks hopefully in excitement. Jungkook has spent most of his childhood with Taehyung but unfortunately he is born later than Taehyung so he didn't have a chance to partake in Taehyung's childhood. There is so much he has yet to discover about Taehyung and he will kill to know everything and anything about Taehyung.

"Sure, I'll tell Jin to send them over."

"Yes!" Jungkook exclaims in happiness, releases Taehyung's ear from his touch and pulls Taehyung into a tight embrace. Taehyung welcomes the hug but also pouts at the sudden emptiness in his ear.

"Actually my ears are my erogenous zone, suck it more," Taehyung reveals.

Upon hearing that, Jungkook stuns for two seconds. He makes another mental note on the new fact before proceeding to attack and violently suck on Taehyung's ear to which he feels Taehyung melt into a marshmallow piece of softness in his embrace again. Taehyung's blank face also begins to melt into a blissful expression.

"Is this improving my grade to at least 8/10?" Jungkook asks innocently and continues to suck diligently.

10 seconds of soft moaning by Taehyung.

"Mmm maybe..." Taehyung is smiling in pleasure and then after that turns his head around to land a soft but endearing kiss onto Jungkook's cheek.

"Kook, I love you," Taehyung says sincerely, his eyes are tired from the sex but glistening brightly and proudly.

""
Did Taehyung just say what he just said? Jungkook cannot believe his ears. He has waited for an eternity for Taehyung to openly love him back. All of him from his inner child to the man he is now, have craved and still is craving for all of Taehyung's love.

"I...I love you too," Jungkook replies, tears uncontrollably falling from his face.

They hug and kiss for the entire night as they engage in the conversations they have never had with each other in the past. They talk and talk and talk and each time they learn something brand new about each other they rejoice and celebrate it. Then when the clock strikes 3 they whisper goodnight and fall asleep with their hearts so full that they could explode. Their lives haven't been the best and the pain they have accumulated in their hearts cannot be simply cured overnight. In fact, life was extremely tough for both of them: one was orphaned and one was almost murdered twice but they'd say that in this moment being alive has been worth it because they both gained a person to have and hold in their sleep.

In a world that had disappointed them countless of times, Taehyung and Jungkook finally find something to believe in. Something that is unable to change anything that has happened in the past yet capable of changing everything else that is to come in the future. This moment marks the start of something new for it marks a beautiful switch that has occured within them and now all that matters is the evolution of a peculiar sense of love they have for each other deep inside their hearts.

Tonight they both dream of butterflies.

You taught me the courage of stars before you left.  
How light carries on endlessly, even after death.  
With shortness of breath, you explained the infinite.  
How rare and beautiful it is to even exist.

I couldn’t help but ask  
For you to say it all again.  
I tried to write it down  
But I could never find a pen.  
I’d give anything to hear
You say it one more time,
That the universe was made
Just to be seen by my eyes.

I couldn’t help but ask
For you to say it all again.
I tried to write it down
But I could never find a pen.
I’d give anything to hear
You say it one more time,
That the universe was made
Just to be seen by my eyes.

With shortness of breath, I’ll explain the infinite
How rare and beautiful it truly is that we exist.

― Saturn by Sleeping At Last

END OF YOU'RE MINE DADDY BOOK 1

Book 1 of "You're Mine Daddy [VKOOK/KOOKV]" is completed, edited and compiled by me into a downloadable PDF version on 25th May 2018. Feel free to download the link below if you want to keep this book:

YMD BOOK 1 [PDF version]

I hope you have enjoyed reading the first season of this story! Onward to the next season!

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don't have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden_tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3
P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don't forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
Chapter Summary

Welcome to the first chapter of season 2.

In this chapter there is an in-depth description of the new antagonistic character Park Seo Joon who has been crushing hard on Taehyung since their orphanage days.

His intention is to steal Taehyung.

Poster credits: blissfulcoconuts on asianfanfics.com

Author's Preface Notes: The second season of "You’re Mine Daddy" will begin with 3 background chapters: one chapter on the new antagonistic character Park Seo Joon (Hwarang), one chapter on the NAMJIN couple and finally one chapter on the VKOOK couple's status update. Story will officially start after these 3 background chapters and similarly, the story will be in the same format as the previous phase of this fanfiction: time, date and location will be given as the header and stories will be written anecdote-by-anecdote but mainly in chronological order now. Alright that's all I have, enjoy reading this chapter!
“I would like to be the air that inhabits you for a moment only. I would like to be that unnoticed and that necessary.” — Margaret Atwood

Park Seo Joon has been obsessed with a beautiful boy named Kim Tae Hyung ever since their first encounter in the orphanage many years ago.

At the age of 4, Taehyung was an adorable toddler with large watery eyes and a face so beautiful it looked completely unreal. At that time, Taehyung's ethereal beauty didn't make any horse sense to the enthralled 6-year-old Seo Joon who had first seen Taehyung playing with another boy named Hoseok at the residential playground.

Since Seo Joon and Taehyung were living in different blocks of the same orphanage at that time, they had never gotten to cross path and thus had never come to know of each other's existence.

Seo Joon might have seen the sociable and outgoing Hoseok venture many times into the common playground but he had never gotten to see 4-year-old Taehyung before.

In fact, that moment was Seo Joon's first time witnessing the appearance of the rather introverted and shy Taehyung who had finally picked up the courage to walk out from the safe clutches of his block to explore the playground with Hoseok.

Having had his attention caught, Seo Joon halted in his tracks to watch Taehyung in curiosity. Taehyung was seen grinning sheepishly as he tried to climb up to the top of a playground slide and the innocent smile on his face immediately sent an unexpected dopamine rush through Seo Joon's mind.

*Why hadn’t I noticed this kid before?* Seo Joon had thought to himself in part confusion and part amazement.

Taehyung looked so precious. He had some incredibly chubby cheeks, flawless white skin and short silky black hair that covered just right above his watery eyes that appeared as if they were going to burst out into tears any moment.

For some reason, Seo Joon's young mind couldn't fathom if Taehyung was a boy or a girl.
Her face is so beautiful so she must be a girl! Yes, a beautiful girl with short boyish hair, Seo Joon had concluded after some moments of observing Taehyung.

The whole experience of looking at Taehyung was just so new yet satisfying to Seo Joon and from that day onwards, Seo Joon started to like Taehyung.

If one were to begin describing Seo Joon's infatuation with Taehyung, it would be something close to a pure but profound fascination towards another human being.

Children tend to be attracted to beautiful things and Seo Joon was no exception.

This girl must be an angel to look this beautiful, Seo Joon had thought to himself subconsciously on multiple occasions but being a young child, Seo Joon didn’t know how to express his admiration for Taehyung in a proper manner.

After multiple times of venturing to Taehyung’s block just to have two glances at the boy, Seo Joon finally decided to take further action.

I want to make friends with this girl! Seo Joon had thought in resolution so one day, Seo Joon tagged his staple clique of 4 other members: Minho, Yoon-Woo, Ji Han and Hyung Sik and went walking over to a lone Taehyung who was just passing by near the playground.

Taehyung was a quiet and introverted boy then. He was scared when he saw 5 seniors walking over towards him like he was a target. The alarmed Taehyung immediately tried to walk away but he was quickly cornered.

Taehyung looked like he was about to cry even before Seo Joon spoke.

“Hello girl, what is your name? Let’s be friends,” Seo Joon who was standing in the middle of his group offered a friendship with an enthusiastic tone that sounded a little loud and haughty. Unbeknownst to Taehyung, it was not Seo Joon's intention to sound arrogant but it had incidentally rubbed Taehyung off the wrong way because Taehyung was obviously not a girl.

Upon hearing Seo Joon’s words, Taehyung’s eyes widened in anger as he glared into Seo Joon’s soul.
“Go away! I'm not a girl, I'm a boy! I don't want to friend,” Taehyung retaliated with an angry pout to which Seo Joon furrowed his brows in disbelief and confusion.

Taehyung started to feel even more uncomfortable because after he had stated clearly his wish to be left alone, Seo Joon ignored his request and just inched closer with a slightly perplexed look to scrutinize Taehyung up-close. Taehyung felt more and more afraid when he saw Seo Joon inching nearer. He looked around to locate Hoseok and Jimin and realized they were in sight but were still some distance away at the other side of the playground.

At that moment, Seo Joon who had inched closer to Taehyung reached out his hand and without warning, pinched Taehyung on the cheek really hard. Somehow the first thing Seo Joon wanted to do was to make sure that Taehyung’s face was real. When his curious hand touched Taehyung’s face, he immediately felt a sense of awe overriding him. This angel is real! The young Seo Joon had thought in excitement.

On the other hand, Taehyung who was not expecting the pinch immediately yelped in pain. He melted to sit on the floor weakly and bursts out crying incessantly to which Jimin and Hoseok who had heard the commotion from meters away immediately came over to “rescue” him.

“Hey Seo Joon, don’t bully our Taehyung!” Jimin said with a frown and flashed a look of disapproval to Seo Joon who he had thought to be a nice kid in the past.

Seo Joon was devastated to see Taehyung crying. He flashed back a “I seriously didn’t do anything!” look and appeared stunned at Taehyung’s dramatic reaction too.

Anybody that makes Taehyung cry is no good, Jimin had thought to himself in that moment and in his mind he immediately “unfriended” Seo Joon who was his playmate at the playground previously.

Hoseok’s usual delightful expression also became a concerned and more serious one as he tried to comfort the distressed Taehyung.

“What happened Taehyung, why are you crying?” Hoseok asked gently trying to wipe tears away from Taehyung who seemed to be crying louder and louder every second. Yes, Taehyung used to be a cry-baby when he was very little and once he started crying he wouldn't stop for hours.

“He called me a girl wooooooohuuuuuuuuu…. Taehyung wailed and pointed an accusatory
finger at Seo Joon.

“But you ARE a girl!” Seo Joon proclaimed as a matter of fact. He was equally confused and upset at that moment.

“No I’m not!” Taehyung shouted in frustration.

“He’s a BOY Seo Joon!” Jimin added in anger.

“No he’s a girl! Right?” Seo Joon reiterated his point again feeling as if the whole world was coming to crash above his head.

“Yeah if Seo Joon says she’s a girl then she’s a girl!!!!” Hyungsik from Seo Joon's clique also stepped in to emphasize Seo Joon’s words.

Just like this, a childish argument about Taehyung’s gender broke out with both parties yelling their heads off at each other.

Even Hoseok who was usually a peace-loving boy also joined in the verbal fight and after a while the fight escalated into a physical one when Hyungsik actually tried to pull on Hoseok’s hair to which the shocked but agile Hoseok immediately dodged and sneakily sent a warning kick to Hyungsik’s ankle. The kick wasn’t forceful but it was enough to cause Hyungsik to scream in pain. Then, right after Hyungsik’s scream, the residential bell rang to signify that playtime was over and that all kids were to return to their blocks for dinner.

Food was important and everyone was hungry so both parties decided to part abruptly in the midst of their heated argument.

***

The fight among the children abruptly ended in an unresolved manner that day and since then, both parties officially became enemies.

Seo Joon still liked Taehyung subconsciously though and it was unfortunate that their first encounter
turned sour due to an avoidable misunderstanding but no matter what, Seo Joon wanted to continue pursuing Taehyung's attention so throughout the next few weeks, he followed Taehyung whenever he saw the younger boy and he would say certain weird remarks like, “Taehyung, I really think you are a girl! Are you very sure you are a boy?” and “Taehyung, you are pretty so you must be an angel right!” and “I am going to marry you when I grow up because you are such a beautiful girl and a beautiful angel!”

Every time that happened, Taehyung would be holding back tears because he interpreted all these remarks as rude and insulting. There was even a point of time when Taehyung’s mind actually started to become brainwashed for he started believing that he was an actual girl.

Little Taehyung's whole world came crashing down on him.

*What is the difference between a girl and a boy anyway? Am I a girl or boy?* Taehyung thought constantly to himself and he was so mind-blown and confused that he even asked the orphanage mistress-in-charge about his gender identity in tears to which the mistress had to soothe Taehyung repeatedly and assure him that he was in fact a boy so imagine on countless nights a 30-year-old woman holding onto a crying 4-year-old Taehyung in her arms repeatedly saying with love, “don’t cry, you are a boy Taehyung, don’t cry okay I'm here~” while Taehyung continued to sob helplessly in her embrace.

It was so heartwarming that Taehyung remembered the event till today both in his subconscious and conscious memories. The woman had soft and fluffy chest and at that time, Taehyung felt that he could lie in there forever so he continued sobbing to prolong time with the mistress. That mistress-in-charge was also the only woman that had held Taehyung before when Taehyung was a child which probably resulted in Taehyung’s current undying preference for similarly curvy and loving women in his later life.

After all, that was Taehyung's only moment in his childhood when he had received something close to a motherly sort of love.

***

Things between Seo Joon and Taehyung took a quick turn one day.

On a fateful day that same year of meeting Seo Joon, Taehyung’s innate violence finally showed for the first time externally.
Taehyung really didn’t like Seo Joon and his remarks at all so when he saw Seo Joon walking close towards him again with an excited look one afternoon, something snapped in him.

Without warning, Taehyung mercilessly sent his most powerful punch hard into Seo Joon’s face, effectively knocking out two of his baby teeth in a single shot.

The unsuspecting Seo Joon immediately fell to the ground with a bloodied mouth and instantly fainted in shock.

After awhile, Seo Joon was attended to medically and Taehyung was punished and scolded but he did not regret his actions at all.

In short, Taehyung felt like it was a necessary thing to do to protect his own dignity because unbeknownst to Seo Joon, Taehyung was already deeply hurt by his words.

***

After that event, Seo Joon had completely stopped approaching Taehyung.

Firstly, Seo Joon was traumatized to have 2 teeth knocked out of him and the pain left him wary of the cute-turned-violent Taehyung.

Secondly, he was so hurt because his intentions were just to get Taehyung’s attention. He was unaware of the distress he was causing Taehyung and he couldn’t believe that Taehyung had resorted to punching him so hard in his face with an actual intention to hurt him physically without first asking for an explanation.

Lastly, Taehyung suddenly started to adopt a completely different alpha-male persona after the episode, recruiting his own gang and becoming a bully in the orphanage to which his new-found behaviour confused Seo Joon even more leaving the older boy extremely apprehensive of the younger rebel.

In short, Seo Joon started to observe Taehyung only from afar and for many years he silently watched as Taehyung grew from a cute and innocent cry-baby into the most savage bully in the orphanage.
Seo Joon still thought Taehyung was precious though, like an angel.

Over the years, Taehyung grew to become more and more beautiful yet his actions were not pretty at all and this contrast made him even more mysterious and interesting to Seo Joon.

Moreover, the fact that Seo Joon was denied of Taehyung’s friendship also made Seo Joon crave for Taehyung’s attention even more such that by the time he reached puberty, his heart could already beat at an explosive rate just at the thought of Taehyung and that was when he realized that he was helplessly in love.

On the surface it looked like Seo Joon didn't care. He went on with his life, hanging out with his clique, making friends, flirted with other girls but the only person he could think about in the middle of the night was Taehyung - the boy he truly desired to have from the very beginning.

It wasn't a feeling quite like lust but an obsessive love that he was feeling constantly for the younger boy. In fact, Seo Joon had always tried to convince himself that Taehyung was undeserving of his heart but he just couldn't stop the way his stomach churned just at the mere sight of Taehyung inching closer in his direction from afar.

It was crazy, isn't it? The way Seo Joon couldn't fall out of love.

Seo Joon had even imagined on several occasions how awesome it would be if Taehyung would even so slightly smile at him because that would actually be a miracle to him but of course Taehyung would never do that to someone whom he had interpreted to have disrespected him in the past.

***

The tension between Seo Joon and Taehyung was never resolved as years passed.

Despite being the greatest bully in the orphanage, Taehyung had never tried to accomplish any sort of revenge towards Seo Joon and his clique.

He wanted to avoid them as much as possible because they were ultimately still the root cause of his deep-seated trauma when he was younger and he subconsciously still feared Seo Joon even if he had
However, Seo Joon constantly wished for the opposite. He wished that Taehyung would just come over to beat him up instead of plainly ignoring his existence like that and on that part, Seo Joon was very upset because he really liked Taehyung.

You can hate me but don’t ignore me Taehyung, Seo Joon had thought sadly to himself many times and all these sadness and unresolved feelings he had for Taehyung only made his love grow stronger.

***

At the age of 10, Taehyung was kicked out of the orphanage along with Jimin, Hoseok and Jin. Taehyung then formed his own BANGTAN gang in the streets shortly after.

Seo Joon was 12 that year and he was already majorly crushing on Taehyung to the point when Taehyung left, Seo Joon was so upset he cried for days because his angel was gone for good but after a few days of crying he slapped himself in the face and scolded himself for being too passive and weak.

Fuck it, I’m going to chase Taehyung since I like him so much, Seo Joon thought with determination to himself. To an orphan like him, Seo Joon felt that Taehyung was the only person he had ever truly loved despite his feelings being unrequited. Was Taehyung worth a fight? Definitely.

Seo Joon wished that one day he would have a chance and courage to confess his feelings to Taehyung.

With that thought, Seo Joon gathered his clique and collectively exited the orphanage together.

Seo Joon felt that his departure from the orphanage for a boy like Taehyung was worth it. Yes, at that point in time Seo Joon had come to acknowledge the fact that Taehyung was a guy but fuck it - regardless of Taehyung’s gender, he still wanted desperately for Taehyung to become his lover so shortly after the self-initiated departure from his ex-home, Seo Joon formed the HWARANG gang in close vicinity to the BANGTAN gang and after many years of passivity in the orphanage following the Taehyung-punch incident, Seo Joon finally began his active mission to become involved with Taehyung again.
For example, Seo Joon would randomly kidnap BANGTAN members just to virtually threaten to throw them down the sea and demand through phone calls for Taehyung to come and rescue them. He would also start random fights with BANGTAN members just so Taehyung could come out to meet him personally for negotiations.

However, he would also do sweet romantic things like for example he would randomly pop by Taehyung’s house to leave food at his door before running away to prevent himself being seen and even making it a known protocol to all of HWARANG’s members to never hurt Taehyung in fights because he would never want his beloved Taehyung to be injured.

On the other hand, Taehyung just thought of Seo Joon as a bug that wouldn’t go away. He most certainly knew that the food was left behind by Seo Joon and had never eaten them because he was afraid they might be poisoned.

Taehyung was confused by Seo Joon's seemingly bipolar actions.

“Can’t you just leave me alone?!” Taehyung had asked in frustration one night when he was 17. He had called Seo Joon out one-on-one that night because seriously, Seo Joon kept bothering him to no end be it for gang matters or during his own personal Sundays and he wanted all of that nonsense to stop.

Seo Joon felt his heart clench.

How could he leave Taehyung alone? He would do anything to be with Taehyung even if Taehyung continued to hate him.

From the age of 6 till he was 19, Taehyung was his angel that he wanted to love him with all his heart.

*If only you could give me a chance*, Seo Joon thought to himself as his eyes melted in sorrow.

Seo Joon took a deep breath, collected his mind and finally blurted the words he had buried so deeply inside his heart, “but I can’t. I love you Taehyung, I love you so much. Can't you give me a chance.... to be your boyfriend?”

If he didn’t say it then, he would never say it so he might as well confess right there and then.
Sometimes people don’t need a reason to fall in love, as in the case of Seo Joon.

From the day he had landed eyes on Taehyung, there was already no turning back and sometimes people love those that they could never get, those that they could never reach, those that they could never fully grasp.

To Seo Joon, Taehyung was like the brightest star in the night sky - so beautiful yet untouchable. All those years he could not see anyone else but Taehyung and it had drove him crazy. He craved for Taehyung’s attention and love and he would do anything to gain that. His love for Taehyung certainly didn't make any sense at all since they were supposed to be enemies but ultimately he couldn't deny that his love for Taehyung was so vast that he simply couldn’t let go of the boy.

Upon hearing that, Taehyung widened his eyes in shock.

Two seconds later, his face twisted in disgust.

“I’m not gay you idiot, fuck this is so cringe. I’m getting out of here,” Taehyung spitted out those harsh words and walked off immediately and 2 seconds later he turned around and added, "are you sick? We are supposed to be enemies and I can’t believe you just said what you said. I will continue to hate you,” before walking hastily away again and disappearing from Seo Joon’s sight in no time.

Well, Taehyung was definitely not gay and Seo Joon knew that fact very well too. The 17-year-old Taehyung had already started playing around with girls in the neighbourhood, probably slept with many of them and every time Seo Joon witnessed him flirting around with girls on the streets his heart felt as if it was breaking into a thousand pieces.

However, Seo Joon still tolerated it well because as long as he stood a chance to become Taehyung’s first and last boyfriend, then there would still be hope.

As long as Taehyung didn’t start dating other men, that would be enough for Seo Joon at that moment because if that were to really happen he might actually go crazy.

_Taehyung, I want to be your one and only man_, Seo Joon thought to himself on multiple occasions in resolution, tears welling up in his eyes from loneliness.
After Taehyung had so harshly rejected Seo Joon despite his deepest and sincerest confession, Seo Joon was so in pain that he felt like he was dying that night.

Taehyung’s response wasn’t surprising because Seo Joon most definitely knew that Taehyung was a straight man but his callous words still hurt Seo Joon deeply.

He wanted Taehyung to be his no matter whether Taehyung liked it or not and at that moment he was so consumed in sadness and rage that he had sworn to make Taehyung’s his regardless of whether Taehyung would eventually come to accept him or not.

Like a crazily obsessed yet loyal dog, Seo Joon sat down with tears flowing uncontrollably from his eyes at home as he began to formulate a plan to get Taehyung into his own hands.

Well, he couldn't just kidnap Taehyung because if he was found out, his gang would be doomed. The BANGTAN gang was in good relations with the GOT7 gang at that time and if they both came to attack HWARANG at once to rescue Taehyung, all his members would be exterminated and as a responsible leader he couldn't let that happen. Whatever he were to do he would leave HWARANG out of this.

Besides, Taehyung was a good fighter on his own and usually he would travel places to places with Jimin, Hoseok and this small little kid that had seemed to appear out of nowhere one day and all four of them were great fighters so it wouldn't be as easy to kidnap Taehyung as in the past. Unfortunately, Seo Joon wasn't half as good in fighting as Taehyung then and he felt so powerless and incompetent. He realized that night that in order to get Taehyung, he would need to become powerful, so powerful that he could make the almighty Taehyung submit to him. Also, he would need to find a place to hide Taehyung from the world so that he could have Taehyung all to himself.

He started thinking hard.

How could he possibly achieve that?
Two weeks later after the confession that had gone terribly wrong, Seo Joon left HWARANG and travelled to Seoul to learn proper martial arts and combat sports.

He passed the HWARANG throne to Hyungsik and told Minho and Ji Han to keep an eye on Taehyung and to regularly stalk and report information about Taehyung to him.

According to them, Taehyung had grown to become more and more attractive to which Seo Joon unhappily scolded his ex-subordinates for looking at Taehyung that way. He was uncontrollably possessive of Taehyung to the point where he thought he was going crazy but again, he really couldn’t help it nor do anything to stop his mind from feeling feelings for the younger man despite the distance.

A few months after his arrival in Seoul, Seo Joon got himself involved in the underground world, selling drugs to earn himself fast income to support his living and martial arts tuition fees in Seoul urban city. Seo Joon crazily trained himself to become a great fighter and in no time, his name spread far and wide in the underground world especially in underground rings that he had only participated time to time to earn himself some quick cash.

Seo Joon quickly rose to fame.

One day, he was called to a mysterious place and was offered a place in a mafia organization.

“You are talented and we need people like you. Join us,” said some men-in-black.

Hearing that, Seo Joon smirked.

Being part of the mafia would make him much more powerful than he could have ever achieved alone. He immediately agreed and became part of the mafia organization known as “The Mafia Origins” and went through tough army-like training for another 4 years to finally emerge as one of the mafia’s most prized fighters.

He won in many real-life battles for the mafia and most importantly, he had survived all of them because of his innate strong will to live for the man named Kim Tae Hyung. Hell, he couldn’t die until he made Taehyung his, could he?
5 years later, the long-lost young master of “The Mafia Origins” returned. His name was Jungkook.

Seeing Jungkook at the mafia headquarters for the first time, Seo Joon could swear that he had never known this boy before but for some reason Jungkook looked really familiar yet Seo Joon couldn't recall where exactly he had seen Jungkook before.

He eventually chose not to think about it and carried on with his life.

In fact, upon Jungkook’s arrival back to the mafia, the esteemed Seo Joon was tasked with an important mission to teach Jungkook how to fight professionally.

Through the first three lessons, Seo Joon was able to realize the young master’s fast learning capabilities and talent in fighting.

Seo Joon and Jungkook quickly became close.

Sometimes after lessons, they would go out for dinner together and of course there was always bodyguard Namjoon standing at the back with an emotionless face. Below was one of their conversations during dinner one time:

“You are really talented in fighting, young master. It still amazes me how fast you can learn.”

“Well, somebody great taught me the basics of fighting in the past so that’s why I’m a little quicker at these things. I still have much to learn though and I’m still far from being an awesome fighter like you Seo Joon,” Jungkook said in mild admiration.

Yes, Seo Joon might be older than Jungkook and Seo Joon might be Jungkook’s teacher but being the young master, Jungkook was still higher in “rank” than Seo Joon in the mafia hence he could call Seo Joon casually by his name.

“Believe me, I was a terrible fighter some years back, but somebody inspired me to become a better fighter in the past too so that’s why I’m here today.”

Both smiled.
They didn’t know they were referring to the same person.

***

Seo Joon already had everything planned-out. In the near future when Jungkook take over the mafia, Seo Joon would then take a leave on his 30th birthday to return to the village.

Seo Joon would then “coerce” Taehyung to return with him to the mafia underground headquarters where he was living and he would force Taehyung into a marriage with him like what the other members of the mafia always did.

However, to his surprise, one week before he was about to return to the village, he attended Jungkook’s underground wedding and was so shell-shocked that Taehyung was the “wife” in question.

It was only then that Seo Joon recalled Jungkook to be the young kid who was always around Taehyung previously in the village. No wonder Jungkook looked so familiar the first time he saw him in the mafia.

Seo Joon was suddenly attacked with a sea of mind-blowing emotions.

Unbelievable.

Just simple unbelievable.

How was that possible?! How could that happen? Taehyung was his! Not Jungkook’s!

In that instant, Seo Joon’s admiration and care for the younger Jungkook immediately switched into profound jealousy and hatred.

But he hid these feelings. He hid them well.
There were slight changes in his plans now all thanks to his new-found love rival Jungkook but it was still possible for Seo Joon to make Taehyung his.

*It’s still possible, still possible. Calm down Seo Joon*, Seo Joon thought to himself while shaking so much in anger and rage at the wedding that day.

The distressed Seo Joon quickly excused himself that night as he couldn’t bear to continue watching the wedding further.

***

Currently, Seo Joon is working on his next big surprise of a plan to steal Jungkook’s wife. Taehyung is his in the first place and nobody, nobody, not even the mafia boss himself can steal Taehyung from him. Taehyung will be his and his only and no one in the world can have him other than himself. Taehyung is supposed to be his since many years ago but he screwed up and now he is so close to his target and he can’t believe Jungkook just so suddenly interrupted and ruined his whole plan.

Seo Joon believes that Jungkook deserves to die. Yes, the mafia boss definitely deserves to die.

*Taehyung is mine*, Seo Joon thinks to himself as he cries angry tears while punching the wall till it turns red.

Maybe if he tries hard enough, the man of his dreams can finally love him back too some day.

“I have little left in myself -- I must have you. The world may laugh -- may call me absurd, selfish -- but it does not signify. My very soul demands you: it will be satisfied, or it will take deadly vengeance on its frame.” — Charlotte Brontë, Jane Eyre

---

*Twitter: @hidden__tracks* (two underscores)
Chapter Summary

In-depth description of Jin, Hoseok, Jimin.
Also the start of JIHOPE and NAMJIN.

[Take note of age differences between characters: Namjoon and Seojoon are two years older than Hoseok and Taehyung who are two years older than Jimin and Jin. In short, their age from oldest to youngest with birthdays included are as such: Namjoon (Sept 1987) > Seojoon (Dec 1987) >> Hoseok (Feb 1989) > Taehyung (Dec 1989) >> Jimin (Oct 1991) > Jin (Dec 1991) >>>>>>> Jungkook (Sept 1997)]

“A smile costs nothing but gives much. It enriches those who receive without making poorer those who give. It takes but a moment, but the memory of it sometimes lasts forever.” --- ndtv

I) The Smile That Saved Jin

Kim Seok Jin’s parents passed away in a tragic car accident when he was only three and a half.

Two days after the event, a perpetually crying Jin was sent into a local orphanage to be cared for.

Foetus three-year-old Jin pretty much had no lasting solid memories of his parents since he was so young at that time except for some faint recollections of his loving mother’s smile when she had previously held him in her arms.

Yes, Jin loved the memory of his mother’s beautiful smile and for many years he had been silently thankful that his young mind had captured and held onto that heartening image and also indirectly because of that particular memory imprint, Jin had grown up with a naturally strong affinity towards other human beings who carried heartwarming and sincere smiles because instinctively they had
provided him with an immediate sense of familiarity and love.

*People with beautiful smiles would definitely be great friends*, innocent Jin would think that way subconsciously and well, it was quite an effective heuristic strategy to employ because by the time Jin was 2 weeks into the orphanage, he had successfully found his new gang of a family BANGTAN unit made up of members named Hoseok, Jimin and Taehyung to which he could rely on as true friends for a lifetime.

Let's start out by introducing Jin’s first friend at the orphanage who was none other than the sunshine Jung Hoseok.

Needless to say, Hoseok was the first to meet Jin’s standard “smiling” prerequisite as a friend with his sunny and happy personality. In fact, Hoseok was the first boy in Jin’s assigned block that had bothered to make friends with the permanently confused cry-baby Jin and to Jin, that rainbow of a joyful Hoseok was honestly what he had truly needed to save him in that new scary place of a foreign orphanage at that time.

"Hi I am Hoseok nice to meet you! Why are you so cute aigo CAN WE BE FWEENNSS!!?!!?!!” the enthusiastic Hoseok had ran up like a wild monkey to a crying Jin upon seeing the new boy and the first thing Hoseok did to Jin was of course to flash his award-winning life-saving iceberg-melting smile.

In that time-freeze of a moment, Jin swore he saw glowing sparks radiating from Hoseok’s bright face like some sort of a godly out-of-the-world miracle.

Well, at least that was how the dramatic Jin remembered that glorious moment.

The warm smile that Hoseok had planted on his face instantly sent waves of comfort and relief to Jin providing an immediate calming effect to the crying boy.

*I think I like this person*, Jin had thought to himself so two seconds later, Jin stopped crying and accepted Hoseok’s “friend request” with a shy “okay. Hello I am Jin~” to which Hoseok instantly
went berserk with excitement and proceeded to violently hug Jin. In the process, Hoseok screamed at the top of voice: “YAY HELLOWWW JINNNYYY WE FRIENDS NOW YAYYY DON’T CRY STOP CRYING!!!!!!”

Hoseok’s dramatic reaction caused Jin to jerk in subtle shock before proceeding to chuckle shyly in happiness and acceptance.

*This Hoseok hyung is so crazy,* Jin concluded but nevertheless he was pretty happy to make friends with such a warm sunshine of a person.

As for Hoseok, he was so ecstatic to make a new friend that in subsequent days after their first meeting, Hoseok continued to tag onto Jin like a carebear.

Hoseok would continue coming over to talk to Jin, play with Jin and in each encounter with Jin, Hoseok would make Jin crack out into uncontrollable fits of laughter with his silly funny-ass jokes and meme-like actions. At that time, Jin was only three and Hoseok was already five and being the older one, Hoseok most definitely wanted to take care of the new baby Jin to his fullest capability.

When Hoseok had seen the new boy Jin crying alone at the corner of the block, it had broken his heart and since then Hoseok had wanted nothing more than to make Jin happy because something about puffy-cheeked Jin just screamed at Hoseok “protect this soul oh my lord” and so thanks to Hoseok’s innate sense of mission to bring joy to the people surrounding him, Jin could safely say that he had one hell of an awesome childhood laughing like a choking baby piglet with the funny Hoseok cracking endless jokes by his side all day long.

II) Opposites Attract

On the other hand, Hoseok’s playmate and best friend, Jimin, was much more mellow in temperament. If one were to describe Hoseok as the hottest summer in the tropical equator, then Jimin would be the coldest winter in Antarctica.

In fact, Jimin was a boy that more often than not would be found settled in his own deep internal zone of a self-induced melancholy while sitting silently in one corner of the room staring out of the window at the rain thinking about god-knows-what and hell, he was only 3 years old when he had
started throwing high-level emo stunts like that.

Jimin had also exhibited anxiety from a young age, was bad at making new friends and would avoid eye contact as much as possible with other humans besides Hoseok and Taehyung.

The other orphanage children all shunned Jimin because he seemed unfriendly but the true question is: why would a bright and upbeat Hoseok become best friends with an emotional and downcast Jimin? They were on totally different wavelengths so how did they get to connect as friends and even to some point, recognition each other as their best friend?

Well, the answer was simply that *opposites attract.*

For instance, Jimin was exceptionally introverted while Hoseok was exceptionally extroverted so whenever they spent time together, they would balance each other out perfectly in terms of energy.

Most of the time when they were hanging out, Hoseok would be the one rambling on and on happily while Jimin would be an active listener making comments time to time and both loved communicating that way because that was just how they would act when they were truly comfortable.

Also, Jimin was a very pessimistic person whereas Hoseok was an overtly optimistic boy and honestly, Hoseok could be way too optimistic at times when it came down to planning and making decisions such that Jimin had to constantly play the part of providing the negative perspectives to things because somehow Hoseok’s mind just couldn’t tweak that way.

“Oh right, I didn't think about that,” Hoseok would say in deep revelation whenever Jimin offered him his side of the analysis causing Hoseok to rethink some of his major decisions in life. Hence it was safe to say that in this aspect, Jimin had helped Hoseok a lot by providing him with a more holistic perspective to issues.

On the other hand, Hoseok would play a crucial part in cheering Jimin up whenever Jimin felt low. When Jimin wanted to cry again, Hoseok would pull Jimin out of his stuffy room to the sunny outdoor playground. Over at the outdoor area, Hoseok would then try his utmost best to distract Jimin from his toxic internal thoughts by cracking random jokes and sending warm hugs to the crying Jimin.

Once in awhile when Jimin became truly happy, he would show his rare gem of a smile which
would in turn warm Hoseok’s entire being from the deepest trench of his heart.

Hoseok was a fun-loving person and people’s happiness was his happiness too and he would be especially euphoric when that happiness belonged to his best friend Jimin.

In fact, Jimin’s happiness was so rare and precious and it had meant and still means so much to Hoseok till today such that Hoseok would literally do anything just to see Jimin’s beautiful smile.

Hoseok also loved how Jimin would instantly turn into a soft mochi upon smiling and that always melted Hoseok’s heart.

_Mochi Jimin is the cutest Jimin indeed,_ Hoseok would think sheepishly and at this point it would be easy to deduce who gave Jimin the nickname “mochi” to begin with.

### III) The Four-membered Family

Newcomer Jin had stuck exclusively to Hoseok when he had first entered the orphanage but since Hoseok was always hanging out with Jimin and not to forget the leader of their clique Kim Tae Hyung, Jin had no choice but to also hang out with Hoseok’s two other mutual friends.

Apparently Jimin, Hoseok and Taehyung were already friends in the orphanage before Jin’s appearance and together, they were already established as a trio clique. That fact always made Jin feel slightly left out not to mention that the start of his friendship with Jimin and Taehyung was also slightly awkward to begin with.

Initially, Jin had found Jimin rather distant due to his cold personality and he was also low-key terrified of the forceful and fierce leader Taehyung who would not hesitate to pick on other kids in the orphanage.

On the other hand, Jimin and Taehyung also started out feeling a little awkward with Jin too but after some time interacting and getting to know Jin, they had become increasingly comfortable in Jin’s presence.
No doubt that cutiepie Jin was too likeable to be true because he was just so unintentionally funny: Jin had the cutest window-wiping laugh and he would also unexpectedly trip and fall regularly due to his overt clumsiness and not to mention Jin would always clap randomly or be caught eating at the most inappropriate moments which to Jimin and Taehyung were just extremely adorable and funny to witness.

Many a times, Jimin, Taehyung and Hoseok would find themselves dying from laughing so hard at Jin's unintentional body gags and reactions and really, before they even came to realize it they were all already so whipped around Jin's finger.

As a result of the "Jin effect", Jimin and Taehyung soon came to accept this adorable maknae of theirs wholeheartedly as the fourth member of the clique and had even expressed their welcome to Jin in every way they could to make their baby feel more comfortable.

For instance, Taehyung would be absolutely gentle with Jin unlike his usual savagery when treating outsiders whereas Jimin also gradually started showing Jin the fluffball mochi side of himself so shortly after approximately 2 adaptive months into the orphanage, Jin had become fully assimilated into the clique and all the four of them couldn't be happier to be part of the four-membered family.

In a world where their parents have abandoned or have already left them, at least the four of them had one another to lean on and call their brothers.

IV) Jin's Gift

Speaking about their teenage lives as budding gangsters, fighting came rather naturally to Jimin, Hoseok and Taehyung. Out of necessity and a means of survival, the three of them became extremely experienced street fighters a few years after being kicked out of the orphanage but interestingly, their maknae Jin had absolutely no talent or interest in the aspect of fighting.

Hell, Jin probably couldn’t even win a fight with a rat for nuts because he would be screaming and running away in absolute terror at the sight of anything that remotely moved.

However, Jin did possess exceptional talent in first-aid and medicine so for many years he had been assuming a very vital role in the team and that was being BANGTAN’s one and only first-aider because somehow, Jin just had the magical healing powers in which he could most certainly know
exactly what medication to apply to which kind of wounds not to mention his ability to deduce quickly the actions that needed to be taken immediately on a severely injured gang mate.

Jin’s clumsy aura would also drastically change when he was attending to his patients in which his usual goofiness would suddenly switch into a highly focused and concentrated mode.

That switch absolutely fascinated Jimin, Taehyung and Hoseok up till today and even though Jin was not a fighter like them, they still respected Jin from the bottom of his heart for his extraordinarily keen sense of practical medicinal knowledge and first-aid abilities.

If it wasn’t for Jin who had been attending to all of the gang’s emergent injuries dutifully, many of BANGTAN’s gang mates could have accumulated severe health complications or could have even died from severe bleeding or internal damage after gang fights.

To them, it was as if Jin was a healing god and till now, BANGTAN members have absolutely no idea how Jin knew what he knew having never received any formal education related to medicine or basic first-aid.

Furthermore, Jin’s knowledge wasn’t restricted to just first-aid relief as the boy could potentially cure diseases and detect deficiencies as well.

“Don’t ask me why, I just know. You’ll heal by tomorrow,” Jin had replied that one time when he had accurately diagnosed and miraculously cured a gang mate who was literally dying of scurvy by simply chunking a glass of orange juice down his throat.

Well, Jin actually didn’t even know of the term "scurvy" at that time but somehow he just knew confidently what to do with the condition.

Turned out the results were amazing in which the gang mate really came to recover the very next day and everyone was shaken to the core.

Well, just don’t ask Jin why he knew what he knew. In fact, he wanted to know the answer to that mystery as well.

He might be clumsy and timid but he also acknowledges the fact that he is extremely good at saving people and he accepts and takes pride in it.
Yes, saving lives is his purpose and it will always be his mission in life.

From the very beginning after the realization of his gift, Jin had already decided that he will continue saving lives until the day he dies without wanting anything in return.

Simply put, he does what he does for the purpose, gift and a love he has for the world and one day in future, Jin will come to meet or rather, reunite with a man named Namjoon who is able to see through his kindness to treasure the beauty in this doctor's soul.

V) The Boy Who Gave Me The Camera

When Namjoon was twelve, he was allowed to leave the mafia underground headquarters for the first time to see the outside world and hell, he was so excited for that occasion that he couldn’t sleep for days.

Children like Namjoon who were born into the mafia underground were not allowed to see daylight until the age of 12 due to security purposes and they were also not allowed to venture out of the compound on their own till the solid age of 18.

That was a strict underground rule and also the unfortunate fate of all children born into families of "The Mafia Origins" in which a lack of compliance would mean impending death for all 9 generations of the offender’s family so up to date not a single soul had dared to question or challenge that freedom-restricting implementation unless they wanted themselves and all of their family to die a painful and terrible death.

***

Namjoon had learnt everything about the Earth via photos from the internet during the first 12 years of his life.

His favourite images were those of the sun, those of the open streets and those of the nature’s flowers and greenery. To him, such things were so mysterious yet so beautiful and he simply couldn’t wait to
see them for himself someday and when that day came, he wanted to be the one capturing all those images himself.

“Dad! I want to take photos of these beautiful trees,” Namjoon had said to his dad while pointing to a photo of a big bodhi tree on the computer one time.

Namjoon was a kid of few words and possessed very monotonous emotions when speaking which might have been a condition instilled into Namjoon who was caged underground for a full 12 years of his childhood.

“Sure Joon, but on your 12th birthday we are going to go up there and see everything. This means that we are not just going to look at trees but many other things as well. I’ll also get you a camera as a present on your 12th birthday so you can take as many photos as you want.”

Hearing that, Namjoon was ecstatic. Though his face was flat at that moment, deep in his heart he was really excited.

“Thank you dad.”

***

When Namjoon's 12th birthday finally arrived, his father lived up to his promise, bought a camera for Namjoon and brought the boy out onto the surface of Earth for the first time after some compulsory procedures at the mafia main office.

During the whole process walking from the deep linking tunnels till they finally emerged out into the open space, Namjoon kept on snapping photos in awe as he was suddenly overwhelmed by the most basic scenery one could easily witness in their daily lives: the sky, the waters, the sun, the flowers.

Everything was so beautiful to Namjoon and he couldn’t even bear to blink for a second because he didn’t want to miss a single moment or a single thing in this world.

In Namjoon's mind this is what he remembers things to be on that day: Walking and walking. Snapping beautiful scenery, snap. Father's description on things, descriptions.
“I am hungry dad,” said Namjoon as a matter-of-fact suddenly when his stomach started growling an hour later.

“We’re reaching the bus soon so hang in there. The bus will take around an hour to reach the city and we’ll have a good meal there son. Here, have a quick biscuit bite first.”

“Okay.”

Namjoon ate his biscuit snack before proceeding with his photo-taking.

10 minutes later as the duo was walking by a small-rundown village en-route to taking a bus into the city, somebody caught Namjoon’s undivided attention and he immediately halted in his tracks.

“What’s up son?”

“Boy there looks too happy when eating. Makes me hungrier. What is in his food?” Namjoon said in curiosity as he gazed over at a beautiful boy sitting and eating 2 metres away from him.

He did not know that the boy was named Jin.

At that moment, Jin was sitting at the corner of the street with some old haggard clothes munching on to food along with Hoseok, Taehyung and Jimin who were also trying very hard to swallow the plain and dry buns in their hands.

Those days were actually the BANGTAN gang’s hardest days in which they had just been freshly thrown out from the orphanage to fend for themselves and the buns were all that they could easily steal to eat at that time.

While Taehyung and Jimin looked absolutely miserable having had eaten the same old bland food for the past 3 days, Jin looked absolutely ecstatic.

He had been so hungry so any kind of food could taste like heaven to him even though he was just eating some plain old tasteless buns.
“Oh, they are just eating plain buns. Let’s go Namjoon, those kids are probably beggars and don’t stare at them like that, usually beggars would tag onto you and ask for money if you show any sympathy to them.”

“Really?” Namjoon brushed his dad off with a skeptical word before inching closer to Jin and without warning, he hastily snapped a quick shot of the boy with his camera.

The shuttering sound of the camera immediately caught the attention of Jin who looked over to Namjoon for the first time.

Namjoon didn't realize that Jin was looking at him for he was looking down at his camera to check the photo that he had just taken of Jin: it was a perfect shot and he was very satisfied of it.

*This boy has a really nice smile,* Namjoon thought to himself as he grinned silently at the photo before a foreign voice traveled into his ears.

“What’s that?” Jin asked Namjoon in curiosity and Namjoon looked up to meet the gaze of the then 8-year-old Jin who had magically “teleported” to his side. Namjoon’s father instinctively pulled Namjoon away from the beggar-looking Jin to which Namjoon instantly brushed his dad’s hold away.

For the first time in his life, Namjoon felt a tinge of annoyance towards his insensitive dad and it was for a boy he barely knew to be named Jin.

“Your picture. I like it. You have nice smile,” Namjoon replied and showed Jin the picture he just took and upon looking at himself in the photo, Jin was instantly blown away.

That was the first photo that anyone had taken of him and hell, he sure looked really good on camera.

“Wow I’m so handsome!”

Namjoon chuckled in amusement at Jin’s self-praise.
“True. Handsome.”

“Hehe why do you keep speaking in such a funny chopped-up way...what other photos did you take?"

“Trees, skies, birds, buildings, flowers,” Namjoon recited precisely the photos he took and proceeded to show Jin all the previous photos he had taken in the past hour by scrolling through the gallery in his camera.

Namjoon’s dad sighed in annoyance to which Namjoon plainly ignored him.

He was enjoying his conversation with his first "camera human model" and for some reason, he wanted to spend more time with this boy.

“Out of all the photos, I still like the photo with my face the most but it’s sad that I can’t have it,” Jin said and suddenly he looked genuinely sad.

The smile on his face was wiped off in a sorrowful sigh.

10 seconds of silence as Namjoon looked at Jin and then down onto his beloved camera.

Strange feelings welled up in his heart.

He wanted the photo of Jin’s face too but if Jin wanted it then....

“Let’s go Namjoon,” Namjoon’s father couldn’t bear to watch his son talk to a random beggar anymore and finally decided to put an end to that pointless interaction as he turned the other way and started walking away in the opposite direction.

At that moment, Namjoon made a split second of a choice.
“This for you. Keep smiling. Hope to see you again.” Namjoon whispered and passed the camera secretly to Jin before walking away with his dad never to be seen again for the next 18 years.

“The greatest power that a human possesses is the power of pure love.” — Debasish Mridha

Twitter: @hidden__tracks (two underscores)
[M] BG2.3 - Pool Techniques

Chapter Summary

Warning: use of inappropriate objects as sex toys and slight TORTURE. Please do not mimic at home. Once again, muscle kook’s savagery is self-explanatory. You have been warned.

This sexepisode is classified as a background chapter because it doesn't propel the plot much. Instead it serves to aggregate all main characters and couples in one meeting place and we will kick-start the main story from here. Enjoy~

“Sex either blows your fucking mind, or it's not good enough.” — Karen Marie Moning

***

Location: a local snooker pool in district #7 of Taehyung's village

Date & Time: 17th November 2017 7:15PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28]

***

Around two and a half months into the marriage, the forever-busy-mafia-boss Jeon Jung Kook finally squeezes out some time from his tight schedule for a late-night reunion with Jimin, Jin and Hoseok alongside his spouse Kim Tae Hyung at a local snooker pool the gang had used to frequent in the past. It is located just around the corner of district #7 in Taehyung’s village and this popular recreational hotspot is usually sweltering with massive tons of puberty-reeking sweat-stenching school kids who have mischievously skipped lessons to hang out. However, this time, they won't have to worry about the usual public nuisance of a teenage crowd because wise Jungkook who also happens to have too much money on his hands has strategically pre-booked the entire recreational building for the day as a treat and dedication to his beloved seniors. As usual, Jungkook brings Namjoon wherever he goes for security purposes.

***
Two men in full black business suits sitting with deadpan faces in an air-conditioned billiard room staring into blank space looking expensive as hell.

Amidst the comfortable silence the one named Jungkook realizes that he forgets to mention something important.

“Oh right Namjoon, the people that are coming later don’t know that Taehyung is my wife and I’m not intending to break it to them today so don’t, in any case, do anything that might reveal the truth. I hadn’t told you this yet but just for your reference, Taehyung had adopted me a couple of years ago and these people are our gang mates. They think we are father and son so please help us get through with the temporary disguise.”

Two seconds for the words “father and son” to sink in before Namjoon starts to choke on his own saliva.

This is the first time Namjoon is hearing about Taehyung and Jungkook’s ex-relationship. Did Jungkook just say father and son?! Taehyung and Jungkook were FATHER AND SON?!?! Namjoon head spins momentarily for a few seconds but after some moments he manages to calm himself down with some professionally-trained breathing techniques.

Namjoon then proceeds to gently massage his temples. Mind-blowing reveals like this is not entirely foreign to Namjoon who has grown up exclusively in the mafia but every time when he gets to learn about a shocking fact he always dies a little inside.

“Yes boss. Loving how you are casually telling me this now.”

“Well, everything is in the past now so there’s no point in making a fuss over it,” Jungkook shrugs nonchalantly before continuing, “Oh right and one more thing - these people absolutely cannot know about our identities as mafia members so Namjoon, you’ll have to start acting more natural. Today, your role is my best friend and colleague from work, not my bodyguard so you’ll have to act that
part. Absolutely do not say “yes boss” to me later okay?”

While Jungkook is conveying his point, he looks sharply at Namjoon as he articulates his words and at moments like this, the 20-year-old boiyish Jungkook would suddenly exude the aura of a true grown-up mafia boss. Such a persona switch is somewhat amusing to Namjoon.

“Yes boss,” replies Namjoon in a flat monotonous tone, eliciting an eye-roll from Jungkook who has just told the older man not to call him boss.

Such is the interesting chemistry between a youthful mafia boss and his slightly awkward but stubborn bodyguard.

15 minutes later

“Boss, the session is arranged at 7pm and it’s already 730pm now. Why are they not here yet? This disrespect towards you is unforgivable.” Namjoon hisses disdainfully and he looks like he’s going to murder someone.

This is the first time Jungkook is the one doing the waiting and that isn’t very acceptable to Namjoon because to him Jungkook is king.

“Chill out Namjoon. They are not my subordinates and are people that I actually allow to disrespect me. In fact they are my seniors and I’m their junior. Besides, Taehyung told me this morning that the BANGTAN gang meeting might drag a little so it’s understandable. Also how many times have I told you not to call me boss? Just call me Jungkook already be it in front of others or when it’s just the two of us together like hell we’ve been friends for so many years and you’re older than me so seriously, cut the honorifics.”

Before Namjoon can respond, the door suddenly bursts open with 4 handsome gangsters barging in with style. Their charismatic leader Kim Tae Hyung is the first to emerge into view before the rest of his members. As usual, Taehyung’s stunning jaw-dropping visuals has Jungkook completely star-struck in place. Jungkook has just seen Taehyung this morning before they separated ways but still, every time he meets Taehyung again especially when it’s outside he can’t help but be instantly captivated by the exotic beauty before his eyes.
Indeed, every time Jungkook sees Taehyung he falls in love again and again and again.

On the other side of the room, Taehyung notices Jungkook’s gaze of admiration and discreetly sends a mischievous wink to which Jungkook’s face instantly lights up. In that moment, Jungkook actually forgets that the main purpose of today's outing is to catch up with the gang mates he hasn't seen for 5 years because his bombshell wifey Tae has just once again stolen all his attention without even remotely trying.

“AYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYY JEONGGUUKKKKKK AHHHHHHHHH!!!!!!!!!!!!” screams the sunshine Hoseok in profound excitement upon seeing and recognizing his long-lost home boy Jeon Jung Kook. Jungkook immediately jolts back into reality from his semi-hypnotized state upon hearing Hoseok’s earthquake-inducing howl and diverts his half-lidded eyes to the most hyper human in the room.

However, before Jungkook can even react, a wild Hoseok has already flown over to latch onto him like the violent carebear he is to which Namjoon flips out and instinctively springs into protective mode to safeguard his boss’s security. Hell, Namjoon almost pulls out a gun from his back pocket but somehow manages to restrain his automatic reflex in time. You are not a bodyguard now but Jungkook’s friend, Namjoon scolds himself in his mind as he painstakingly squeezes out an obviously forced and awkward smile. Namjoon hasn’t smiled in 2 years and the lack of practice is making his facial muscles exceptionally stiff.

“OH MAI GAAADDPPP...IS THAT OUR KOKIE?!?” wails a very dramatic Jin when his eyes finally finds the man resembling the baby Jungkook in his memory. Photos of the current Jungkook previously shown to them by Taehyung are all pale in comparison to the real-life version of adult Jungkook. Jin suddenly feels like a mother seeing her grown-up son for the first time in 29582904289 years and instantly has an intense desire to cry.

“Wow Kook, you look so different but in a good way,” the usually quiet Jimin can’t help but throw in a subtle compliment too upon seeing the all-grown-up muscle Kook. This kid never fails to sweep him off his feet in the past with his excellent fighting skills and talented dancing skills and up till today he continues to surprise him with what he can become. Jungkook is a true golden maknae of their team indeed. Jimin starts to reminisce the past and compose emotional poems in his mind in the process.
“Hi hyungs long time no see! And hi daddy~” Jungkook exclaims in delight as he flashes his toothy bunny innocent smile to everyone. That shy smile is characteristic of baby Kook but since Taehyung hasn’t seen that side of Jungkook in a while his first reaction is of course to chuckle in slight surprise and nostalgia.

On the other hand, Namjoon realizes that since the moment the gang enters he hasn’t been able to take his eyes off a particularly handsome member who currently still looks like he is going to cry.

Namjoon is suddenly all soft. He edges over to the boy who he doesn’t know is named Jin and passes a packet of tissue to him to which Jin takes it but also flashes Namjoon the “who-the-fuck-are-you” confused look. Jungkook notices the perplexed gazes Namjoon is getting from not just Jin but also from Jimin and Hoseok and immediately springs into a much needed introduction.

“Hey hyungs, this is Namjoon, my friend and colleague from work. He happens to be a pretty sick billiard player so I asked him to join us today. Also since we have 6 people now, we can have 3 vs 3 games without leaving anyone out. Namjoon this is Jin *points to Jin*, Jimin *points to Jimin* and Hoseok *points to Hoseok*,” Jungkook introduces Namjoon and the gang to each other in which two seconds later the wild Hoseok finally detaches himself from Jungkook only to violently reattach himself onto Namjoon who doesn’t know what the fuck is happening but he allows it anyway reluctantly.

Jimin looks at Namjoon with a slightly apologetic grin as if to say, “sorry, this is how my crush shows his welcome all the time huehue” whereas Jin starts to salivate as he becomes increasingly distracted by the smell of his takeaway pizza.

When no one is looking, Jungkook quickly sends a quick flying kiss to his wife to which Taehyung’s lips quirk up slightly in glee but otherwise maintains a straight arrogant face.

Well, it’s going to be a long day for the couple trying to act like they are father and son again~

***

After what seems like an eternity of catching up, the group finally decides to commence with a game.
Jimin quietly walks over to the untouched billiard table to set up the rack while Hoseok continues to socialize extensively with Namjoon. Namjoon has been pretty quiet during the catching up session and Hoseok needs to make sure that Namjoon isn’t feeling left out. In the meantime, Namjoon’s eyes keep flickering back onto the boy who he now knows to be named Jin. Jin is currently chunking pizza down his throat while smiling like the cutest little squirrel ever. Namjoon swears he has seen this particular scenario before sometime in his early life but he just can’t recall exactly. Also, Namjoon isn’t trying to be rude to Hoseok but he literally can’t take his eyes off Jin. Jin looks really familiar but he can’t remember where he has seen this boy before and it’s bugging him to pieces. 

Hmmmm where have I seen him before….. Namjoon thinks to himself and silently searches his memory data while Hoseok goes blah blah blah blah and occasionally Namjoon would glance back at Hoseok to nod in politeness only to look back onto Jin again.

Well, Hoseok may be exceptionally hyper but he is most definitely not dumb. He obviously notices where Namjoon’s eyes are floating towards and instead of getting offended his grin gets even larger.

Hoseok feels like he is starting to like this stone-faced and awkward Namjoon more and more.

***

In no time, a billiard pool game begins 3 vs 3 with Taehyung, Namjoon and Jin in one team and Jimin, Hoseok and Jungkook in another. All hold cue sticks and take turns to deliver their shots. While Namjoon is usually a sick billiard player, the distraction from Jin makes him less able to concentrate but overall he is still one of the better players within the group. Taehyung, on the other hand, is owning the game today with almost 100% pocketing rate. The smug smirk he sends to the other team says it all and the usually easy-going Hoseok suddenly gets all triggered.

“You watch out Taehyung,” Hoseok says with a voice two octaves lower and rolls up his sleeves exposing his chiseled biceps. His team can’t lose for nuts and he will fight to the end!

At this point a thing to note is that on the surface everyone looks as if they are just playing the game, but if you dig deeper you’ll notice that there is more to this game than meets the eye. These are some of the notable interactions and reactions that are happening during the session:

1. Jimin’s cute little smile when Hoseok successfully pocket two billiard balls at a particular angle. He gives a thumbs-up to which Hoseok comes over to ruffle his fluffy hair affectionately. Jimin blushes.
2. Namjoon’s curious gaze on Jin gradually intensifying into a hungry intense stare. When Jin bends over the table to deliver his shots, Namjoon swears his dick isn’t hard.

3. Taehyung is taking every opportunity to discreetly tease the shit out of Jungkook. Since Jungkook can’t do anything to him now, Taehyung might as well rise up to the occasion and be just a teeny bit naughtier than his usual obedient self at home.

He is going to get fucked no matter what later on at night anyway so it doesn’t really matter.

The light touches on Jungkook’s thigh somewhere close to his cock telling him to “move back a little Kook”, the frequent commands telling his “son” to run errands like fetching him water or giving him massages on his lower back and not to mention Taehyung keeps bending over the table when he jolly well knows that Jungkook is right behind him staring straight up at his glorious ass.

These are all done on purpose and when Taehyung notices Jungkook’s rigged breath and slight panting he just smirks in contentment and victory.

“You better stop it,” Jungkook whispers into Taehyung’s ears as an issue of warning one time when the others aren’t looking to which Taehyung looks up with an innocent face at Jungkook replying, “what are you talking about Kook? Ooh let me fix your tie it’s a little loose….” Jungkook then feels Taehyung touch him all over his chest and neck while “fixing his tie” and suddenly has an intense desire to fuck Taehyung into outer space.

Things take a quick turn when Jimin is suddenly hungry. He calls for a pause in game and puts down his cue stick.

“I need to grab some food at the convenience store, you guys can go ahead without me,” says Jimin casually before heading towards the exit door.

“Now that you’ve mentioned I’m actually hungry too. I’m going with you!” says Hoseok as he runs over to tail Jimin. Wherever Jimin goes, Hoseok goes.
“Wait I’m going too I want more food!” adds Jin who is literally dying for more snacks. Somehow the pizza just now isn’t satisfying all of his current cravings. He springs up to join Jimin and Hoseok who are currently heading towards the exit.

“Hey I haven’t had dinner too I’m ----” Taehyung hasn’t completed his sentence before Jungkook cuts in.

“Alright you guys go ahead then! Daddy please stay for a moment, I need to consult you on some billiard techniques since you’re so good in this. Jimin hyung, please help daddy get some food from the store too, thanks!” Jungkook requests innocently to which Jimin gives a thumbs-up in acknowledgement before Hoseok, Jin and Jimin finally disappears behind the door. Jungkook then glances over to Namjoon to send him the “I-need-to-fuck-my-wife-now” look to which Namjoon instantly gets the meaning of the secret signal.

“I’m grabbing some food at the convenience store too,” Namjoon states with a discreet smirk before chasing up to Hoseok Jimin and Jin in the hallway. He wants to spend more time with Jin anyway so he might as well leave Jungkook and Taehyung alone to have their window opportunity of sauciness. (Namjoon is Jungkook’s bodyguard but he doesn’t need to be constantly around Jungkook especially when there is no expected danger. However it is expected of him to always be in the close vicinity of his mafia boss in case anything happens so leaving to a nearby convenience store is acceptable in the mafia’s bodyguard code of rules.) On the other hand, Taehyung is totally clueless of what Jungkook is up to.

“So what do you want to consult me about? Kook come let me teach you. I’ve been observing you and I can safely tell you that the reason why you are not hitting the balls as well as me is because ----- AHHHHHH!!!!!”

RIP Taehyung.

***

Like a pokemon level up, baby Kook instantly transforms into muscle Kook when he’s alone with his wife. He grabs onto Taehyung’s waist and lifts Taehyung up, slamming him against the billiard table such that Taehyung is lying on his back and then proceeds to forcefully kiss and grind his hips
onto Taehyung. Taehyung flinches hard at the sudden manhandling but before he can even retaliate, Jungkook’s hands are already violently ripping off Taehyung’s top.

At this stage, Taehyung is already visibly alarmed. Very very alarmed.

“Wait Kook are you crazy?! We are outside now in a public recreational sports centre for goodness sake at least control your cock till we’re back home! Jimin, Hoseok and Jin might come back anytime!” Taehyung scolds desperately while Jungkook continues to devour Taehyung’s lips with not a single care in the world.

“I want you now. This is what you get for seducing me you fucking sexy bitch. I’ll be quick so don’t even try to resist,” Jungkook states firmly in impatience.

He then flips Taehyung over such that Taehyung is bending over the pool table and without warning, Jungkook proceeds to bite and suck onto Taehyung’s ears from behind to which Taehyung bucks and lets out a whiny yelp like a helpless little kitten. Remember Taehyung’s erogenous zone is his ears so when Jungkook does that Taehyung literally can’t handle. Throughout the process of devouring Taehyung from his ears to his neckline and then down to his now naked arching back, Jungkook doesn't forget to grind his cock into Taehyung’s clothed ass crack and yes, Taehyung can feel the hardening heat dangerously poking onto his behind eliciting low sensual groans from himself.

“Mmmmmm….fuck you for being so sexy….” Jungkook whispers profanity into Taehyung’s ears. He is clearly enjoying his time eating his delicious and sexy wife who two moments ago was still trying to resist him but is now greedily pressing his hips back onto his own hardening length.

Well, both are starting to love the impromptu sex that is about the happen.

Jungkook smirks at Taehyung’s impatient grinding and hastily puts two fingers into Taehyung’s mouth.

“Suck,” Jungkook instructs with a voice dropped 30492492 octaves lower before sending a solid hard spank onto Taehyung’s perky leather pants-cladded ass. He then enjoys the sight of Taehyung’s
meaty buns bouncing elastically post-impact before digging his fingers deep into Taehyung’s smexy ass cheek to establish dominance.

Taehyung does as he is told, sucking skillfully onto Jungkook’s fingers coating them with his saliva and in that process, Taehyung actually has the audacity to spread his legs even wider for his insanely turned-on husband who widens his eyes and almost ejaculates at the sight of his lustful wife.

“Quick Kook, before they come back. Fuck me before they’re back…” Taehyung encourages with too much impatience. He turns back to seduce Jungkook once again with his half-lidded yet fierce eyes and messy tangled hair looking like the most gorgeous chaos ever. Jungkook growls in desire upon witnessing this side of his wife. He swears sexed-up Taehyung is the death of him.

Unable to wait any longer, Jungkook hastily unbuckles Taehyung’s belt and pulls his leather pants all the way down to his ankles. A naughty perky naked ass comes into view. Jungkook smirks and drops lower. He then spreads Taehyung’s ass cheeks apart to reveal the excited little hole of Taehyung and proceeds to sink his face into Taehyung’s ass.

The moment Jungkook’s mouth crashes onto Taehyung’s hole sucking onto it like it’s the tastiest thing in the world, Taehyung is already long gone mewling and panting and shivering as he allows his husband to do the naughtiest and dirtiest things to him.

“Mmmmmm….this feels good….yes….yes….right there….like this….!” Taehyung moans incessantly at the pleasurable sensation given by his husband Jungkook’s skillful and flexible tongue like hell THIS MOTHERFUCKER HAS BEEN PRACTICING. Do remember that Taehyung is extremely vocal in sex so his mouth always runs unless it’s being filled up with something else.

After what seems like an eternity, Jungkook finally pulls away as he starts to prepare Taehyung with lube. Yes, let’s just establish the fact that Jungkook carries lube in his suit wherever he goes because chances are that outdoor sex happens 99% of the time. As he fingers and scissors Taehyung’s dripping and pulsating hole, he suddenly has an urge to try something new...

“Mmmmm….ahhhh... this feels so good…..fuck me with your fingers……mmmmm…….what’s that cold thing Kook?...... ?!?!?!?!?!!..... AHHHH!!!! OW OW OW OW OW OW!!!!” Taehyung suddenly cries out in pain and jolts in shock when he feels something other than Jungkook’s fingers being pushed into his entrance. Something huge, cold and round. He turns back in confusion to investigate the situation and almost fains upon seeing what Jungkook is doing.
“Hold still baby, you can take it. Don’t you dare move,” Jungkook says dominantly like an alpha male yet has a mischievous youthful smirk etched on his face as he pushes a FUCKING BILLIARD BALL into Taehyung’s entrance.

At this moment, semi-innocent Jungkook is being enlightened into a whole new kinky world as he finally understands what sex toys are for. Woahh…..look at that hole stretch and tremble around the solid ball…..look at the hole swallow the ball….Jungkook thinks to himself in new-found amazement. Yes, Jungkook is finally growing up and this moment officially kickstarts his journey of collecting all the 50 shades of grey.

Taehyung is of course horrified but when he tries desperately to escape and wriggle away because it’s too painful, Jungkook is like “nahhhh don’t even try” and holds a very helpless Taehyung down by pressing his lower back firmly in place, locking his legs around Taehyung’s so that the older man is unable to move an inch away from the billiard table. Taehyung face contorts into a agonizing look as he starts to question his purpose in life.

“Why Kook SERIOUSLY WHYYYYYYYY. Ahhhh fuck you it hurts...” Taehyung whines as he feels the billiard ball being slowly pushed into him. Usually BDSM enthusiasts use anal beads during sex but fucking Jeon Jung Kook starts at level 90000 using billiard balls 10X the size because he is mother fucking Jeon Jung Kook.

Jungkook’s smirk just grows wider at his wife’s misery. Every mafia boss in the world has a sadistic streak in them and so does our beloved Jungkook over here. When the ball is fully into Taehyung’s hole, Taehyung can’t help but start to sob quietly with violently trembling legs. Jungkook continues to push the ball deeper into Taehyung not letting Taehyung have a single moment to breath. Well, the bad boy of the century award goes to -------

“You are so mean..." says Taehyung in weak retaliation. Damn it, the sex is going so hot and then Jungkook just has to start bullying him again with something unforeseen. Fuck you, Jungkook, fuck you, Taehyung thinks to himself in slight humiliation.

“Oh baby… only for you~~ and who told you to make me so hard on purpose just now hmmm?” Jungkook whispers seductively into Taehyung’s ears and suddenly sends a solid hard spank onto Taehyung’s ass with his other free hand in which Taehyung shrieks and collapses onto the table in so much shock because with a ball in his ass even the slightest touch can make him cry in all that sensitivity. Yes, Jungkook is literally driving Taehyung crazy with all his unpredictable and extreme kinks. In fact, a standard billiard ball’s diameter is 2.25 inches whereas the universal average of the width of an erect penis is only 1.5 inches. Taehyung has a high tolerance for pain but with Jungkook he really can’t handle.
Unable to wait any longer, Jungkook finally pulls down his pants and hastily lubes his already throbbing hard cock. He then slowly pushes into Taehyung from behind without warning to which Taehyung jolts his hips so much and starts to actually cry with no restraints now. That’s right, Jungkook is currently entering Taehyung with a fucking billiard ball still inside Taehyung’s suffering ass. Well, since Jungkook is already mean, he might as well be mean to the very end.

“Ahh! Please please please wait ah what the fuck!” Taehyung screams and he can’t handle anymore. He already has difficulty taking Jungkook’s cock not to mention having another giant ball up his ass.

Choking on his tears, Taehyung tries to futilely push Jungkook's hips away but to no avail.

“Hold still, unless you want to be spanked more baby,” Jungkook warns as he holds Taehyung’s flailing arms and hips firmly in place. He then inserts the rest of his majestic cock into Taehyung who is literally balling his eyes out right now. Seeing that his wife is in misery, Jungkook proceeds to send kisses down Taehyung’s spine to comfort his visibly distressed wife but of course such gentleness is only for a flick second because in the next moment, Jungkook is already cupping his hands tightly onto Taehyung’s neck choking the shit out of Taehyung as he thrusts in rhythmically into his wife from behind.

Jungkook begins with slow but deep thrusts.

“You feeling it deep in there?” Jungkook still has the audacity to ask the obvious cheekily while his lower body continues to send in deep thrusts into his barely sane wife.

Taehyung feels very tensed at this current moment and ignores Jungkook’s question. He bites his lips tightly trying not to make a sound as his face contorts into expressions of slight anger and intense pain. He is still angry at Jungkook for bullying him like this and is currently planning how he can get back at Jungkook later at home with tears in his eyes.
Shit gets real when Jungkook starts to accelerate into Taehyung some minutes later.

_Slam! Slam! Slam!_ Jungkook’s balls slap mercilessly with each thrust onto Taehyung’s poor ass and on top of Jungkook’s cock-fucking, there is that silent secret weapon of a billiard ball discreetly rubbing in onto Taehyung’s prostate deep inside him so amidst the intense pain Taehyung is feeling there is also that pleasure from the profound prostate stimulation that is propelling Taehyung in reaching a new nervous high.

In fact, Taehyung is already screaming uncontrollably at the bipolar sensation with his neck and face fully red with veins popping out in physical shock after some time of fucking.

_“GOD PLEASE JUNGKOOK HELPPPPPPPPPPPPP IT FEELS GOOD BUT WHAT THE FUCK!!!!!!! F**K YOU AHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!”_ screams a wife in distress from the over stimulation which only serves to turn Jungkook on even more.

Taehyung feels like his nerves are going to explode while Jungkook continues with his teasing.

_“Hmmm baby I thought you said you were going to teach me some techniques? Am I supposed to hit the ball in this angle? *fucks hard onto a point in Taehyung* Or this angle? *switches angle and fucks hard onto another point in Taehyung* Or should I be doing it from here? *carries Taehyung from the table onto a nearby couch and continues with the pounding* Or should I do it like this? *flips Taehyung to face him up front and continues to fuck him in missionary* Hmmm baby what do you say?”_ Jungkook asks with his voice coated with so much lust and heat.

He then continues to bang Taehyung so hard such that the whole couch is vibrating from the force and when he sees Taehyung’s pitifully scrunched-up crying reddened face gritting his teeth looking sexy as hell a new dimension unlocks in him as he reaches down to mercilessly choke Taehyung while continuously fucking even harder into his wife. Remember that Taehyung crying from pain and pleasure is Jungkook’s biggest kink so when Taehyung does that he literally can’t handle. Jungkook is currently growling crazily like a beast now as he feels a powerful orgasm building inside his dick as he watches it slush in and out of Taehyung’s spent ass. Jungkook is so close, so close right now.

On the other hand, Taehyung is literally crying, shouting, panting and moaning feeling like he is in both heaven and hell at the same time. His eyes are permanently rolling from the lack of focus and his mouth drooling in saliva.
“I’m CUMMING!!!!!!!!” Jungkook screams after a few moments and nuts into Taehyung. A pool of cum is ejaculated into Taehyung who is currently spasming uncontrollably while murmuring absolute gibberish on the couch. The ball finally slips out of Taehyung’s hole along with the endless stream that is Jungkook’s cum and from there, an abused reddened hole comes into view. Yes, Jungkook has fucked Taehyung so hard into his intestines that the internal part of Taehyung’s gut is being pushed out to reveal his very swollen insides.

A rosebud comes into view.

"Jeon Jung Kook what was that all about?!” Taehyung screams while still panting from the sex.

Congratulations Jeon Jung Kook. You have achieved a whole new level of a legendary sexepisode with your tearful wife currently glaring at you in absolute fuck-you fury.

Please attempt to console your wife now who might actually murder you in the next 3 seconds if you’re not fully alert.

***

“Sorry baby I won’t do it again~” Jungkook says in a fake guilty tone while gently massaging Taehyung’s swollen hole. He holds Taehyung’s legs up and checks the region that he has just wrecked. Fortunately because of the preparation before hand there is no bleeding or internal damage inside Taehyung’s pretty little ass. Jungkook heaves a sigh of relief and comes up to Taehyung’s face, sending an apologetic long kiss onto Taehyung’s lips. Has he gone too far today?

Nahhh...Jungkook secretly regrets nothing. There’s nothing wrong to him when it comes to being rough in bed but of course he’ll always be a gentleman in other aspects of the marriage. Needless to say, Taehyung is currently frowning so pitifully in his previous reflexive tears but he kisses the love of his life back anyway. What can Taehyung do when his husband is so horny all the time? Also when Taehyung isn’t aware, Jungkook discreetly keeps the used billiard ball along with 2 unused ones into his suit.

“I’m fine…..suck my cock you bastard….You’ve ejaculated but what about me….?” Taehyung still tries to sound tough as he instructs in a shaky voice with tears still streaming down his face. Awww….Jungkook can’t with his cute porcupine of a wife. Jungkook does as he’s told and while he gives Taehyung a skillful sensual blowjob, his fingers continue to rub and massage onto
Taehyung’s swollen hole. Somehow the combination of both his ass and cock being played feels heavenly and Taehyung is magically healed after a while. In no time, Taehyung tenses up and quietly ejaculates into Jungkook’s mouth with a blissful moan and then immediately collapses motionless onto the table with absolutely no more energy left inside him.

***

Five minutes later Jimin Jin Hoseok and Namjoon returns.

“Sorry we took too long! Anyway the convenience store was closed and because we were really hungry we went to a nearby restaurant to eat first. Wanted to call yall but yall are not picking up. Anyway, this is Taehyung’s takeaway dinner...and oh…. is Taehyung sleeping right now? He must have been tired!” Hoseok says sympathetically.

On the other hand, Namjoon’s right eyebrow lifts 2 centimeters to express his feelings of amazement. What have Jungkook done? Taehyung actually passed out. Namjoon might need to start taking notes.

“Yeah I guess he is really tired from a long day. I shall send him home now.”

“Alright then. Let’s meet up sometime soon again Kookie,” Jin says in slight disappointment because the reunion has been short but otherwise he is understanding of the situation.

“Alright you guys go first. We’ll stay here for a moment to play a little more,” Jimin adds.

So their first reunion officially ends here. Jungkook gives each of his seniors a warm tight hug, issues his goodbyes, lifts Taehyung up and left with Namjoon. His baby Taehyung definitely needs a good rest after the intense sex.
A few moments later in the billiard room a very OCD Jimin is heard asking in slight confusion:

“Hey guys did y’all see any billiard balls lying around? There are three of them missing!”

---

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don’t have an account/are on incognito mode?
Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden__tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don’t forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
Chapter Summary

This chapter is the part one of "The Black Ceremony" trilogy.

Jungkook finally has the chance to bring Taehyung to the Black Ceremony, an annual key event where VIPs in the criminal underground aggregate to address and discuss illegal operations together under the leadership of Jungkook. However, Taehyung expresses reluctance to take a kiss from Jungkook during his opening speech and this small little joke spirals into something more serious thus creating some unnecessary tension between the couple.

― Holly Black, Black Heart

***

Location: Travelator from “The Mafia Origins” Secret Underground Headquarters Central Mansion leading towards the Central Ballroom

Date & Time: 1st January 2018 6:43PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28]

***

Every year on the 1st of January, the annual “Black Ceremony” would be held in the mafia secret underground headquarters in which all the big shots from the underground world would gather in one place at one time. It is a compulsory event for all those invited by the organizer i.e. The Mafia Origins and it is also the most prestigious gathering as far as the criminal world is concerned. Invites are sent out only to the most relevant VIPs including leaders of “The Mafia Origins”, regional mafia bosses of side territories, the biggest drug dealers from all over the world, the masterminds of the largest human and drug trafficking secret organizations and many more. The purpose of the gathering, besides for all attendees to maintain and establish connections with one another, is mainly for the current chief of The Mafia Origins i.e. head mafia boss Jeon Jung Kook to hold a beginning-of-the-year kickstarter speech. Just like how a country is controlled politically by the president or prime minister, the underground world is similarly controlled primarily by its biggest leader and king namely Jeon Jung Kook. In fact, everything mentioned in Jungkook’s annual speech has to be flawlessly obeyed and fulfilled as if it is the strictest mantra if not impending death would follow for those who remotely try to rebel against or ignore his words. Such is the power of the young and mighty Jeon Jung Kook - the most powerful leader of the underground world and undeniably the strongest influence and head of all illegal operations.
Currently it is 6:43PM, 17 minutes from the start of the ceremony. Taehyung and Jungkook have just left the central mansion on a travelator leading towards the central ballroom which is less than 10 minutes away from home. As usual, Namjoon follows faithfully behind like a shadow. While Jungkook-in-black is a usual sight, a suited-up Taehyung isn’t. In fact, this is the first time Taehyung is wearing a suit and hell, it is such a peculiar yet pleasant sight to behold. Needless to say Taehyung’s husband Jungkook can’t stop staring at the man he is holding hands with.

“Baby, you look too fucking hot in that suit,” blurts Jungkook bluntly.

Upon hearing that compliment, Taehyung cocks his head to the side and eyes his husband up close with a deadpan “duh” expression as if Jungkook’s saying the most redundant and obvious thing in the world.

“Thank you, but for your information - I’m always hot,” Taehyung replies shamelessly before his expressionless face melts into a confident smirk. Upon hearing Taehyung’s statement, Jungkook smiles in pride and nods slightly in agreement before reaching over to wrap his right arm around Taehyung’s waist. Taehyung sure is the hottest thing in the world to Jungkook. In fact, Jungkook can’t wait to show his beautiful wife off to everyone later.

In his previous 2 years as the mafia boss, Jungkook had never had a date to accompany him to the ceremony, he had never had a date to do a ballroom dance with him during the ceremony and most importantly, he had never had a date to share his moment of glory with him on his biggest day as a mafia boss but from this year onwards, things have changed because Jungkook finally has Taehyung by his side as his date for a lifetime. Today is the day for him to show his beautiful wife to his empire and also the day for him to show his empire to his wife and he absolutely can't wait any longer for that to happen!

“Anyway, you know that this is your first official public appearance in the mafia underground world right? The news of my marriage with you have spread far and wide and my subordinates from all over the world that haven't gotten a chance to see you during our wedding has been discussing and talking about meeting you. Are you nervous to be getting all these attention?”

“Honestly, no. What’s there to be nervous about? It’s just a ceremony with folks sitting around sipping wine and socializing. They won’t dare to do anything to me either since I’m your wife, at most they are going to steal a few glances at me and chat me up a little.”

"It's interesting how you call them "folks" when they're literally the baddest people in the world. I'm glad you aren't as nervous as I think you'll be but baby, what if I tell you that…*leans in on Taehyung and lowers his volume*... I'm going to kiss you in front of everybody later at the start of
the ceremony?” Jungkook whispers cheekily into Taehyung’s ears to which Taehyung immediately flinches upon registering Jungkook’s words. He pushes Jungkook away and sends him a disapproving look.

“You better not! I hate this kind of affection display so seriously NO. Kook you better be fucking kidding me,” Taehyung huffs and rolls his eyes. Hell, this unpredictable side of Jungkook is the most annoying to Taehyung like why does Jungkook always have to pull unforeseen stunts like this. Taehyung’s self-esteem and pride would never allow such embarrassing act to occur on himself especially since he is currently still new to being gay. In fact, the older man would rather Jungkook fuck him till he faints in an enclosed room than to display such intimate affection between them to the public.

Jungkook’s face instantly stiffens at his wife’s unwillingness and reluctance. Without warning, Jungkook forcefully grabs Taehyung over, tightens his arm around Taehyung’s waist and stares deep into Taehyung’s eyes with a gaze that can potentially cut souls. Taehyung shivers slightly at the sudden change in Jungkook’s aura and his confused look says it all.

“Who says you have a choice? You are my wife and you listen to me. I’m going to show the whole world that you are mine,” Jungkook states as a matter-of-fact with a firm possessive voice 390804984 octaves lower than before. There is a limit to Jungkook’s patience and his wife needs to learn how to submit to him.

Namjoon who is following behind them gulps in slight distress.

“But --- ”

“You are already my wife so why are you so unwilling to receive a kiss from me? Is it that embarrassing for others to see you as my wife?” Jungkook presses on and adds two more questions that instantly leaves Taehyung very speechless.

In fact, Jungkook’s sudden change in attitude has Taehyung shaken to the core. Taehyung stares in disbelief at the suddenly cheeky-turned-serious Jungkook with his mouth agape before melting into a catastrophic helpless expression. Taehyung realizes that Jungkook isn’t kidding around right now and he had meant whatever he had just said and currently Taehyung feels as if the whole world is crashing down onto his flustered self.

Being kissed in front of thousands of strangers and having to socialize with them afterwards?! No, fuck no! This isn’t about whether he is the wife of Jungkook or not but the fact that Taehyung is a man himself too makes him unable to accept himself being seen as someone else’s sexual property.
His pride as a man still can’t fathom that idea of being someone’s “wife” and although he is already married and in love with Jungkook, deep inside he still hasn’t resolve the conflict of himself being the submissive one in a relationship. Taehyung suddenly has an intense desire to run back to the central mansion.

“But --- please Jungkook I'm not ready to show the weak side of myself.”

“No buts and how does being kissed equate to being weak? I won't have you reject me later and that's final.”

Taehyung starts to become desperate.

“Kookie please don’t do it, like how am I going to face anyone anymore!” knowing that he is unable to win the fight against stubborn Jungkook, Taehyung resolves to using a more high-pitched whiny voice to persuade Jungkook which he knows is his husband’s favourite as a last-resort strategy.

“No calling me Kookie and aegyo won't help you this time,” replies Jungkook in a flat monotonous tone. His decision is final.

“Ahhhhhhhrggggghhh!!!!” Seeing that Jungkook isn't giving way, Taehyung lets out a frustrated scream and stomps his feet repeatedly in frustration such that the whole travelator is quaking and tries to wriggle free from Jungkook’s grasp.

“Stop stomping if not it won’t be just a kiss. You jolly well behave if not I’ll fuck you in front of everyone.”

After Jungkook’s words land, Taehyung gasps in surprise and suddenly feels an intense desire to strangle the shit out of Jungkook. Yes, Taehyung has to concede that 99% of the time Jungkook is gentle and kind and even spoils him alot but when this dominant and stubborn side of him spills out Taehyung literally can’t handle. This side of Jungkook won’t show Taehyung any mercy or sympathy --- remember how Jungkook fucked Taehyung while shoving a billiard ball up his ass some time last year? Taehyung literally can’t walk for 2 weeks afterwards and since then he hasn’t dared step foot into a pool centre due to the trauma. Such inhumane craziness from Jungkook has to stop! Jungkook needs to start respecting his opinions too!
Remembering all these unpleasant memories just makes Taehyung even more disgruntled. To show his overt unhappiness, Taehyung continues to make a din, stomping his feet and thrashing around wildly in Jungkook’s arms like a child throwing a tantrum in which 2 seconds later Jungkook heavily sighs and forcefully throws his very agitated screaming wife over his shoulder and continues to walk steadily towards their destination. When Taehyung is being thrown and trapped over Jungkook’s broad shoulders, the first person he sees is Namjoon who has been walking behind all along.

OH RIGHT NAMJOON EXISTS.

“Namjoon help me! Jungkook is bullying me again! Please help me persuade him he only listens to you!”

“... I’m sorry, Taehyung-ssi.”

Taehyung gasps in hopelessness at Namjoon’s weak response. Even Namjoon can’t save him now. Upon that realization, Taehyung whines before giving up and flopping motionless over Jungkook’s shoulders.

Feeling his wife softening in his embrace, Jungkook can only let out a deep sigh. *Today’s going to be a long day indeed,* Jungkook thinks to himself silently. He is in fact deeply hurt that Taehyung is so reluctant like hell it’s only a kiss! *Does Taehyung have to be so dramatic like this? Am I not deserving to be the one kissing you?* Jungkook thinks to himself, utterly dejected, deflated and disappointed.

As Jungkook submerge into all these rather dispiriting thoughts, what he doesn’t know is that the biggest headache that is about to come soon isn’t actually Taehyung’s reluctance. In fact, the kiss that he is about to deliver to Taehyung later on is going to severely break a certain someone’s heart and spike a havoc of a raging jealousy fit in that someone. That kiss will ruin that someone and shatter his last bit of sanity into pieces. That someone - he is too obsessed with Taehyung for his own good. That someone who holds a smile on the exterior but is already profoundly broken deep within beyond repair because of his uncontrolled infatuation. He will not have mercy, and he will not wait any longer.

While Taehyung and Jungkook are caught up in their own little domestic conflict, that someone will take the chance to act today. He will begin his plan tonight...
It is notable to mention that Jungkook’s most trusted teacher and friend Park Seo Joon is on the invite list.

“Unhappy people can be very dangerous, don’t forget that.” — S. E. Lynes

Twitter: @hidden_tracks (two underscores)
The Black Ceremony Pt. 2

Chapter Summary

Taehyung does something unexpected to Jungkook to save his pride.

Chapter Notes

See the end of the chapter for notes

“I love you so much that nothing can matter to me - not even you...Only my love - not your answer. Not even your indifference.” — Ayn Rand, The Fountainhead

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Secret Underground Headquarters Central Ballroom

Date & Time: 1st January 2018 7:02PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28]

***

2 minutes after the big ben strikes 7, two men walk hand in hand into a 50,000-square-metres-large ballroom the size of an indoor concert stadium and the moment the couple set foot into the extravagant room you can literally hear the sound of necks snapping as thousands of guests direct their attention towards the venue entrance to witness the arrival of the most important couple of the night - Jeon Jung Kook and his wife who was made known to be named Kim Tae Hyung. It is certainly not the first time many of them VIPs who have attended last year’s ceremony have met the recently elected mafia boss but it is most certainly their first time setting eyes on the legendary man that is Kim Tae Hyung who has been rumoured by those who attended the mafia boss's wedding to be the most beautiful man in the world.

Voices start bustling in the previously tranquil room as excited discussions bubble among social groups at the sight of the mafia boss’s wife.

“Oh dear Christ! The mafia boss’s wife is indeed beautiful and there I was, wondering why any man would marry another man but now I think I get the appeal,” says a dangerous-looking man with a full facial skull tattooed on his profile like a skeleton mask. Puffing out a mouth full of smoke from his cigar, he stares down at Taehyung like a piece of meat on display, scrutinizing the man from afar with a slightly amazed expression and after awhile begins to furrow his brows and shake his head in disbelief. How can a man be this beautiful? Unbelievable.
“I think the same as you. Though I have only one eye left but I’m seeing him very well,” says a 190m tall 40-year-old man in a beanie and a pirate’s eye patch currently smoking some pot next to Mr. Skull. Mr. Skull and Mr. Pirate are regional mafia bosses from different continents currently conversing in different accents of English. Both Mr. Skull and Mr. Pirate have lived life to the fullest for 40+ years. Both have been 100% straight for 40+ years and both have a fair share of women to play with in their 40+ years of existence but it is also the case that both can’t be gayer than this particular moment in their life at the sight of Kim Tae Hyung.

On the other hand, many women in the room, most of them being wives of esteemed guests either gawk in awe at Taehyung or shoot flames of jealousy at him. However, they all think one thing in common: HOW THE FUCK IS IT POSSIBLE FOR A MAN TO LOOK THIS GORGEOUS?!

Indeed, Taehyung’s exotic beauty is something else in this world. The 28-year-old man is cladded in a chic black suit today, exuding a perfect aura of graceful elegance from head to toe and to accompany his well-proportioned not-too-muscular-but-not-too-slim body is an unscathed rare gem of an ethereal face that cannot be possibly rivalled by anything else in this world. His sharp features and intense gaze are complemented by the softness of his lips and velvety hair making him look like the most bipolar yet finest thing that has ever existed - someone that is delicate and soft yet strong and powerful at the same time. Such mysterious charms and unforeseen beauty instantly sparks significant interest in the thousand of guests present in the large arena and it can be safely said that the presence of Taehyung alone has already taken the place over by storm within seconds of his appearance.

Zooming in on Taehyung and Jungkook.

“Come on Taehyung, don’t frown like this. Don’t ignore me - give me smile hmm? Say something hmm?” Jungkook tries to coo his sulking wife gently who is visibly still very angry at Jungkook for disrespecting his wishes a few moments ago. Since throwing a tantrum didn’t work, Taehyung has resorted to using a “cold battle” method and for some reason this 180-degree attitude shift is really working wonders on Jungkook who is visibly very concerned now. Jungkook and Taehyung are currently holding hands like the sweetest couple ever walking towards the stage where Jungkook will be delivering his opening speech but if you dig deeper you’ll be able to tell that this couple has most certainly just had a fight from the seething tension that is observably steaming between the both of them.

Taehyung holds his nose high and continues to ignore Jungkook. Amidst his displeasure towards his husband, Taehyung manages to take a few quick glances around the massive room and he realizes in surprise that Jungkook is absolutely right. This bunch of guests is definitely not some ordinary “folks” you get to see around your neighbourhood. In fact, they all look like they’ve just took a trip over to hell, survived, and then happily made their way over to this glamorous ceremony as a celebration. Some of them have extensive scars all over their faces and bodies, some have tattoos decorated all over them, some look like they are permanently on steroids with their chunky muscles
threatening to break out from their tight suits and some look like they have been high on drugs for quite some time with the deranged way they are acting. A room full of crazy people, oh how lovely. Taehyung sure as hell doesn’t want to be forcefully kissed in front of all these crazy strangers currently eyeing him down like he’s some sort of expensive item on display.

“Don’t be angry Taehyung, please?” Jungkook attempts to soothe his wife again to which the quietly sulking Taehyung suddenly snaps and hisses back in annoyance, “then don’t kiss me in front of all these weird people later for fuck’s sake!”

Honestly, this “kissing” thing is just a teeny little issue but what is making Taehyung truly upset is that Jungkook has disregarded his feelings and opinion on this matter. Just like how little issues are magnified when people get closer in marriages, this tiny little conflict that has just arised is also being intensified by the differences in the way Jungkook and Taehyung show affection towards each other. At the young age of 20, Jungkook is undeniably still immature when it comes to matters of his love life and being in his first relationship, Jungkook is at the stage where he is constantly trying to seek external validation of his marriage to Taehyung from both Taehyung himself and the people around him. On the other hand, Taehyung is already 28 years old and turning 30 soon. He has dated a million of times before and to him, there is absolutely no need for him to declare his love outrightly to the world. As long as Taehyung knows that he loves Jungkook, then it means that his love for Jungkook exists. He loves Jungkook and he knows it and that’s all that matters, case closed but this isn’t the case for Jungkook.

Upon hearing his wife’s statement, the previously disheartened Jungkook is finally full-blown depressed.

“Okay fine I won’t do it then...but really I just wanted to show everyone that I love you very much…and that you love me back too...” dominant Jungkook has turned into gentle Jungkook awhile ago to soothe Taehyung and finally now Jungkook has completely melted down into a pitiful bunny as he replies Taehyung with the gloomiest voice ever looking like he’s actually going to cry anytime soon. Although it has been 4 months after the marriage, Jungkook still feels rather insecure about Taehyang’s love towards himself. Nothing can change the fact that he has forced Taehyung at gunpoint into the marriage without Taehyung’s consent and although Taehyung did eventually confess that his love to Jungkook some time after the marriage, Taehyung rarely shows it and sometimes Jungkook just finds it so hard to believe that Taehyung actually loves him. Taehyung is a man so cold and proud and once in awhile he would show his vulnerable side but the occurrence of such moments were rare. To add on, Taehyung’s unwillingness to be kissed today just fuels Jungkook’s insecurity to no ends and currently Jungkook is so painfully hurt by Taehyung’s lack of spontaneity. Maybe Taehyung doesn’t love me as much as I love him, Jungkook thinks irrationally to himself and to be honest, Jungkook is no doubt still very young at the age of 20 and fresh as fuck into his first relationship that has only been real for 4 months so realistically he is going to feel insecure when he is denied of affection from his partner.

On the other hand, Taehyung notices Jungkook’s sudden drop in energy from the way he speaks and instinctively turns over to eye his husband only to see a severely hurt Jungkook staring back at him
with some helpless bunny eyes looking as if he might break down anytime soon. Taehyung gapes in what-the-fuckness. Literally 10 minutes ago this man in front of him had manhandled him over to this ballroom and then 5 minutes ago he had converted into a soft gentleman and now he becomes a helpless bunny?! Unbelievable. Still, Taehyung loves his beloved Kook to pieces so his heart pangs a little at the sight of his hurt husband but of course he doesn’t show it as usual what’s new.

“Get your shit together Kook. You’re about to deliver your speech to the masses and no you’re still not allowed to kiss me.”

Pouty Jungkook breaks into a sheepish grin. “Oh man I was hoping to buy you over with some sympathy points.”

“You must be delusional to think this is going to work.”

Jungkook sighs but continues trying.

“Baby let me give you a smooch later. Please.”

“No.”

“Babyyyyyyyy”

“No.”

“Babyy plieeeasEEEeeeee”

“You little shit >:(”

None of the guests will ever know that these two men are engaging in a retarded conversation.
While discreetly speaking bullshit and making faces to each other, Taehyung and Jungkook finally reach a small circular platform cornered with metal railings which according to Jungkook is the supposed stage. Taehyung is somewhat confused standing inside the unimpressive platform.

“Why is this stage so small? And how is everyone going to hear you talk from here like there’s no -- -”

Before Taehyung can complete his sentence, Jungkook reaches out and presses an activating button inside the platform to which 3 seconds later a loud engine sounds and the platform suddenly starts to shoot up 920482390 metres higher into the air.

“Woah!” Taehyung exclaims and is instantly amazed. The level one stage instantly rises to level 9000 stage. After the stage stabilizes at a substantial elevation above the ground, a hanging mic is suddenly dropped and released in front of them to which Jungkook swiftly grabs it suavely and holds it in front of his mouth. Feeling like a rock star in front of his most beloved wife, he sends a quick wink to Taehyung before beginning his speech.

“It’s been a long time people, I hereby welcome you to the black ceremony 2018,” Jungkook articulates with a deep and calm tone to which the whole ballroom of guests that are looking up at the stage in anticipation start to clap and roar furiously in excitement. Currently, Jungkook is speaking in the universal language that is English and Taehyung isn't understanding a single word that is coming out of Jungkook’s mouth so instead he just stands there in absolute Jungshookness. He literally has no idea what the fuck is going on.

Clapping and shouting.

“Boss how you doing! Looking good after the marriage!”

“Your wife is gorgeous!”

“Ayyyyy we’ve missed you boss!”

After immersing in celebrative greetings for 30 seconds, Jungkook decides that he’s heard enough greetings and holds up his palm to signal “okay I love y'all but shut the fuck up” to which the whole place quiets down to zero noise level with soundwave disturbances so small you can hear a pin drop.
“My fellow men and women, today is the day again. Firstly I would like to thank all of you for coming down and I hope you are honoured to be in the most important event of the year. Before I start my speech proper to address some of the concerns raised and changes I would like to propose, I would first want to introduce all of you to my beautiful newly-wedded wife, Taehyung,” Jungkook pauses for a moment and looks over at Taehyung before continuing, “who I love very much.”

Then, after his words land, Jungkook suddenly starts to close in on Taehyung and Taehyung is just over there like WHAT THE FUCK IS HE GOING TO KISS ME NOW?!

Unbeknownst to Taehyung, Jungkook just wants to pass the mic over to him for Taehyung to say a few words be it in English or Korean before Jungkook starts his official speech to the masses. Jungkook isn’t really going to kiss Taehyung anyway since Taehyung’s outright refusal to his advances has killed all his mood and excitement in doing so.

On the other hand, the clueless Taehyung totally misinterprets the situation and is currently killing all his brain cells trying to conjure up an emergency plan on how to avoid the embarrassing situation specifically being forcefully kissed at all cost now that he is seeing Jungkook slowly approaching him. Time slows down as his brain signals speed up in alarm oh my god WHAT DO I DO I’M TRAPPED ON AN ELEVATED PLATFORM WITH JUNGKOOK WHAT DO I DO TO NOT APPEAR SUBMISSIVE AND WEAK WHAT DO I ----

Suddenly, an idea pops up in his brain.

There is only one way: KISS JUNGKOOK FIRST. NOW.

The eureka moment slaps Taehyung hard in the face and there’s no more time to contemplate the consequences of his last-resort plan.

Fuck it, just do it.

Without warning, Taehyung closes in on Jungkook, grabs onto his face and kisses him so forcefully on the lips to exert dominance.

In that instant, time freezes.

Eyes are widened.
Jaws are dropped.

Breaths are held because the whole room of guests that is witnessing this shit right now literally can’t breathe at all.

What the fuck just happened? Did the wife who was supposedly forced into the marriage at gunpoint just…?!

Namjoon who is monitoring the whole situation from underneath the stage gets the shock of his life too. He doesn’t remember Taehyung to be anywhere near this spontaneous and open. He hastily yanks off his sunglasses to get a good look of the scene and unsurprisingly break his glasses in the process from the sheer force of pulling. Then two seconds later his shocked face breaks into a glorious smirk. “Ooooh la laaaa...” Namjoon mutters underneath his breath in satisfaction, tosses his useless broken sunglasses aside and resumes his bodyguard of a blank state as if nothing happened as he stands there with a deadpan face in absolute attention.

Zooming in on Taehyung and Jungkook.

Jungkook thinks he has just been promoted to heaven. Did his wife just kiss him first? In front of everybody?! Jungkook can literally die a happy man now because this is literally his biggest fantasy to be outrightly loved so passionately by Taehyung. He truly wishes that this moment never ends - the Taehyung that is so spontaneous, unhindered and so honest with his love. In that moment, Jungkook drops the hanging mic in his hands and grabs onto Taehyung’s waist and kisses him back like there’s no tomorrow. Fuck the speech. His wife just kissed him and he needs to kiss him back and suddenly, both of them are alone again in their own world, kissing as if no one is looking.

Love is this simple, both have to give and receive. When one person is always the one receiving, the other one who is constantly giving will feel tired and rejected. Today Taehyung has somehow unintentionally broken this downward spiral of a destructive pattern by simply being the first to show love. He doesn’t know that this means the whole world to Jungkook who has been hiding all that insecurity in his heart to appear tough in front of Taehyung. Taehyung doesn’t know that a simple kiss of affection can make Jungkook feel so alive from his skin all the way deep into his bones. In fact, Taehyung is currently just thinking about how he has won victoriously over the unsuspecting Jungkook with the genius plan of his without knowing that Jungkook feels like he’s winning too. It is a win-win situation for the two of them lovebirds right now indeed.

“AWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWWW is the only thing coming out of people’s mouth for quite awhile in the ballroom because Taehyung and Jungkook literally look like the sweetest couple in the whole world. The fact that the mafia
boss's forced marriage can end happily like this is a pleasant surprise to all and they genuinely wish the best to the newly-wedded couple.

However, there is one person in the room that isn’t liking this scene very much. Somewhere beneath the stage, the sound of glass splitting is heard: a man none other than Park Seo Joon who is watching all of this from ground level has just shattered a wine glass purely with his grip.

“I desire to be with you. I miss you. I feel lonely when I can't see you. I am obsessed with you, fascinated by you, infatuated with you. I hunger for your taste, your smell, the feel of your soul touching mine.” — Jack Llawaylynn, Indulgence

---

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don’t have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden__tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don’t forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~

Chapter End Notes

Oh c'mon VKOOK! What is this overt PDA can y'all get a room please?! Anyways I'm glad they've resolved their little kiss "fight" but by next chapter onwards there will be less fluff and more danger coming up because Seo Joon is in the area! Tell me what you
think about this fluffy chapter in the comments down below and stay tuned for pt. 3 of the black ceremony~ Peace out my readers :)
Seo Joon finally meets and interacts with a mortified Taehyung + Taehyung having a mental breakdown during sex with Jungkook due to all the chaos that happened during the black ceremony. Amidst the angst, Taehyung requests to top Jungkook.

“I love you as certain dark things are to be loved, in secret, between the shadow and the soul.”—Pablo Neruda, 100 Love Sonnets

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Secret Underground Headquarters Central Ballroom

Date & Time: 1st January 2018 7:15PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28]

***

Taehyung and Jungkook are still kissing.

Smooch.

Slurp.

Smooch.

Slurp.

Smooch.

After a solid 3 minutes, Taehyung is starting to feel a little awkward because although the kiss started
out sweet, it has unfortunately evolved into a violent situation in which Jungkook is currently eating into his mouth like a savage. Taehyung can’t possibly pull away either because Jungkook is hugging onto him so tightly like a carebear on drugs. On the side note, yes the guests started out purring “awww” but no real tough junkies associated with the mafia would continuously make fangirl noises for some 3 full minutes unless they are absolutely fucked out of their minds. In reality, kissing passionately in front of a large pile of audience is usually much more awkward than what you see in romance movies especially when the kiss seems like it’s going on for an eternity. In fact, the “awww” from the guests has long faded out into a soul-sucking silence and currently the whole ballroom is dumbstruck as turk watching the married couple PDA in absolute jungshookness.

Obviously Taehyung is aware that the kiss has been lasting far too long than good.

“Yah…!” Taehyung hisses softly in exasperation to the visibly still-in-the-zone Jungkook. For goodness sake we’re not in our own room Jeon Jung Kook wake the fuck up! Taehyung thinks to himself as he tries to discreetly break free from his husband but to no avail. Unfortunately, Jungkook is in a trance where he is feeling himself and to a certain extent he wants this kiss to last forever so nah he’s not going to want to snap out of it anytime soon. When Taehyung finally starts to outrightly push the shameless leech that is his husband Jungkook away, the mischievous Jungkook persists to hold and kiss onto Taehyung for another solid 30 seconds despite Taehyung’s struggles before letting go with a satisfied smirk. By that time the pumped-out Taehyung is already breathless big time as he proceeds to gasp frantically for fresh air once free. On the other hand, the first thing Jungkook does after releasing Taehyung from his grasp is to adjust his shirt, grab onto the hanging mic again and shove it straight up to Taehyung’s face.

“Baby say some greetings,” Jungkook whispers to Taehyung affectionately.

Taehyung is still choking on air from the kiss when the mic is suddenly shoved into his face. Before he can react, the first thing he hears is himself panting uncontrollably through the blasting mic being held near his throat to which he instantly tries to cover his mouth while still coughing profusely. In the process of lifting his hand to cup his mouth, he accidentally slams the mic which is held by Jungkook just next to his mouth right smack onto his bare lips producing a loud “boom!” sound causing Taehyung to wince in unexpected pain but most importantly he starts to burn in absolute mortification after registering the embarrassing body gag that he has just done. Hell, he can’t believe he had just accidentally slapped a mic into his own face in front of thousands of mafia thugs! The excessively prideful Taehyung wails internally in shame. Jungkook, on the other hand, just chuckles in absolute amusement and fondness towards his jumpy wife and continues to hold the mic at Taehyung’s bruised lips. Why is this person my husband?! Taehyung thinks to himself in desperation and feels an intense desire to strangle Jungkook to death. No he doesn’t want to greet anybody, he just wants to vanish into thin air right now.

Mortified at his own discomposure, Taehyung retreats a few steps till he reaches the darker part in other words the back corner of the tiny stage stealthily trying to escape from view. Of course he knows he is still visible to everyone being 3420284902380m above the crowd but it makes him feel slightly better somehow. When he reaches the “backstage”, he heaves a sigh of relief and as his
breathing patterns slowly resumes normal. To appear unfazed, Taehyung clears his throat and runs his fingers through his hair like how a prince would do being all like “it’s cool it’s cool I’m good” but soon proceeds to lower his whole face into his palms as he enters the what-the-fuck-I-can’t-believe-what-just-happened mood. He is visibly in distress and he doesn’t want to talk at all. Did I just think it’s a great idea to kiss Jungkook in front of everyone? Did I just slam a mic into my face in front of the whole crowd? Wow. Ok nevermind, I’m now inside my safe comfort zone that is my hand-shield, Taehyung deludes himself as he shuts his eyes and adopts an ostrich method to the mortifying situation. Never in his life as a BANGTAN leader and gangster has such embarrassing situation happened to him before. Yes, Taehyung literally hides his face behind his hands as a solution oh god somebody help him.

At that moment, Jungkook thinks he might actually die from a cardiac arrest thanks to Taehyung’s unintentional cuteness. The crowd is also amused but in a good way.

“Baby, knock knock, don’t play peekaboo now,” the mic-holding Jungkook hums smoothly in a soft volume such that only Taehyung can hear him as he follows Taehyung to the “backstage”. He then knocks cheekily onto Taehyung’s “hand-shield” as if it is a real door before lowering his voice to whisper, “stop wrecking my heart being so delicious and say something in English or Korean to my people.”

“No, bye. Go do your speech now and ignore me.”

“Where’s the BANGTAN gang leader in you now hmmm Kim Tae Hyung?”

The moment Taehyung hears “BANGTAN leader” he immediately springs alive, pops out from his shell that is his comfortable hand-shield and glares vehemently at Jungkook. Grrrr... why can’t Jungkook just ignore me and continue on with his speech? Can’t he see that I just want to stand at the back and avoid attention? Taehyung thinks to himself in annoyance.

Despite his unwillingness to speak a word to all these strangers, Taehyung still needs to protect his own esteemed title as the BANGTAN gang leader in Jungkook’s heart. How dare Jungkook challenge him for goodness sake Taehyung was once Jungkook’s gang leader and daddy back in those days. Say something in English and Korean right? No fucking problem. Taehyung has to concede that his english vocabulary is limited but being an avid binge-watcher of British dramas such a task is not entirely impossible. Taehyung confidently grabs the mic that Jungkook is holding onto his own hands and props it against his mouth. Taking in a deep breath, he blurts in a flat monotonous tone: “Annyeonghaseyo I am a Jungkook waifeu. Erm. My name is Kim Tae Hyung. Erm. Hello goodnight okay finish bye bye.”
Taehyung completes his greetings in less than 2 seconds.

...

Silence.

...

Seeing how everyone including Jungkook is gawking at him in absolute jungshookness, Taehyung gives a firm nod before his blank face melts into a confident smile brighter than any star in the universe.

3 seconds of silence before chaos erupts.

“AWWWWWWWWWWW!!!!!!”

Cause of crowd death: a lethal overdose of Kim Tae Hyung’s cuteness.

***

Jungkook finally starts giving his speech after the commotion dies down. Unsurprisingly, his speech sounds more like directed commands phrased in a sophisticated and civilised manner but since he’s in a good mood, his tone seems to be slightly lighter and more relaxed as compared to how he had delivered his speech through the last two years. Time to time he glances to his side at a visibly bored Taehyung who looks like he’s going to fall asleep anytime now. In these moments, Jungkook can’t help but beam in happiness. His heart is so full today it feels like it will explode anytime because Taehyung’s actions and reactions today are just too epic to be true and all that together is enough for him to reminisce and laugh about for a lifetime.

Fast forward because it’s a long ass speech as Jungkook needs to condense a-year-long worth of plans into one talk.
2 long hours later he finally wraps up with a “thank you for listening. Let the party officially begin!” to which the crowd hurrays in excitement and Taehyung jerks alive from his semi-asleep mode.

*Lights dim.*

*Music drops.*

*Party officially begins.*

People mingle, dance, drink, gamble, smoke, take drugs and socialize. It’s an underground meeting attended by high-class criminals after all so illegal activities are bound to happen just that everyone are in suits and gowns today looking like the most expensive thugs ever.

Jungkook and Taehyung descends from the elevated platform in no time and begins walking around the area. People that pass them by all bow in respect before carrying on with their activities. Some steal glances at Taehyung and then mutter Amen or Allah or Amitabha depending on which god they preach because Taehyung up-close is just simply unreal. On the other hand, Taehyung can literally hear all of that and honestly he low-key doesn't like how the crowd is reacting but he doesn't do anything about it either. He pretends he doesn't see or hear anything and keeps his head high walking beside Jungkook.

“Come Taehyung, let me introduce you to some of the most important people in the underground world. You see that big bald guy smoking weed over there? *points at said guy* He is the boss of the russian drug cartel and we call him the cyborg. His left arm and right leg are replaced by robotic parts manufactured by the newest technology in science and development but the interesting thing is that he did the surgeries without a previous loss of limbs meaning he actually replaced his completely healthy arm and leg with robotic parts just so he can shoot bullets out from his limbs. Respect.”

“Wow that’s another level of craziness but why am I not surprised.”

“He sure is one hell of a mad man. That person in a wheelchair over there *points at another person* is known as Professor X. He became paralysed in a gang war a few years back but he still remains as the most powerful criminal mastermind of the Mediterranean sea - he is the mentor of the Albanian mob’s mafia boss and he controls at least 3 pirate clans in the region.”

“Woah cool as fuck, but the nickname is so unoriginal. Just saying.”
“Pirates don’t take creative brainstorming classes my dear baby. Anyway, that person over there is
the most important person I’m going to introduce to you about so listen carefully - *points to Seo
Joon* His nickname is Tiger but I call him by his name Seo Joon since we’re close. He works under
me in the mafia origins itself and is one of the main pillars of our organisation. I appreciate and
respect him a lot. In fact, he’s my assigned martial arts and combat techniques teacher for 3 full years
after I returned to the mafia 5 years ago. Nobody in the underground world has ever won in a ring
battle against him, let that sink in. To be honest he’s the real master to me and I admire him for his
strength and power. We spar regularly up till today, sometimes I lose, sometimes I win when I’m
lucky but each time I can guarantee you that I’ll learn something new. The girl beside him is his
girlfriend, Go Ara. She is a lieutenant too and she leads the female army in the mafia origins.
Although she’s fierce when instructing, she’s usually a bubbly and easygoing girl. Oh look he’s
looking over at us now,” Jungkook elaborates as he sends a nod to Seo Joon. Seo Joon smiles back
and gives a nod of acknowledgement to Jungkook before his eyes slowly trail onto Taehyung who is
currently staring back at him in absolute horror. Seo Joon smiles.

“...”

“Taehyung?”

“...”

“Wifey you ok why is your face suddenly so pale?”

“...”

“Oh look Seo joon and Go Ara are walking over to us right now let's go say hi. Come to think of it I
haven’t had time to introduce you guys to each other.”

Taehyung’s head is spinning. He finally recovers from his initial shock and majorly flips out in
distress.

“No oh my god Kookie let’s go home please please please...” Taehyung pleads with his life. He has
never been so mortified before in his entire life. The night after he had rejected Seo Joon, Seo
Joon disappeared and Taehyung was so confused and in fact he had never gotten to know where his
suitor for years namely Seo Joon had went. It was as if Seo Joon vanished into thin air. At that time,
Taehyung was good with it and happy with it even but he’ll never in his life dream that he’ll meet
Seo Joon again in this current situation. Remembering how he had told Seo Joon that he isn’t gay but
look who’s the gay one now? It’s not that Taehyung is ashamed to be gay because he really loves Jungkook but the fact that the tables are turned now with Seo Joon having a girlfriend and him being married to a man and adopting a submissive role just makes him feel so sick. Also, the fact that he had kissed Jungkook in front of Seo Joon just now and the fact that Seo Joon knew that he was Jungkook’s wife - it is as if Seo Joon was right about him from the very beginning - the notion that Taehyung is pretty and submissive just like a girl seems to have been proven true and he is actually someone’s else wife now and Seo Joon, the boy who has been teasing him about him looking like a girl, knows it. Seo Joon is a good friend of Jungkook even. At that moment of realization, Taehyung’s last bit of pride shatters into pieces.

“What’s with you...are you feeling unwell? Just a short 5 minutes talk with my friends and we’ll be back ok baby.”

Right after Jungkook completes his sentence, Seo Joon and Go Ara arrives in front of them. Up close Taehyung can see that Seo Joon is visibly more built now, bigger than Jungkook even and has attained a sense of maturity unforeseen in the previous Seo Joon he knew. His girlfriend Go Ara is a stunner as well cladded in a simple but elegant black dress. Taehyung internally cringes so bad at the situation right now but on the surface he stands tall and flashes a forced grin. On the other hand, Jungkook notices in shock that Seo Joon’s right hand is red with blood. He doesn’t know that Seo Joon has just crushed the wine glass he is holding with his bare hand when he saw Taehyung and him kissing on the stage awhile earlier.

A four-way conversation begins.

Seo Joon: “Good evening Jungkook and … Taehyung-ssi.”

Go Ara: “Good evening to our almighty boss and your lovely wife. Wow Taehyung-ssi you’re really pretty I’ve heard so much about you from others and I am so happy to finally meet you in person today.”

Taehyung dies even more when Go Ara, a girl herself, is calling him pretty. His grin cannot be more plastic than this moment but still he maintains eye contact with Go Ara because he’d rather look at her than to look at Seo Joon. Jungkook flashes an apologetic smile at Taehyung who he knows doesn’t like to be called pretty but of course Jungkook doesn’t blame Go Ara - she’s always a straightforward person and she definitely means her statement as a compliment because she doesn’t know Taehyung’s character and personality well.

Taehyung: “Good evening Ara-ssi. Thank you.”

Jungkook: “It’s nice to meet you two again after a long while. Yes this is my wife Taehyung but Ara honestly my wife doesn’t like to be called pretty so don’t say that again yeah. You can call him
handsome though I think he'll like that better and I was just going to ask: what happened to your hand Seo Joon?! It looks like a mess right there!"

Go Ara: "*sighs* Joon always accidentally destroys things with his strong grip and the wine glass today is no exception. *sighs again and looks towards Seo Joon* Joon ah, how many times must I tell you to be careful? It really doesn’t help if you keep gripping onto things as if they are your enemies’ necks like seriously our household items keep breaking because you can’t control your strength!"

Seo Joon smiles radiantly and apologetically at his caring anxious girlfriend who obviously doesn’t know that of all these 3 years they were together Seo Joon didn’t really love her a single bit in the romantic way. It’s all a disguise but of course she doesn’t notice a thing. Seo Joon is an expert at hiding his real emotions and intentions and even though at this point Seo Joon is already exploding internally with jealousy towards Jungkook and an intense yearning for Taehyung, he manages to maintain his calm demeanor perfectly not allowing a speck of his internal bitterness to seep out into the external world.

Seo Joon: “Sorry dear, I tend to forget sometimes and Jungkook ah don’t worry about it, this little scratch won’t hurt me.”

At this point Taehyung can’t take it anymore and suddenly cuts into the conversation. “Excuse me a moment...I’m going to the restroom it’s pretty urgent...you guys continue chatting. Kook I’ll be bad in no time.”

Before Jungkook can even react to say an “okay”, Taehyung literally runs away and escapes to safety.

He doesn’t even know where the restroom is yet.

***

Taehyung has found the restroom awhile ago and is currently alone inside splashing water onto his face. He really needs to calm down because since the start of the ceremony so much shit has been happening such that he isn’t even allowed some moments to breathe. Thank goodness this restroom is empty because he really needs his own personal space right now.

Suddenly someone enters the restroom and walks up to Taehyung from behind.

Through the mirror Taehyung clearly sees who is approaching and glares at the person through his
reflection. That person is none other than Seo Joon.

“Taehyung ah ---”

“What are you doing here? Did you follow me?”

Upon hearing Taehyung's aggressive tone, Seo Joon sighs before speaking.

“I just wanted to tell you something actually, please hear me out. I know I know, you’re probably wondering why I’m working here in the mafia origins. A few years back I’ve decided to start afresh in Seoul and somehow I landed a contract with the mafia origins because of my fighting abilities. Please don’t glare at me like this, I know I was pretty mean to you back then and said childish things that you didn’t like and I’m truly sorry but it’s been so many years, Taehyung. I was young and foolish back then so I hope you’ll forgive me like c’mon, we were like 5 years old then? Let’s not hold grudges okay? For Jungkook.”

Taehyung’s stiff facial expression softens slightly at the sincere apology. True though, it’s been so many years and Seo Joon seems to have grown up quite a lot too. In fact, from Jungkook’s description, Taehyung has come to know that the current Seo Joon is someone respectable in the mafia origins who has helped Jungkook a lot by teaching him how to fight well. Besides, Seo Joon is currently really polite and it seems like he isn’t holding a grudge against Taehyung for the cruel words Taehyung had said to him a few years back when rejecting him one night in the cold streets. He also isn’t poking fun about the fact that Taehyung is Jungkook’s wife and has been respectful about it.

Well, since Seo Joon isn’t even holding a grudge against me for saying those mean things, then it doesn’t make sense for me to be petty over our little childhood conflict right? Hell, I was actually the one that punched him in the first place back in the orphanage and we are currently also mutuals with Jungkook...Taehyung thinks logically to himself and he suddenly can’t find a reason for him to continue being angry at this man before him.

Taehyung turns around to face Seo Joon up front with a nonchalant demeanor acting like he isn’t affected at all.

“Well, all those are in the past already so don’t mention. I’m not that petty you know! I accept your
apology, though I’d need to apologise too for some things I did. I guess we’re even now huh? Also I’m happy that you’ve changed for the better to become stronger and more successful,” Taehyung elaborates with a casual tone and sends a bro-punch into Seo Joon’s chest before saying in slight surprise, “woah you seriously are something else now.” The chest muscles are no joke, Taehyung thinks and the last time Taehyung remembered Seo Joon is at least 3 sizes smaller than he is right now. Can people change this much in 5 years?! Taehyung thinks internally to himself in slight bewilderment.

Seo Joon almost dies at Taehyung’s casual compliment but of course he doesn’t show it. His heart races to an uncontrollable speed.

“Thank you Taehyung, all these are partly my luck too actually and also, congratulations on your marriage! Though I’m not too sure how you’ve gotten to meet Jungkook but Ara and I are truly happy for you two.”

“That’s a long story, will tell you another time if I have a chance. Hmmm… I gotta go back to Jungkook now he’s probably wondering why I’m taking so long. See you around.”

“Alright, bye, see you around Taehyung.”

Taehyung waves nonchalantly, turns and leaves without another word. Outside the bathroom he heaves a deep sigh of relief and feels lighter at heart instantly. Oh well, gaining a friend is always better than gaining a foe and he’s happy for what has happened.

On the other hand, Seo Joon who is still inside the restroom proceeds to take over Taehyung’s place at the basin as he splashes water frantically all over his face.

Seo Joon can’t believe Taehyung’s talking to him as friends now. He has waited for so many years to finally see Taehyung again and finally, after so many years, Taehyung is finally talking to him again. Is it even possible to fall even more in love with Taehyung? Seo Joon doesn’t know that it is possible until now. In fact, he is so in love again with Taehyung and he can’t help it and he can't stop it either. He wants Taehyung so badly it hurts.

Forgive me ah Taehyung, but I have to have you even if you hate me, Seo Joon thinks to himself as
he stares back at his own reflection with darkened sorrowful eyes through the mirror.

\[ \text{You are, and always have been, my dream.} \] — Nicholas Sparks, The Notebook

***

Later that night back in the central mansion after the ceremony, the VKOOK couple concentrates in 69 foreplay when Taehyung suddenly says something life-changing.

“Kook ah...let me top you.”

Jungkook who has been sucking earnestly instantly chokes on Taehyung’s dick. A heated discussion ensues.

“What?!”

“I've been thinking about it. I don't want to be completely submissive in our relationship.”

“What YOU SAY?! You’ve been thinking but I’ve seriously never thought about that.”

“Well it’s time to start thinking.”

5 minutes of silence. Their dicks soften. Jungkook breaks the silence after some moments of deep thought.

“My answer is no and that's final. Don’t even think about it because I’ll be topping you forever.”

After Jungkook's words land, Taehyung is devastated.

“Noooooo please Kookie! Just once? Today?”
“No. Seriously you’re smaller than me like please I can’t even imagine you topping.”

“What?! Hey hold your horses right there. Yes my dick is smaller than yours but it’s still pretty stud. Stop with this insult right now.”

“Erm I am referring to your body size.”

“Oh. Is it?”

To verify Jungkook's statement, Taehyung looks at himself then looks at muscle Kook to compare. After some moments Taehyung opens his mouth to rebut Jungkook but then shuts it again because he can’t find words to support his argument. Taehyung then diligently cross checks every part of their bodies again just to make sure he didn’t leave any evidence out but unfortunately after a few moments he realizes that Jungkook is absolutely right. Taehyung frowns.

“But Kook that’s not the point.”

“Yes it is.”

“If you want to compare it this way, then why aren’t I topping since I’m older? You are younger than me and usually the older one gets to top.”

“Not in our case and also I’m stronger than you. The stronger one gets to be the dominant one right? Isn’t that your life motto?”

“...Right.”

Just like that, Jungkook wins the argument. However, his heart instantly softens at the sight of a very dejected Taehyung who starts to frown pitifully looking genuinely upset.

“Nawwww don’t frown like that baby. Hmmm…..I’ll give you some control today. I’ll lie here and you ride me at your own pace.”
Woah is today going to be the first time Jungkook doesn’t fuck Taehyung out of his wits?

“Really? You are just going to lie here?”

Taehyung looks genuinely touched.

“Yeap.”

“You are not going to move your hips by yourself? You’ll let me go at my own pace?”

“Yeap.”

“Promise?”

“Yeap.”

“...Wow thanks Kook.”

So Taehyung proceeds to ride Jungkook. With much difficulty he finally sits halfway down Jungkook’s dick and starts moving diligently to which Jungkook moans in bliss. Then after a few times bobbing up and down Taehyung abruptly stops. He then lifts himself off Jungkook and sits down by Jungkook’s side on the bed. And then, without warning, tears start to flow down Taehyung’s cheeks.

Seeing his wife is suddenly crying, Jungkook is shaken to the core again. What happened?! Jungkook immediately goes up to hug Taehyung tightly in his arms.

“Hey what’s wrong hmmm?” Jungkook whispers gently as he holds onto a sobbing Taehyung. He kisses Taehyung lovingly on the back of his neck.
Taehyung who has been holding in alot of emotions from the ceremony today finally lets everything out.

“I…you don’t understand…to be honest I feel so humiliated today…I….really….did you see how everyone is looking at me just now like I’m an object?! I’m a man too Kook…I don’t want to be your wife….I want to be equal as a man and I want to be your husband. I love you but can’t we be each other’s husbands instead of husband and wife?! I’m not a girl for goodness sake! Also I haven’t told you this before but a boy used to call me a girl for a long time when I was really young. Yes it sounds funny and stupid but it hurts me so much when I was a child and at that time I was too young to understand anything so up till now I am still really sensitive when it comes to this subject. Sorry I’m so triggered right now I can’t even…” Taehyung suddenly blurts out a whole paragraph of angst. He’s been bottling all these feelings up in his heart throughout the ceremony where he knows that everyone present is just thinking “oh he’s the wife he’s the wife” instead of judging him as a person and amidst all that he still needs to act like he’s fine with it. The sudden appearance of Seo Joon, the origin of his insecurity, also doesn’t make any of this better. Even though he has resolved his conflict with Seo Joon it doesn’t mean his insecurity is resolved. Forgiving doesn’t mean forgetting. Now when Taehyung finally gets to release all his emotions it becomes a full-blown explosion and till this point in time he is already crying angry tears.

Jungkook is stunned and he doesn’t know what to say. He doesn’t know that Taehyung is so hurt because he seems to be fine during the ceremony.

“Hey baby I’m so sorry I didn’t know you’ve been thinking all these. God damn it I’m such a bad husband like hell I actually thought you were fine and enjoying yourself just now but really in the mafia there are tons of gay marriages so it’s considered normal here, maybe they are looking at you because you’re really good-looking! Yes, you are absolutely beautiful so that’s why they are staring~ And who’s that bastard that called you a girl? When I see him I’ll surely whoop his ass so don’t cry for him baby, don’t cry because of another man if not I’m gonna get angry,” Jungkook says jokingly sending kisses to Taehyung before continuing: "As for the husband and wife thing….hmmm….do you want to get married again? Actually I’ve been thinking about this for quite some time too. Let’s do it again properly shall we? Let’s get married one more time as husbands. Honestly it’s been bugging me that I’ve forced you into the marriage and I’d really rather that you accept me willingly. Let’s do a nice little ceremony again and we can invite BANGTAN too. I’m sure they will accept our relationship because they love us. I’m sure that they will absolutely love the fact that we are happy together so baby, let’s not judge the world before the world judges us okay? I’ll make everything better for you I promise."

Let’s not judge the world before the world judges us okay? I’ll make everything better for you, I promise...

Upon hearing that, Taehyung breaks into a little smile and turns his head around to kiss Jungkook.
3 minutes of silent kissing before Taehyung pulls away with a question.

“So... are you going to let me top you or not?”

Upon hearing that, Jungkook is speechless for a few moments as he looks at his wife who has just been crying in distress a few minutes ago currently smirking back naughtily at him. Jungkook has his mouth wide agape before he finally finds some words to say.

“Wow you sneaky little...how am I supposed to say no when you are already crying like this?! This isn’t fair!”

“So the answer is yes? If not I’m going to cry again.”

“No are you threatening me with your tears now?! Alright alright let me think about it but not today.” Jungkook loves it when Taehyung cries in reflex during sex but when Taehyung cries like that he literally can't handle.

Taehyung can’t believe his ears.

“Really?! Wow that’s seriously good enough for me oh my goodness I can’t believe you just said you’d think about it like HOLY ---” Taehyung is instantly full of life again beaming from ear to ear.

“I’m still going to fuck you now though. Casually reminding you that we’re halfway through sex.”

“Sure sure just take me just fuck me yes yes yes I’m all yours today!”

So, as usual, Jungkook fucks Taehyung into a concussion what's new. As Jungkook stares at the fast-asleep Taehyung, he starts thinking deeply - Should I let him top sometimes? Will it make him happier? Will I be ok with it? Damn, little did Jungkook know he is capable of sacrificing everything and anything just so the love of his life Taehyung can be truly happy again.
"True love is selfless. It is prepared to sacrifice." — Sadhu Vaswani

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don't have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

Connect with me on twitter and @ me if you want to: @hidden__tracks (two underscores)
For the first time in a long time I've met a man that makes my heart want to stay.” — Nikki Rowe

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Secret Underground Headquarters Jungkook's main office

Date & Time: 3rd January 2018 9:15AM

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

***

"Boss. I need urgent information regarding something of utmost importance," Namjoon announces with a slightly anxious tone which is rare for the usually composed Namjoon.

"Say it."

"Jin's number and all his free dates. Also I'll be using all my annual leave on those dates."

Jungkook spurs his morning coffee onto the newspaper he is currently reading.

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Secret Underground Headquarters Jungkook's main office

Date & Time: 3rd January 2018 9:15AM

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]
"I'm only helping you because you're my friend. The rest is up to you now. Just saying Jin doesn't accept just anyone but one good thing is he told us that he's 70.3802% gay so you have a good chance provided you don't screw up. And stop grinning like that you've NEVER been like this seriously it's creeping me out STOP SMILING."

"Yes boss."

"You're still smiling."

"Oh am I? Oops can't control it."

Namjoon grins like this throughout the week.

***

Location: Outside Somewhere in Town

Date & Time: 16th January 2018 2PM

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

***

"Hi Namjoon-ssi, you said you're treating me to pizza?! Yay let's go!"

A very anxious Namjoon and a very excited Jin finds a pizza restaurant. The grinning Namjoon has turned into fidgety Namjoon.

Pizza ordering.

5 minutes later, 3 large pizzas are out. Jin whips out his camera and takes food photos for 10 minutes.

Namjoon stares at Jin not saying a single word. His pupils dilate and go out of focus.
"Yah Namjoon-ssi! Why are you stoning like this. Are you always so weird?"

"Yes, probably and please call me Joon instead of Namjoon-ssi."

"Wow okay I'm good with that, I prefer weird over normal people anyway. Okay then, if you don't mind the informal way of speaking I'll call you Joon from now on and you may just call me Jin too. By the way I'm done with taking photos let's dig in woahhhh this gonna be awesome!"

Pizza eating. Namjoon stuffs pizza into his mouth absent-mindedly while his eyes continue to stare at Jin not blinking an eye.

After 5 minutes of eating, Jin notices Namjoon's staring and chuckles abit.

"Yah Joon why are you so cute?" Jin asks casually while smiling brightly at Namjoon. Namjoon tries not to get a heart attack and forgets how to swallow food so he just keeps stuffing food into his mouth. His whole cheeks are stuffed full of pizza in no time. Jin is instantly reminded of a hamster. He immediately whips out his camera and takes a photo of stuffed-cheeks Namjoon. He then looks down at his camera to check the newly-taken photo.

"Joon, you're pretty photogenic aren't you? I like your facial features alot because there's alot of symmetry in it. In layman terms it means you're handsome. I'd rate your attractiveness level a.... hmmm.... 8/10 overall judging from this photo and honestly that's the highest score you can get because the only 10/10 in this world is me kekeke. I also absolutely love how the shape of your eyes are longer than the average person which means you'll probably look really good when you smile," Jin analyses the photo and compliments Namjoon as if it is the most natural thing to do in the world.

"Jin. You are weird too."

"Oh am I? I'm actually glad to hear that."

"I....I love it." Namjoon actually really wants to say "I love you" but he thinks he'll save it for later.

***
The date ends with movie watching.

Jin wails a waterfall in the theatre when the female lead dies. Namjoon is in charge of passing him tissues.

Movie ends and both exit the theatre.

"Are you ok?"

"KFLJAFJAKLFAJFLAJAKLFLJAL AHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHWHYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYY/YYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYY/YYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYY/YYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYY/YYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYY/YYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYY
Namjoon gets lost in Jin's beauty and doesn't speak for 2 minutes as Jin continues to blabber away. Namjoon wishes to protect Jin forever.

Finally, Namjoon finds words to say.

"I'm happy you're happy."

"Awww Joon you're absolutely adorable!"

"You are the first person that has ever called me adorable. I...I love it."

Namjoon finally smiles for the first time during the date. Jin smiles back. He then takes a photo of smiling Namjoon.

"You should smile more, your smile is really nice."

"Okay if you say so."

"Hehe yay I'll see you next week again then? Goodbye Namjoon I'm going in to rest now thanks for today."

"Goodbye Jin. Goodnight. I can't wait to see you again."

"Me too! Seeya Joon!"

Namjoon really can't wait. As Jin's closes the door Namjoon's heart breaks into a thousand pieces but then again it's such a beautiful feeling for him. He hasn't felt this feeling before for a long long time and he absolutely can't wait for the next date next week and he'll continue to grin sheepishly throughout the week. Sorry Jungkook you'll have to constantly be covered in goosebumps when you see smiley Namjoon because goodness gracious our Namjoonie has fallen deep deep deep in love whether you like it or not~
“He gazed into eyes the color of a summer morning sky and sighed. It felt as if his soul had just come home.” — Grace Willows

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don't have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden__tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don't forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
The Capture Pt. 1

Chapter Summary

Seo Joon kidnaps Taehyung while Jungkook and Namjoon are away on a mission in Spain.

“A mighty pain to love it is,
And ’t is a pain that pain to miss;
But of all pains, the greatest pain
It is to love, but love in vain.”
— Abraham Cowley, The Poems of Abraham Cowley

***

Location: Seo Joon’s Office in The Mafia Origins Headquarters

Date & Time: 21st January 2018 1:30PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 4-5 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

***

Seo Joon makes a phone call in his own private office. After several rings, HWARANG’s current gang leader Hyungsik comes on the line.

“Seo Joon brother! What’s up?” Hyungsik, the current HWARANG chief, asks casually while munching onto his apple.

5 seconds of silence as Seo Joon collects his rigged breath, cold sweat visibly trickling down his forehead. In a lowered volume, Seo Joon finally speaks with much solemnity, “Jungkook and Namjoon are out on a mission in Spain. They won’t be back for another 3 days. We can’t let this golden of an opportunity slip off our fingers. We must act today.”

Hyungsik chokes on his apple and jerks into full attention.

“Today?! The plan you’ve been telling us about? We do it today?!”
Anxiety is evident in Hyungsik’s voice.

“Yes, today. Put everyone involved on the line now.”

“Roger, give me a moment brother.”

Hyungsik hastily turns on the speaker mode. He then shouts out for those involved in the plan to gather. As soon as everyone reaches Hyungsik and learns about the gist of the situation, a collective greeting “Hi Seo Joon, we are all here” is verbalised to signal that all relevant personnel is present and are on all ears as to what Seo Joon is going to say next. Though Seo Joon is no longer HWARANG’s current ruler, he is ultimately still the founder and the head of the gang ever since its formation a little over a decade ago. The members respect Seo Joon with all their heart and Seo Joon’s issues will always be their issues.

Taking in a deep breath, Seo Joon conveys his words of command coherently.

“Listen carefully HWARANG, we must act today with the plan. I’ve gotten news that BANGTAN will end their meeting at 7 and you guys will prepare accordingly and act when the time comes. Remember to wear masks so that BANGTAN members don’t get any chance to identify anyone of you because I don’t want trouble for the rest of our HWARANG gang. Quietly and discreetly, I want you all to...

... capture BANGTAN’s gang leader Taehyung and bring him to me tonight.”

***

Location: A hut in the middle of a forest, god-knows-where exactly

Date & Time: 21st January 2018 7:23PM
Seo Joon stations at the window of a forest hut-in-hiding as he slowly smokes away the third pack of cigar today. He fiddles his cell phone in his hand as he impatiently waits for an important call to arrive.

It has been 23 minutes since the clock struck 7.

When the cell phone actually starts ringing, Seo Joon’s fidgeting fingers instantly halt to a stop as he grips tightly onto the vibrating device, his heart starting to pound at a furious speed.

Seo Joon’s whole body begins to tremble in the excitement, fear and anticipation and all the other millions of emotions Taehyung is capable of making him feel. These feelings explode like a raging volcano inside him again and yet they only manifest externally as a moment of jittery for Seo Joon who most certainly expertise in concealing his emotions.

After some time, Seo Joon picks up the incoming call.

A flustered Ji Han who is panting furiously comes on the line.

“Seo Joon! We’ve gotten Taehyung in the van and we’re on our way over to the hut now! He almost tackled the three of us down but we managed to subdue him in time at gunpoint! Unfortunately, the commotion attracted the attention of BANGTAN’s doctor (referring to Jin). He came charging at us and as soon as he grabbed onto Taehyung’s arm, he just kept holding on trying to pull Taehyung out of the van so we had no choice but to pull him on board as well before the rest of the members arrive, though I think snake (referring to Hoseok) and flash (referring to Jimin) saw us. Taehyung and the doctor are both knocked unconscious in the van now.”

Once Ji Han’s words land, an unknown fear starts seething in Seo Joon’s heart. For once in a very very long time, Seo Joon exploded in rage.

“Why does it sound like you guys have been hurting Taehyung? Why did you knock him unconscious? Did you hurt Taehyung?! I’m warning you, if he is the slightest bit hurt I won’t let any of you off!” Seo Joon suddenly screams in fury.
Silence through the line. Ji Han is visibly lost for words.

After a few moments, Seo Joon calms down slightly, his brain switching from an impulsive to a rational mode again and in that instant he can't explain fully how sorry he is to rage at Ji Han who is just trying to do his job.

“Sorry Ji Han, I got carried away. I don’t mean to shout at you, really. I just... suddenly lost it at the thought that Taehyung might be hurt,” Seo Joon apologizes knowing that he had just shouted uncontrollably at the people who are currently risking their lives to help him. Going against the powerful mafia boss Jungkook is almost equivalent to death once caught and Seo Joon knows that very well himself. He doesn’t mind dying if he stands a chance to be with Taehyung but it is the lives of his ex-gang mates that he fears for. He feels bad for them having to carry the heavy weight of the deadly consequences but they had previously agreed in tears to aid Seo Joon from the very start. They’ve sworn allegiance to their founder Seo Joon and had promised to commit wholeheartedly to make this mission a success.

“We are born orphans anyway so there isn’t much to lose but from the day we bond as HWARANG we will fight for one another. If there is anything we fight for in this world it is for honour. The honour to be there for any of our members that needs help including you, Seo Joon. You are our friend and our dearest brother and you always will be. We will always support you, we will fight for you for whatever reason it is just because you are and have been one of us. Don’t worry about it, we don’t fear death, at least I don’t,” Minho is a man that doesn’t speak much but when he does give a speech his words are always tear-jerking. This is what he had said before to Seo Joon to reduce his worries about HWARANG’s safety.

Ji Han detects the pain in Seo Joon’s voice.

“Don’t worry about it, Seo Joon, it’s okay. We know how much you love Taehyung and you’ve told us to inflict minimal damages on him. We knocked him unconscious because he can't stop kicking wildly but rest assured we did it with minimal impact and there won't be any permanent injury on his skull. There are just some bruises on his arms from the struggle but other than that he is alright.”

Seo Joon heaves a sigh of relief.

“You said that Jin is on the van too?”

“Yes, BANGTAN’s doctor is here too. What should we do with him? Kill him?”
“No. He is useful so we’ll keep him in a separate room in the hut first. After we get out of the hut, we’ll transfer him to HWARANG’s emergent medical room and we’ll make him treat the injured for us. I’ve heard that survival rates under him regardless of the wound condition is a record breaking 97% as long as the patient is still alive upon reaching him.”

“That is most certainly impressive. Roger that, I’ll keep him alive then.”

***

Location: An enclosed room in a hut in the middle of a forest, god-knows-where exactly

Date & Time: 21st January 2018 11:26PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 4-5 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

***

Taehyung wakes up and finds himself tightly roped to a chair in a dark run-down room dimly lit with candles. Such kidnapping experience isn’t foreign to Taehyung as it had happened once before not too long ago so in this familiar situation Taehyung actually finds himself unexpectedly calm.

With much composure, Taehyung raises his head to scan his surroundings without caring to even struggle a little and if you dig deeper you would notice that his eyes are harbouring that tinge of annoyance and displeasure instead of the fear that he should be feeling in lieu of his sudden kidnap.

The first thing Taehyung sees immediately upon raising his head is a solemn-looking man with a cigar in his mouth sitting at the edge of the window peering out into the deadly silent forest night sky looking excessively poetic as fuck.

2 seconds later Taehyung recognizes in mild shock that the man he is staring at is none other than Seo Joon.

*Seo Joon kidnapped me,* the realization hits Taehyung hard. A wave of betrayal surges inside him, not necessarily because he thought that Seo Joon has turned over a new leaf but because he knows that Jungkook trusts Seo Joon wholeheartedly and honours him with respect as a teacher.
What a fucking scumbag, Taehyung thinks to himself. Is Seo Joon hungry for power? Kidnapped me as a hostage to threaten Kook to give up his throne? Or is it for money? For territory? Is it for some politics that I don't know about? What a low move fucking bastard... Millions of possibilities and insults flash past Taehyung’s mind as he groans in obvious annoyance.

“You’re awake,” speak Seo Joon with cold sorrowful eyes.

Taehyung snorts.

“Oh thank you very much for stating the obvious. Can I ask you something that I am so very clueless about - Why the fuck am I here?! Where am I like are we in the middle of Amazon and where the fuck is Jin?! Release Jin and me this instant right now I’m warning you, Kook won’t be very happy about this when he learns that you've kidnapped me for whatever the fuck is your reason for doing so.”

Taehyung’s annoyance has spiralled into rage as he spits a paragraph of fire.

At this point, Seo Joon is also visibly very triggered by Taehyung’s words. His calm demeanour instantly melts away as looks over at Taehyung with an expression that is partly sad but also to a large percentage very mad as well.

“Kim Tae Hyung, you are mine now and I’m never releasing you. Get that in your head. I love you more than Jungkook and I don’t want to hear you speak of Jungkook ever again.”

Upon hearing Seo Joon’s words, Taehyung instantly huffs in utter disbelief as he is immediately reminded that Seo Joon has liked him before in the past.

For some reason, Taehyung didn't see this coming because his mind cannot fathom how ridiculous the current situation is right now.

Am I captured for gay sex again? Seriously?! 5 months ago Jungkook pulled this stunt and then this fucking idiot Seo Joon decides to learn and follow suit and I thought this kind of kinky kidnapping only happens to curvy bombshell women! Since when is it my fucking turn?! Taehyung thinks in visible distress to himself, utterly fed up of everything in the world and till this point he still can’t believe that Seo Joon said what he said.
All Taehyung wants at this point in time is to go home and have his beauty sleep but now he needs to deal with the bullshit that is Seo Joon.

“Seriously Seo Joon. Your girlfriend Ara is so fucking beautiful. What the fuck is wrong with you?! Stop obsessing over me for goodness sake I’m already married to Jungkook! It’s over! Over! Since the very moment I rejected you 10 years ago you should have stopped --- ”

“11 years 3 months and 24 days. Since the night you rejected and insulted me and yet I still can't stop loving you.”

Seo Joon cuts in before Taehyung gets to finish his sentence. 20 seconds of silence as Taehyung huffs and is momentarily lost for words.

A few moments later, tears start to roll down Seo Joon’s cheeks. He turns around and punches the wall behind him to vent his pain.

Taehyung is still unimpressed.

“Don’t fucking cry on me right now and I need to know where. the. fuck. my gang mate Jin is. You better not try anything funny because you know I have a tracking chip in me right now and Jungkook’s going to come get me any moment.”

After Taehyung’s words land, Seo Joon finally explodes in immense rage. He finds it infuriating that up till this point Taehyung is still not taking him seriously. He can feel the disdain in Taehyung’s ridiculing tone and it is starting to infuriate him to no end.

Since the very beginning, Taehyung has always looked at him as if he is nothing but some dirt on the ground.

“You think this is funny, Taehyung? You think this is fucking funny isn't it?!” Seo Joon suddenly charges at Taehyung and grabs him by the shirt, tugging at him with his hands in absolute fury. Taehyung flinches slightly at the sudden violence but holds his head high, his facial expression fading to an emotionless deadpan as he speaks confidently while staring into Seo Joon’s eyes.
“Ridiculously stupid and funny. Get your dirty hands off me right now and don't you fucking dare touch a single strand of my hair. Hoseok and Jemin saw the scene and they will most certainly inform Jungkook about my capture. Kook will check my location and be here in no time and you’ll be dead by then.”

Unfaltered, strong and stubborn. Seo Joon sees all that in Taehyung’s eyes. Unfortunately things are not as simple as what Taehyung thinks.

At this point, the angered Seo Joon suddenly breaks into a bitter grin. He slowly releases Taehyung’s shirt, his calm demeanour sinking back into him as he nods slightly as if to acknowledge that he understands and accepts Taehyung’s warning. He then walks to the other end of the room to pour himself a cup of water.

The sudden change in attitude makes Taehyung slightly apprehensive. He furrows his brows as he stares intently at his captor.

“Taehyung ah, it's a good thing that you are confident of your husband's abilities but sometimes you are too naive. We are in the middle of a forest surrounded by trees so a plane can't possibly land here properly and even if Jungkook arrives here by a helicopter or a vehicle he will still need to physically enter the terrains of this hut himself to save you and Jin. I know Jungkook very well, he is a man that will never leave a rescue mission of someone he loves solely to the mafia army. Chances are that he will come here himself. I've installed traps everywhere, Taehyung. One foot of Jungkook set within 100 square metres of this hut and my gunmen shoots him dead. I have 50 gunmen surrounding this place with touch sensors installed everywhere. Precisely because I know he will come to save you so that's part of the plan.”

Upon hearing that, Taehyung’s heart stops and his blood run cold.

It takes Taehyung a few moments to process Seo Joon's words before wild anger and hate ignites in him.

“You fucking bastard. Don't you dare touch Kook I can't believe you intend to kill him! Damn it, he fucking trusted you!” Taehyung screams, his face turning crimson in rage as his veins pop out dangerously surfacing all over his reddened face and neck.

No this can't be true, no, Jungkook is smart and he probably won't die while trying to save me but what if --- Taehyung is suddenly encapsulated by an immense wave of dread and panic as the
possibility of Jungkook's death starts to infest his mind and eats into his soul.

“Finally taking this situation seriously are you? Don't worry, your gang mate Jin is well and alive. Thanks to his ability to heal others, we will be keeping him as a doctor in HWARANG but I can't say for sure if your husband Jungkook will walk out of here alive,” Seo Joon speaks nonchalantly as he walks over to Taehyung with a smug expression on his face.

Taehyung stares at Seo Joon with his mouth agape at a loss for words, his expression gradually melts from intense anger into a pool of desperation.

Taehyung can't let anyone harm Jungkook, that is his promise to his son-turned-husband from the very beginning. No matter what it takes, Taehyung has to protect Jungkook. He will protect Jungkook from all the harm in the world. That is his promise to Jungkook and he will keep that promise forever.

“Seo Joon ah, please. If you want you can just fuck me. That's what you want right? I won't struggle abit I swear. Let Kook go? Okay? Please? You like me right? This has nothing to do with Kook. I'll do anything, anything really. Is that okay? Do you like that?” Taehyung offers himself to Seo Joon because he would do anything so that his beloved husband is safer from harm.

Once Taehyung’s words land, Seo Joon’s heart instantly breaks into a million pieces.

He wants Taehyung’s love, not just his body. At this moment Taehyung still thinks of Jungkook first.

Taehyung thinks of Jungkook first before himself.

Taehyung is such a prideful man, so prideful and arrogant. How much must he be loving Jungkook to stoop so low as to submit himself to Seo Joon? Didn't he just said that Seo Joon’s hands were dirty a few moments ago and now he is voluntarily giving himself away? So that Jungkook can be safe? At this moment, the agony in Seo Joon’s heart is undescrivable. Taehyung’s words sting into him and hurt him so profoundly that he suddenly finds it hard to breathe.

Also, the fact that Taehyung thinks that what Seo Joon has for him is only lust also makes Seo Joon feel so downright awful and insulted for having loved Taehyung for so many years.
Seo Joon had previously thought that since Jungkook had forced Taehyung into marrying him, Taehyung doesn’t actually love Jungkook. Taehyung only loves Jungkook on the surface right? That’s why Seo Joon thinks he still has a chance but apparently now he knows for sure that that isn’t the case anymore.

Taehyung is unmistakably in love with Jungkook. Not a surprising discovery since he is the wife of Jungkook and also since he has kissed Jungkook first during the black ceremony but the confirmation of it still hurts Seo Joon to no end.

Seo Joon hates Jungkook so much at this moment for existing and he wishes so much to kill him with his own hands. If Jungkook hasn't appeared, Taehyung would have been his by now. He vaguely remembers his love for Jungkook before he knows of his connection with Taehyung but all that sentiment is currently buried under his hate and jealousy for the younger mafia boss.

“Let him go? That's the last thing I'll do. Wait here for me, I'm going to get you some food. You must be hungry since you didn't have dinner.”

With that, Seo Joon changes the topic and leaves the room. He slams the door shut before melting onto the floor outside in the corridor, his eyes blank in despair.

Inside the room, Taehyung grips his hands into fists so tightly that his knuckles start to hurt.

*The hate.*

*The pain of having to lose someone dear to them.*

In the middle of a deserted forest, Taehyung desperately starts brainstorming a plan to save Jungkook while Seo Joon cries silent but painful tears in a sort of profound loneliness he hasn't gotten to escape for some 20 years.

“Because, if you could love someone, and keep loving them, without being loved back . . . then that love had to be real. It hurt too much to be anything else.” — Sarah Cross, *Kill Me Softly*
Hi fam, I earn nothing from writing these fanfictions but if you want to send some support and appreciation by buying me a cup of coffee to motivate me in writing you can do it here: hiddentracks@ko-fi (thank you <3)
Jungkook, Namjoon and other associated members of the Mafia Origins have just collectively arrived at a hotel in Bilbao, Spain. After some much-needed rest having had just survived a long haul flight from Korea, they are all ready to set out to meet the Galician mafia in a secret mission to discuss a conspiracy involving the mass infiltration of their members into Spain’s biggest political party namely Partido Popular in which success would ultimately confer them extensive control of the Spain government and public. Some of the Galician Mafia members were already successfully implanted as long-term spies in Spain’s own police force and that is why the Galician Mafia has been able to constantly evade the grasp of law enforcers despite the myriad of crime they have been committing on a regular basis. In lieu of the 2020 Spain general elections, political infiltration plans have to be confirmed as soon as possible and such highly-classified missions have to be discussed privately face-to-face among leaders. Jungkook read the reports sent personally by their messenger and had personally invited himself to today’s meeting among the Galician Mafia members in regards to this issue. He believes that certain improvements can be made to ensure better success and flow in the upcoming infiltration movement. Besides, he needs to discuss certain issues pertaining to drug trade and smuggling practices employed by the Galician Mafia which he finds rather faulty. *(Disclaimer: these are all fictional.)*

However, two seconds after Jungkook and his personal bodyguard Namjoon set out from the hotel to meet said mafia organization, Jungkook’s phone starts ringing, or specifically, his private phone rings. Jungkook has two phones, one for business purposes and one for contacting his immediate family and friends which basically includes only Taehyung and the BANGTAN gang. He gazes down at the caller code - Jimin’s number. Namjoon steals a quick glance to see if it’s Jin calling but
looks away disinterestedly upon seeing another person's number.

Jungkook swiftly picks up the call.

“Jungkook listen up, Taehyung and Jin are captured. We don’t know who is the captor yet but Hoseok and I have most certainly seen Taehyung being dragged roughly into a van. Jin tried to stop Taehyung’s capture but was dragged onto the van as well. We seen all that happen with our own eyes while running over but we were too late. They are also uncontactable right now. We are not too sure why Taehyung was captured because BANGTAN hasn’t been having any clashes with other gangs recently so we are still trying to figure out what’s wrong. The BANGTAN gang is discussing plans to save them right now. The only clue we have currently is the van’s plate number. Have you ended work? Do you want to join us in the rescue mission?” Jimin speeds-talk in a rather exasperated tone. At this point he still has no idea that Jungkook is the mafia boss and that Taehyung is his wife. All he knows is that Jungkook is Taehyung’s son and that as Taehyung's son, Jungkook has the right to know why Taehyung is missing.

Jungkook immediately halts in his tracks. Namjoon stops too. He senses something wrong when he sees Jungkook’s fingers slightly trembling.

Kidnapped. My wife is kidnapped. The day after I left Korea for Spain in a secret mission, Jungkook thinks to himself as his mind starts racing.

The sudden news have Jungkook dumbstruck in place. A few moments of silence before Jungkook conjures words to speak. He finds all this a little too coincidental.

“Jimin, listen up. Don’t do anything and wait for my instructions. This situation might be much more dangerous than you think. I repeat: I don’t want BANGTAN to do anything about this yet am I clear? I will deal with it.”

Silence for 5 seconds through the line. Jimin is evidently lost for words at the sudden switch of dominance from Jungkook’s usual goofy persona.

“What do you even mean when you say that you want us to wait for your instructions?! How can BANGTAN not do anything about this? What makes you think you can deal with this alone? Are you coming over or not?!” Jimin shouts into the phone and is evidently flustered and even slightly angered at this point.
“Jimin hyung, there are things that I did not tell you guys about. The situation is much more complicated than you think - the captors might not be kidnapping Taehyung due to his association with BANGTAN, in fact they might be kidnapping Taehyung due to his association with me.”

“What?! What do you mean? Explain yourself!”

“Jimin, just trust me. I am more powerful than you think. I will explain things to you guys once this whole matter is resolved but for now, I don’t want BANGTAN to do anything about this you understand?!”

“I don’t know what you are talking about.”

“It’s a long story and I will tell you all about it another time but now we need to focus on Taehyung’s and BANGTAN’s collective safety. Please Jimin, trust me, BANGTAN is going to get hurt if you guys meddle in this affair and I don’t want that. This is not just among gangs anymore and it might be something else bigger and much more complicated I believe. I will update you guys on my progress. Please, for the love of god just trust me.”

After hearing that, Jimin sighs through the phone. He is extremely confused and desperate right now but without any clues as to where Taehyung is and why Taehyung is captured he can only concede and hope that Jungkook knows what he is doing.

“Alright. Contact us once you find out anything.”

“Will do.”

The short conversation ends. Two seconds after Jungkook hangs up his private phone, his other business phone starts ringing. He puts his private phone back into his suit and fishes out his business mobile.

“Boss? It’s almost 830PM and Taehyung isn’t back yet. We are worried,” the head servant of the central mafia mansion speaks in an anxious tone.

Jungkook sighs in distress. Seems like his wife is really missing in action right now.
“Don’t be. He won’t be back today but I’ll make sure he comes back tomorrow,” Jungkook says firmly and hangs up. He then places his business phone back into his suit. Jungkook then proceeds to daze out into space, his hands slowly curling into tight fists.

“Boss? I’ve heard you said that Taehyung is captured over the phone? Should we launch a rescue mission?” Namjoon looks visibly alarmed as he has most certainly heard what Jungkook has spoken into the phone but overall he still maintains his usual composure.

“Yes, but not only that. Your beloved Jin is in the captor’s hands as well.”

Upon hearing those words, Namjoon forgets he is on duty and instantly launches into a state of adrenal fight-or-flight mode. With widened eyes of anger and shock, he shouts.

“WHAT DID YOU FUCKING SAY?! FUCK THIS GALICIAN MAFIA POLITICS SHIT LET’S RETURN TO OUR COUNTRY IMMEDIATELY!”

***

Location:  Gran Hotel Domine Bilbao, Spain  
Date & Time:  21st January 2018 12:24PM in Spain / 8:24PM in Korea  
[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 4-5 months into marriage]  
[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]  
***

Two men namely the mafia boss and his personal bodyguard sit rather anxiously inside a luxurious suite in Gran Hotel Domine Bilbao furiously typing on their laptops. The bodyguard seems to be more talkative and fluent than his usual verbally constipated self.

“Boss, I’ve found Taehyung’s location from his tracking chip. Look here, he is in the middle of the woods right now nearer to the North of South Korea and we’ll need to get there as soon as possible. How long does it take for us to return to Korea?”

“Save the location and send it to me. By commercial jet flight it’s 15-16 hours back from here to Korea so we can forget about that travel option. Instead I’ve just sent a command to one of our own pilots based in France to come get us at the Bilbao airport with the X-type concorde based in Bordeaux. They’ve just told me that this newest engineered model travels at Mach 3.2 so altogether
we should be reaching Seoul in a little over 5 hours on that aircraft. They’ll check the air traffic so
that we don’t bump into other commercial jets while flying illegally. After landing at the airport we
will then transfer to a smaller jet which will ride us over to Taehyung’s exact location.”

“Roger that but Mach 3.2? Is this newest concorde model even approved for flying yet? I can tell
you for sure that this plane is going to burn up and shatter glasses at the airports from its sheer speed
but this issue isn’t the dire one we need to care about now obviously. I have also sent a command to
activate our own troops back in Korea and they are getting ready with all the equipment right now.
I’ll tell them to back us up and follow us through via fighter planes once we reach Korea.”

“Great, tell them to bring along all the AK-47s, DSR-50 sniper rifles and the grenades what not. Add
in some torture devices and nutcrackers too if they fit the load. After cutting the captors' throats, I will
personally incinerate them with my own flamethrower so that their ashes rot and burn in hell.”

“Go ahead because that sounds very appealing to me and boss, I think that by now we can both be
sure that the captors have nothing against BANGTAN and are actually part of our own affiliated
insiders. One or more of them has to be part of The Mafia Origins to know that we are currently
away in Spain. There is not a better chance than to capture Taehyung now knowing that we are
miles away from Korea. Beware boss. They are doing this to go against you and they are using
Taehyung as the hostage. On a side note, I still can’t believe my poor Jin is being pulled into all this
mess. Ahhh my poor Jinnieeee ---.”

“That is what I’ve been thinking too Namjoon, that they are coming after me but what is worrying
me right now is that the captors have yet to contact me to tell me what exactly they want from me.
Usually a call should have been made by now to threaten me with Taehyung as the hostage but no,
there isn’t a single ring I’m receiving right now and insiders would have known of the tracking trip
implementation but these captors did nothing to eliminate the GPS signal from Taehyung’s tracking
chip. It is as if they want us to find them. Furthermore, a forest is absolutely strategic for ambush. It is
as if this is a trap, Namjoon. It’s a trap to lure us in but still we got to go save them so we’ve got to
extremely careful Namjoon, extremely careful. Tell everyone in the troops to wear bulletproof
vests and send some men over to BANGTAN’s secret hideout zone to stop them from trying to save
Taehyung. I don’t want any of my innocent BANGTAN members to get hurt in the process because
these captors seem to be pretty intelligent.”

“Very wise and thoughtful. Roger that boss.”

***

Location: Forest hut-in-hiding, god-knows-where exactly but now we know that they are
somewhere in the woods near the North of South Korea

Date & Time: 22nd January 2018 1:27AM
“Eat,” says Seo Joon trying to feed food to a frowning Taehyung. He has just gotten food for his captive but Taehyung seems to be very reluctant and uncooperative.

“I don’t want to be fed. Untie my hands and I’ll eat it myself.”

“Suits you. You can’t run anyway, I’ll be watching.”

Taehyung’s hands are then untied though the rest of his body is still roped to the chair. With his free hands, Taehyung reaches out and grabs onto the tin of soldier ration in Seo Joon’s hand and gulfs it down impatiently because he is absolutely famished at this point in time. Two seconds later, the revolting taste of the tin food gets to Taehyung causing him to hastily stick out his tongue while gasping for air in absolute disgust.

Taehyung glares at Seo Joon to which Seo Joon retaliates.

“Don’t look at me like this. This is not a first class hotel Taehyung.”

“You sure this isn’t dog food?!”

“If you don’t like it then don’t eat it.”

Seo Joon huffs and reaches out his hand to grab the ration tin from Taehyung to which Taehyung immediately flinches and hugs the tin protectively in his arms. He then obediently continues to eat. Taehyung has no choice but to consume what he is given because he knows he still needs strength to think of a workable escape plan to save Jungkook. Although his smart and capable husband Jungkook won’t necessarily fall for Seo Joon’s trap since he is a genius, there is still a possibility that
Jungkook might get hurt in the process of saving him and Taehyung doesn’t want that.

Taehyung prays that god is with them this time and silently curses for Seo Joon to be struck by lightning.

Seo Joon looks down at the sulking Taehyung violently stuffing chunks of ration food into his mouth while chewing with a grumpy face. His heart aches. If there is a chance he will want to feed Taehyung with the best food in the world.

After a few moments, Taehyung finishes his food and throws the tin to the side with not a care in the world. He knows that Seo Joon loves him so chances are that he isn’t entirely vulnerable to his captor knowing that this brute man standing right in front of him with crossed arms won’t truly hurt him unless absolutely necessary. Taehyung concludes that he still has cards to play.

“Seo Joon, how about we make a deal,” Taehyung speaks with a straight scrunched-up business-mode face, “you said you have 50 snipers in this region if I remember correctly is that right?”

Upon hearing that, Seo Joon narrows his eyes into a squint but doesn't say a word. Taehyung continues speaking.

"How about this Seo Joon - listen, I'll only offer this deal once - let's fuck happily but every 3 minutes into the session you remove one sniper. Deal?"

After Taehyung's words land, Seo Joon almost faints on the spot. He gets a little light-headed.

“For the last time: I’m not trading my manpower for sex,” Seo Joon reiterates.

“Sure? Thought you love me.” Taehyung asks with a raised eyebrow to which Seo Joon just grits his teeth and doesn't reply.
Taehyung isn't dumb. At this point he knows that Seo Joon isn’t up for action and is unlikely to touch him so he continues on his little revenge. It sure is a little risky but the pissed-off look on Seo Joon’s face right now makes him feel that all that he’s risking for is worth it.

“Oh well, it's too bad then. You know Kook always says I’m pretty good in bed. He fucks me everyday and is a happy man. Sure you don’t want to give it a go?” Taehyung deliberately mentions Jungkook and smirks victoriously like the king he is.

Taehyung is pushing it, and he isn’t even half bit worried. As a savage gangster that has been living on the streets for many years, he isn't someone that just anyone can keep. In fact, it is safe to say that the only person in the world that has the capacity to handle Taehyung is his husband Jungkook. Taehyung is the kind of spouse that doesn't take it the soft way and can possibly cut 20 years from his lover's lifespan without even trying and possibly only the man named Jungkook is able to tame the wild thug in Taehyung.

Upon hearing that, Seo Joon’s eyes roll so hard that they almost feel like they are falling out from his skull. He is suddenly not too sure if this man tied to a chair in front of him is the man he’s been loving for years. At this moment, Seo Joon’s brain actually feels like it is combusting with a combination of mixed emotions shuffling between hate, jealousy and humiliation. On the other hand, if Jungkook knows about this Taehyung won’t be able to walk properly for 3 weeks.

***

Location: Forest near a hut-in-hiding, god-knows-where exactly but now we know that they are somewhere in the woods near the North of South Korea

Date & Time: 22nd January 2018 1:41AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 4-5 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

***

Jungkook and Namjoon are both breathing heavily while holding tightly onto their rifles as they await the right moment to jump off in parachutes from the private jet. They are already within the region of the hut housing mastermind captor who they do not know is their friend Seo Joon and their beloved captives Jin and Taehyung.
“You go look for Jin. It’s not confirmed whether he is here in this hut with Taehyung as well since we can’t track him but there’s a high chance they brought him here too. If you get to find him, save him and leave on the helicopter first without me. I’ll go get Taehyung,” Jungkook issues a last-minute command to Namjoon.

“No, I’ll never leave you first boss---”

“I have the whole mafia army backing me up so you don’t have to worry a single bit. We save them individually. That’s the best and most efficient plan and you will listen to me on this,” Jungkook commands firmly in boss persona.

Namjoon sighs deeply.

“Yes boss.”

Albeit dangerous, there is a reason why Namjoon and Jungkook have chosen to come save Jin and Taehyung personally when they can easily command their own rescue troops from afar and that is the fact that they want to protect the ones they love to their fullest ability. In this situation, it doesn’t matter who they are anymore.

Does Jungkook care that he is the mafia boss?

Does Namjoon care that he is the head of the dark knights?

No, status doesn’t matter now.

They are currently both in this together to save Jin and Taehyung from harm even if they die from it because risking their lives to save who they love is their duty.

After a few moments, Namjoon and Jungkook give each other one last brotherly hug before taking turns to jump off the private jet. The mafia troops that followed take that as the signal and start to jump off one by one from their aircrafts as well.
Once everyone lands safely at a fair distance away from the hut, a whole army of bulletproof mafia members including Namjoon and Jungkook start to creep in stealthily towards the hut with armed rifles in their hands. They all have the exact same goals in mind: slaughter the fucking traitor and save the mafia boss’s wife as well as the mafia boss’s bodyguard’s boyfriend.

In the hut, the observant Seo Joon detects some faint noises. He hastily walks to the window and looks up in the sky only to see many of the mafia’s planes hovering above the trees.

“They’re finally here,” Seo Joon announces solemnly.

Without warning, the skilled shooter Seo Joon walks to the side of the room and fishes out a rifle. He then starts to load bullets into the rifle, his eyes cold as ice. At that sight, Taehyung’s eyes widen in slight alarm as he instinctively trembles a little.

The gangster closes his eyes and once again prays that Jungkook be safe from harm.

While all this is happening, the moon sits there with popcorn all ready to watch a good showdown. On the other hand, my readers wait rather impatiently for more action and almost slams their keyboard away when they see that this is the last paragraph of the chapter. Oh, this sure is going to be a long long night.

“You are the most important thing to me now. The most important thing to me ever.” — Stephenie Meyer, Twilight

---

Twitter: @hidden__tracks (two underscores)
The Capture Pt. 3

Chapter Summary

Taehyung risks it all for Jungkook. Also the last chapter of "The Capture" trilogy.

“I seemed to have lost all soul or sensation but for this one pursuit.” — Mary Wollstonecraft
Shelley, Frankenstein, or The Modern Prometheus

***

Location: Forest hut-in-hiding, god-knows-where exactly but now we know that they are somewhere in the woods near the North of South Korea

Date & Time: 22nd January 2018 2:04AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 4-5 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

***

Seo Joon grabs onto his fully loaded rifle and walks steadily back to Taehyung and amidst Taehyung’s endless screams of insults, he roughly grips onto his struggling captive’s hands only to roughly rope it back to the chair.

Taehyung allows himself to be manhandled, though his malicious mouth continues to run tirelessly in the process.

“I’m warning you, don’t you dare hurt Kook or I’ll hate you forever you fucking son-of-a-bitch,” Taehyung warns as he glares up at his captor, his eyes brimming with overwhelming anger as his vision lands on the dangerous-looking firearm in Seo Joon’s hand.

At this point in time, Taehyung is already physically shaking in so much indignation. He is not afraid but instead he is overwhelmed with profound anger. Jungkook might very well be part of the troops that have just arrived to save him from this devil. If Seo Joon is actually planning to gun his husband down, Taehyung will make sure that Seo Joon burns in hell before following Jungkook in his path.
Taehyung will never, ever forgive Seo Joon if Jungkook is even remotely scratched today.

“I won’t hurt him but I will exterminate him. Don’t worry, I’ll make sure he dies the very instant I shoot him dead. He won’t even realize that he’s shot,” Seo Joon speaks nonchalantly, his previously offended face fades into that of an emotionless soldier as he gets himself ready for battle, casually stroking the rifle while checking for faults in the machine as if he didn’t just announce his plans on murdering someone. On the other hand, Taehyung’s face instantly turns purple upon registering Seo Joon’s words as he starts to violently thrash around and shout again.

“How could you?! Jungkook is your student, friend and leader for god’s sake! I’m warning you, you will regret this so stop with this insanity right now you fucking rat!” Taehyung bellows at the top of his voice and he actually feels tears of rage and desperation bursting out from his reddened eyes. He is right here staring at the man that is planning to kill Jungkook and there isn’t a single thing he can do to stop him.

On the other hand, Seo Joon dazes out a little as his mind ponders periodically on Taehyung’s words.

*Jungkook is my friend?* Seo Joon thinks with furrowed eyebrows to himself. He can’t exactly remember the last time when he had genuinely felt happy and proud in Jungkook’s company. It was probably only 4-5 months ago before the marriage yet it seems to have been in the long distant past. It was as if the happiness he had felt with Jungkook is already so far away, unreachable and irrecoverable in a foregone history.

A bitter smile forms on Seo Joon’s face.

“Jungkook was indeed a friend but not anymore, Taehyung,” Seo Joon speaks with a smile yet his voice harbours a desolate tone. Jungkook - the boy that gave Seo Joon the happiest days of his life as a close friend and student for years - the boy that shared the same passion as Seo Joon and that was to become stronger as a fighter - most importantly, Jungkook was a boy that reminded Seo Joon of himself - stubborn, obsessed and in pain. In the first few years when Seo Joon was training Jungkook, Jungkook was still in a state very much like Seo Joon - blinded by obsession with Taehyung. They were really very similar in the past without realizing that they were loving the same person and in that aspect they felt connected and understood.

However, all these wonderful memories have already faded into ash the moment Seo Joon saw Taehyung and Jungkook exchanging vows at the church altar. On top of that, Taehyung didn’t
seem willing that day - a gun was involved and it was clearly a forced marriage to begin with.

The feelings of betrayal and injustice for Taehyung almost killed Seo Joon.

Though Seo Joon survived through the pain, the profound agony of having lost two important people in his life had numbed him and possibly stripped away everything good that was left inside him including his own humanity and sanity - the humanity in him that makes him human and the sanity in him that makes him capable to judge right from wrong.

All gone in an instant.

From the wedding day onwards there was already no turning back for Seo Joon.

In the current moment, Seo Joon continues to ignore Taehyung’s cries of anger with not a tinge of emotion evident on his face.

After Seo Joon is done strapping the furiously screaming Taehyung tightly back onto his seat, he then proceeds to drag Taehyung along with his chair to the back corner of the room away from the window. As much as Seo Joon is annoyed with the way Taehyung is acting right now, he still doesn’t want any incoming bullets to hit the love of his life though he eventually decides to tape up Taehyung’s mouth too to shut him up once and for all.

When he has finally “settles Taehyung down”, Seo Joon takes 5 more seconds to have a last look at his beloved captive before turning around to face the room’s only window up front as he completely shuts Taehyung’s presence out from his mind. He realizes that there are tears rolling down his cheeks so he quickly wipes it away with his sleeves as he prepares himself mentally for war.

Seo Joon doesn’t have time for feelings now. There is a fight that he needs to attend to.

In no time, Seo Joon begins to enter a highly focused state of concentration in which he is no longer the mad man head over heels for Taehyung but the calm mafia army officer that he has trained to become.

Battle mode on.
With full attention, Seo Joon peers out of the reflective window with a pair of binoculars in his left hand, his right hand holding tightly onto his rifle ready to fire at any moment. The forest is as dark as midnight at 2AM in the morning but the moon shines just enough for Seo Joon to capture the whole scene before his eyes.

Currently, the troops are encircling and closing in on the hut at a little over 100 square meters away. Seo Joon visualizes the entire situation: he has gunmen in ambush 360 degrees around the hut and the command given was to start gunning foreign targets down once they enter the 100 meter boundary. Jungkook - his ultimate target - is currently unidentifiable in the mass of ~100+ soldiers from his restricted point of view. Everyone wears the same soldier outfit and it is hard to spot Jungkook but that’s okay, Seo Joon decides that he will just gun down whoever he can first.

Troops are 120 square meters away now.

110 square meters away.

100 square meters --

When one of the armed soldiers first steps into the 100 meter boundary, a terrifying gunshot sounds in the air.

From then onwards, everything escalates too fast.

Before the struck soldier can even fathom what has happened to him, he falls onto the ground completely motionless and lifeless and there it goes, the first casualty of the night shot by the best underground fighter of the era namely Park Seo Joon.

Aren’t the soldiers wearing bulletproof vests, you might ask.

Yes they are but one thing that should’ve been mentioned is that Seo Joon specializes exclusively in headshots. In his many years of serving the mafia for missions and battles, Seo Joon has never wasted a single bullet that is not put through the enemies’ skulls. In this aspect, his way of killing is
fatal, brutal and insanely efficient.

Once the first gunshot sounds, explosive firing begins as snipers from Seo Joon's team begin to gun down their targets as well.

Yes, Jungkook’s army might be twice or even thrice of that of Seo Joon’s in terms of numbers but Seo Joon’s men have an extraordinary advantage: they are ambushed out of sight from Jungkook’s army while Jungkook’s army is blatantly visible to Seo Joon’s men.

In the hut, Seo Joon fires again at another target.

And again.

And again.

Each time he fires he guns down a man from the organization he works in. Since he is the current mafia army officer, some of the soldiers that he has gunned down are personally connected to him.

Tears flow freely from Seo Joon’s eyes but he continues to fire.

He believes that the fight is worth it.

On the other side of the room, muffled screams can be heard from Taehyung screaming through his taped mouth as his skin starts to bleed from the friction against the rope in his endless violent struggles.

But it’s too late.

Everything is already too late.

Seo Joon has started firing so has everyone else in the forest be it those from Jungkook’s army or Seo Joon’s army.
Gunshots and endless shouting resound clearly in the silent forest.

The people alive are currently fighting for their lives while the ones that are killed are gone forever.

Is Jungkook out there right now? Is Jungkook still alive?

Taehyung can only wonder and hope for the best.

“A broken heart bleeds tears.” — Steve Maraboli, Life, the Truth, and Being Free

***

“It is easier to forgive an enemy than to forgive a friend.” — William Blake

***

Location: Forest near a hut-in-hiding, god-knows-where exactly but now we know that they are somewhere in the woods near the North of South Korea

Date & Time: 22nd January 2018 2:21AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 4-5 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

***

Within no time half of the mafia army is down but Jungkook and Namjoon continue to grit their teeth as they inch closer towards the hut because their lovers are right there inside waiting for them.

Many snipers in ambush have already been gunned down by the observant Jungkook who traced the direction of the bullet back to its origin where the snipers are hiding.

On the other hand, Namjoon faithfully covers Jungkook from behind as his bodyguard and guns down anyone that remotely tries to point a gun at the mafia boss.
Helicopters from the mafia side finally arrive at this moment and the mafia finally start to gain advantage against Seo Joon’s gang as a top-down view from the helicopters means that those on top can effectively spot the ambushed snipers and shoot them dead effectively. Snipers start to aim and shoot at the helicopters but of course it’s no use trying to futilely shoot at metal. In fact, the shift of attention is currently allowing mafia soldiers that are still surviving on ground to finally catch some breath.

Jungkook feels himself simmering in rage as he moves closer to the hut via the back door. He signals to the helicopter to move closer to the hut so that once the captives are saved they can be immediately transported to safety via the helicopters.

Why is Jungkook feeling angry, you might ask. Well, it’s because he can somehow guess the identity of the mastermind captor.

The preference for headshots through the centre of the face through the nose into the skull, the high precision rates and accuracy of shooting at a close distance are all bundled up to remind Jungkook of the legend that is his teacher Seo Joon.

Namjoon is aware of the uncanny patterns too.

They are both friends to Seo Joon and are familiar with Seo Joon’s abilities. Also, the fact that the army officer in question was uncontactable a few hours ago when they were trying to render support from the mafia army left them feeling quite strange.

*Seo Joon was never ever uncontactable.*

Eventually, the second officer in command led the army to aid the rescue mission and Jungkook and Namjoon momentarily forgot about Seo Joon’s sudden disappearance but now everything seems to be quite clear - there is a high chance that Seo Joon has turned against the mafia and became the traitor involved in this kidnap.

The realization of a possible betrayal from one of the people he trusts the most feels like a tight slap across Jungkook’s face.
Unforgivable, Jungkook thinks spitefully to himself as his heart starts to ache unknowingly.

His teacher and friend and the person he admires and respects suddenly feels so so distant.

However, all these are just speculations. Jungkook will have to see the captors for himself to confirm his suspicions.

Biting his angry tears away, Jungkook continues to focus on his rescue mission. He will think about all this later once he has gotten to save Taehyung and Jin.

***

Jungkook, Namjoon and a couple more soldiers that had survived the route through the snipers finally arrive at the hut. Without warning, Jungkook kick and barge in through the backdoor of the hut.

At this instant, some of Seo Joon’s men on stand-by from inside the hut immediately spring into action as they charge towards the mafia members to which a fight begins.

Jungkook gives no room for mercy.

Within seconds, he has tackled down all the five men and has knocked them out unconscious with the help of Namjoon and the several other surviving soldiers.

Once everything quietens down slightly, Namjoon and Jungkook take a quick glance at the structure of the hut. They realize that they are currently in the main hall and that there are simply only two other rooms in the hut.

“Namjoon you go to the room on the right, I’ll take the left room. The rest of you cover,” Jungkook whispers and everyone in the team nods.
Suddenly, a gunshot originating from the left room through a window sounds and within seconds one of the soldier inside the hut falls dead.

Jungkook and Namjoon immediately drop low as they tumble to hide behind any material they can possibly find but no they do not dare fire back even though both of them are carrying guns.

*Taehyung and Jin might be inside the room.*

Currently, the whole hut is as silent as night.

The main hall is pitch black and that is when Namjoon realizes that the gunman inside the room shooting through the window is firing based on hearing.

An idea pops up in his brain.

Namjoon signals to Jungkook with his fingers going “3, 2, 1” and once he signals “1”, Namjoon immediately throws his shoe to the opposite corner of where they are at.

True enough, the gunman from the left room immediately fires a few times straight into the shoe. Namjoon and Jungkook immediately takes the moment to sprint into the right and left rooms respectively and in less than 3 seconds they have crashed into the rooms that they are designated to check on.

Turns out they have chosen the correct room to enter.

“For there to be betrayal, there would have to have been trust first.” — Suzanne Collins, *The Hunger Games*

***

“Love makes you foolish. It makes you throw every bit of logic away, do stupid things, dangerous things.” — Melissa Marr, *Radiant Shadows*
Namjoon barges into the right side room and immediately a bullet attacks him right onto his stomach. Thankfully, his bulletproof vest saves him from harm.

Namjoon immediately responds and sends two gunshots into the heads of the two unsuspecting captors who thought that they have gotten Namjoon good. Once they lie dead, Namjoon scoots over to the fresh corpses in an attempt to identify them yet he doesn’t recognize anyone of them.

*These people aren't part of the mafia,* Namjoon thinks to himself and is visibly confused.

Suddenly, sounds of muffled crying catches Namjoon’s attention. He makes his way through the dark and finally the voice leads him to a roped-up boy who is none other than his beloved Jin. Jin’s mouth is taped up too.

Namjoon feels his heart explode in anger at this scene but to a certain extent he is relieved to have found Jin as well.

He hastily removes the tape from Jin’s mouth and unties the ropes.

“NAMJOONIE WE GOT TO SAVE TAEHYUNG TOO!”

“It’s ok now shhhh…. Let’s get on the plane first ok?”

“Okay okay okay…”
Namjoon escorts Jin who is visibly traumatized and endlessly chanting the word “okay” onto the helicopter that is hovering at the room’s window before joining Jin himself onto the aircraft that is currently heading back to the mafia origins headquarters.

Namjoon pulls Jin into a tight embrace.

“Are you hurt, Jinnie?”

“Yes I am.”

Namjoon instantly goes super-saiyan mode.

“WHERE?!”

“My ankle broke!”

“WHO DID IT?!?!??!”

“The two captors in my room!”

“FUCK I SHOULD’VE SLAPPED THEM ALIVE AND MURDERED THEM AGAIN! NOW LET’S GO GET YOU SOME REST BABY.”

“Everyone in love is something of an idiot.”— Alan Shore, Boston Legal

***

“I had discovered that there was something more painful than falling in love with someone who hasn’t fallen for you; hurting that person-hurting him and not being able to do anything about it.” — Elizabeth Chandler, Legacy of Lies & Don’t Tell
Jungkook barges into the left side room.

This room, however, isn't in a pitch-black state. It is lighted dimly with candles and have an open window so Jungkook can clearly see his teacher-turned-traitor Seo Joon standing by the window with a rifle pointing straight at him.

Jungkook has his AK-47 pointed straight into Seo Joon’s face as well.

His suspicions are confirmed: Seo Joon has captured Taehyung.

“Why?! I fucking trusted you!” Jungkook screams in explosive anger, sadness and disappointment.

“I trusted you too,” Seo Joon replies with a firm tone, tears flowing freely from his emotionless face.

“You betrayed me.”

“No, Jungkook. You betrayed me first.”

Both men aim their guns at each other yet they cannot bear to fire now that they are facing each other up front.

Seo Joon realizes that no matter how many times he had rehearsed killing Jungkook in his mind, it is unimaginably hard to do so in reality especially when he gets to see Jungkook’s agonizing face.
Jungkook, on the other hand, has promised himself to kill the captor instantly no matter the identity but now that he is here facing the captor, he can’t seem to pull the trigger as well because that is his teacher and friend for 5 years standing right there.

*Why? Why must it end this way?*

Nothing can hurt Jungkook and Seo Joon more than the current moment: to stare into each other’s faces with anger and sadness while pointing a weapon to each other’s skulls.

While Seo Joon and Jungkook are all focused in their own feelings and attention on each other, Taehyung discreetly tries to wriggle free from the ropes. In fact, he has been trying to untie himself ever since Seo Joon has become busy with his killings.

At a darkened corner of the room, Taehyung who has successfully freed his hands tries to untie the ropes that are holding his legs and waist to the chair as well.

He is extremely relieved that Jungkook is alive at this point but he needs to stay quiet and keep his cool.

The atmosphere is very tensed right now and Taehyung can feel himself sweating as he tries to untie the ropes silently and discreetly. Time to time, he flicks his fullest attention back to Seo Joon and Jungkook who are having an angsty conversation right now but otherwise focuses on freeing himself from the chair.

Finally, all the ropes and the annoying tape on his mouth are undone.

Taehyung heaves a sigh innately and proceeds to monitor the situation from his chair.

***

“What do you mean? Explain yourself Seo Joon. What do you mean when you said that I’ve betrayed you first? When did I betray you? I never ever once betrayed you. And where is Taehyung? Where the fuck is Taehyung?!”
Silence for some seconds before Seo Joon speaks calmly.

“Remember the person I’ve once mentioned to you about? The one that have inspired me to become the fighter I am today? The one that I’ve said that I will go back to one day?”

“Yes, though you’ve never told me the name of that person but what has that got to do with ---”

“That person is Taehyung.”

Silence for 10 seconds. Seo Joon continues to speak through Jungkook's shock.

“Jungkook, that person is Taehyung. We were from the same orphanage and I have started loving him before he was even a gangster in the streets. I was the head of the HWARANG gang then but later moved to Seoul where I got in touch with The Mafia Origins. I wanted to make myself stronger so that I could be Taehyung’s man but right before I could even have the chance to make him mine you just came out of nowhere and snatched him away. I hate you every single day since your marriage to him. You betrayed me first Jungkook, unknowingly, but it still hurts me no less... I'm not too sure why I am even bothering to explain this to you. Jungkook, you deserve to die for the pain you have inflicted on me.”

With that, Seo Joon’s eyes narrow into a squint. He clicks on the trigger and fires straight at Jungkook’s chest to vent his anger though he didn't mean to kill Jungkook knowing that Jungkook and all of the mafia troops are most certainly wearing bulletproof vests but the next thing that is about to happen will cause him to regret his actions for an eternity...

***

Taehyung listens intently to the two men converse as his heart races to a shockingly fast pace.

His exact location currently is at the left back corner of the room shunned from the light while Jungkook is standing a few meters away from him at the door on his right. Seo Joon is on the opposite side of the room near the window where he was firing at.
Seo Joon and Jungkook are completely immersed in their own conversation, seemingly to have forgotten about Taehyung briefly yet they have no idea what this flicker of attention would cause them.

“Jungkook, that person is Taehyung. We were from the same orphanage and I have started loving him before he was even a gangster in the streets. I was the head of the HWARANG gang then but later came to Seoul where I got in touch with The Mafia Origins. I wanted to make myself stronger so that I could be Taehyung’s man but right before I could even have the chance to make him mine you just came out of nowhere and snatched him away.”

Taehyung listens as Seo Joon narrates a full paragraph of back story, the candles that light up Seo Joon’s face shows that he is in so much sadness and pain as he speaks.

“I hate you every single day since your marriage to him. You betrayed me first Jungkook, unknowingly, but it still hurts me no less.”

At this point, Taehyung notices a change from sadness to hate in Seo Joon’s eyes and his heart races even faster. Shifting his attention to Seo Joon’s rifle, Taehyung notices that Seo Joon has began to push his finger back onto the trigger slightly and in this instant Taehyung is immediately washed over by a wave of panic.

*Is Seo Joon going to fire at Kook?*

“I’m not too sure why I even bother explaining this to you. Jungkook, you deserve to die for the pain you have inflicted on me.”

Upon registering those words, Taehyung immediately sprints over to cover Jungkook in a tight hug without even thinking of the consequences. He is currently feeling the exact same feeling he had felt 12 years ago when Jungkook was almost attacked by a paedophile.

*I need to protect Jungkook, I’ve promised to protect him from all the harm in the world.*

In this instant, Jungkook isn’t a powerful mafia boss to Taehyung anymore - in this moment, Jungkook is only a boy that needs to be protected from the atrocities of the world to Taehyung.
Seo Joon fires and a bullet shoots into Taehyung’s shoulder.

Taehyung falls to the ground.

***

“Taehyung!” Jungkook screams and bursts out into shocked tears after having had registered the situation. Taehyung had just ran out to shelter him from Seo Joon’s bullet. At this moment, Jungkook forgets that he is dealing with Seo Joon who can possibly gun him down any moment as he instantly drops the gun in his hands so that he can hug tightly onto the falling Taehyung.

His wife has just risked his life to save him.

Jungkook starts to ball his eyes out, his teary eyes all focused on Taehyung.

Taehyung winces in pain but smiles, his tired eyes glistening in happiness for having finally returned to his husband’s embrace after a long day.

“Hi Kook, oh man why are you crying like a baby now it's ugly.”

***

Seo Joon looks at the scene in front of him.

The pain he feels in his heart is undescrivable.

Never in his life had he ever, ever intended to hurt Taehyung.

His whole frame starts to shake as he melts down to the floor on his knees, the tears that he has been holding in finally bursting out into the open.
Everything seeps out from within him: all his years of dwelling in the feelings of unrequited love, pain and jealousy - all these emotions that he has hidden deep inside him suddenly surfaces and overwhelms him.

*Why has it become like this?*

*Why?!*

All he wanted was to love and protect Taehyung.

All he wanted was to be given a chance to love Taehyung and for Taehyung to love him back just a little.

Seo Joon had never known what was the right way to love.

Seo Joon didn’t know that his love for Taehyung had spiralled into an unhealthy obsession.

He was born an orphan and was loved by no one.

The only people that he can count on is HWARANG and he does all that he can to protect them but in the end he couldn't protect them at all.

Seo Joon fell in love with Taehyung at first sight and Taehyung was all that Seo Joon had ever wanted.

Seo Joon would be happy with a smile, a hug, and a “let’s watch a movie together this weekend!” from Taehyung.

He just wanted to lie peacefully in a couch all day with Taehyung, not even to fuck, just watch a movie together till they fall asleep.
Is that too much to ask?

Is that too ambitious?

Is it not right to fight hard for the love of his life?

And up till this point who is to deny the weight of Seo Joon’s love for Taehyung?

Seo Joon had once promised himself to protect Taehyung at all cost, to exterminate whoever that remotely tries to harm Taehyung but now he realizes that he himself is the one hurting Taehyung.

In a split second, Seo Joon decides without much hesitation to end himself once and for all.

“Taehyung, I am sorry. All I have ever wanted in my life is to love you. From the very moment I landed my eyes on you there is no turning back but now that I’ve hurt you, I don’t deserve to have you anymore. Jungkook, please send Taehyung immediately to the hospital, a shoulder gun wound isn’t fatal but the blood loss might eventually cost his life. Hurry, I shall trust you to take care of Taehyung forever.”

Once his words land, Seo Joon issues an “abort mission” command through his walkie talkie and without hesitation he aims his own rifle to his temple.

Seeing that scene, Jungkook instantly recovers from his shell-shocked state and starts screaming for Seo Joon in an attempt to stop his suicide.

“No! Seo Joon no!” Jungkook shouts with all the air left in his lungs but he is too late.

With tears in his eyes, Seo Joon whispers to himself. “God, I don’t deserve to be forgiven for my sins but even if I burn in hell I ask for one final request and that is for Taehyung to live through this and to be happy forever. Amen.”

After Seo Joon’s words land, he fires and collapses on the spot.
“Let me die the moment my love dies. Let me not outlive my own capacity to love. Let me die still loving, and so, never die.” — Mary Zimmerman, Metamorphoses

***

“It is not death that a man should fear, but he should fear never beginning to live.” — Marcus Aurelius

***

Location: A helicopter flying towards the nearest hospital
Date & Time: 22nd January 2018 2:49AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 4-5 months into marriage]
[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

***

“Taehyung, hang in there, we will be reaching the nearest hospital in 25 minutes. Please hang in there for me ok? You can do it. Keep your eyes open,” Jungkook speaks in a soothing tone while holding onto a wounded Taehyung in his arms. Both their clothes are drenched in Taehyung’s blood. Jungkook has his right hand pressed against Taehyung’s gunshot wound to prevent severe bleeding but unfortunately a pool of blood continues to form beneath them.

Jungkook is shaking uncontrollably, traumatized tears streaming down his face endlessly but he toughens up on the exterior as he strokes onto Taehyung’s hair gently.

Deep in his heart, Jungkook is scared out of his wits.

He has never seen Taehyung so deeply wounded before.

This is not just punches and kicks anymore because what they are dealing with right now is a gunshot.

A fucking gunshot.
“Don’t be scared Jungkook...I think that I can survive this... but in case if I don’t….I want to say that… I love you….really...I love you…even if I die now I have no regrets to be able to do so in your arms...” Taehyung says and he means every word coming out of his mouth.

Jungkook heart breaks into a million pieces. He lowers his head and kisses Taehyung on the forehead. They look into each other’s eyes.

“I love you too...but please don’t say that baby. You will and have to survive this. I believe in you.”

“I feel really sleepy now Kook, I’ve had a long day... It will feel good to sleep in your embrace…”

“No no no keep your eyes open! Taehyung, listen to me. You can’t sleep now ok? Let’s talk, let’s talk to keep you awake.”

Jungkook starts to get really desperate. Taehyung, on the other hand, is actually feeling just mildly giddy. He knows that he isn’t going to die soon from the shoulder gun wound but he decides to continue teasing Jungkook.

“Oh man… I was hoping to catch a blink of sleep but I’ll try to stay awake if you say so… I’m bleeding a lot Kook, honestly I’m not sure if I can make it…please help me tell BANGTAN that I’ve loved them....”

“No! Please don’t talk in past tense right now Kim Tae Hyung! I told you that you are going to make it so you are going to make it!”

“Kook ah...I want my grave to be at ---”

“Kim Tae Hyung we are only 20 minutes away right now from the hospital! Please just wait a little longer, just a little more!”

“I want Daniel Caesar’s music to be played at my funeral, ask Jimin for the playlist and make sure to give all the guests cotton candies alright? Who should I invite ----”
Jungkook finally starts sobbing as he snuggles his head into Taehyung’s neck.

“No no no baby please don’t talk like this it’s making me really scared...Please please please just hang in there you are not going to die I’m sure of it you still have so many things to do in life and you said you wanted to top me remember? If you survive this I’ll let you top me. Once.”

Taehyung widens his eyes momentarily and almost jumps when he hears that but continues to fake death after two seconds.

“Really?.... Then I got to survive this then….so that I can fuck your ass….You really mean what you said? Ahhh….I feel tired Kook, I feel tired I’m going to close my eyes for a moment...”

“No don’t you dare close your eyes! Yes if you survive this you can fuck me alright! This is your life’s biggest wish so don’t you dare die on my right now Kim Tae Hyung!” Jungkook is literally screaming in tears into Taehyung’s ears right now.

The two soldiers who are sharing the helicopter with their mafia boss steal a few glances at Jungkook, their lips pressed into a thin line as they gaze back at each other with an unknown expression.

Taehyung grins victoriously. He is so touched that tears are welling up in his eyes.

15 minutes later the helicopter lands at XY hospital and Taehyung enters the emergency room with a blissful smile thinking about the various ways he can use Jungkook.

Oh Taehyung sure doesn’t regret to have taken the bullet for Jungkook~

“Live your life that the fear of death can never enter your heart.” — Tecumseh

***

“The life of the dead is placed in the memory of the living.” — Marcus Tullius Cicero
It’s been two weeks ever since Taehyung is sent to the hospital and at the current moment he has already fully healed from his wound.

The bullet to his shoulder proved to be non-fatal and apart from the fact that Taehyung still feels like his arm is splitting into two, he is all healed and ready to return and resume his duty as BANGTAN’s gang leader.

Talking about BANGTAN, it is obvious that Taehyung and Jungkook can no longer hide the truth of their marriage and Jungkook’s true identity from Jimin, Hoseok and Jin so they sit them down in the hospital one day where Taehyung is healing at in the presence of Namjoon. Jungkook and Taehyung proceed to explain everything from the start to the end to Hoseok, Jin and Jimin.

Jimin, Jin and Hoseok are initially surprised but later prove to be pretty understanding after awhile. Jungkook was right, Hoseok, Jin and Jimin absolutely loved the fact that Jungkook and Taehyung are happy together, though Hoseok had a good time laughing over the fact that Taehyung is the wife in the relationship to which Taehyung’s face burns into black charcoal.

*Flashback starts*

“Actually, I have something to announce as well...Namjoon and I have been officially dating for 5 days!” says Jin gleefully while blushing with reddened cheeks after Taehyung and Jungkook had just revealed their relationship.

“Oh my goodness that’s so cute!” squeal Taehyung, Hoseok and Jimin in surprise as they have absolutely no idea about the Namjin couple while Jungkook nods with an unimpressed face. Namjoon beams in pride.

“Heheheh actually…Hoseok and I have something to announce too… we have been dating for 10
years,” Jimin announces with a proud grin and everyone goes crazy.

“WHAT?!” Taehyung, Jungkook, Namjoon and Jin are so mind-blown. They had absolutely no idea that their gangmates have been dating since the ancient times and just like this, three couples are revealed that very day.

*Flashback ends*

Currently, Taehyung has just been discharged from the hospital and is accompanying Jungkook to pay his respect for the first time at Seo Joon's grave.

They see flowers left on the tomb by his previous girlfriend Ara. The flowers are wet despite the sunny weather.

Silence for 3 minutes.

Tears roll down Jungkook’s cheeks.

“Seo Joon was an honourable man and I hope to remember him as the teacher and the friend he is to me. I didn’t know that he was living in so much pain. I hope he will rest in peace now.”

Taehyung sighs and walks up to Jungkook before hugging his husband tight in his embrace.

“He will rest in peace Jungkook. He will be smiling in heaven if he knows that I have forgiven him and most importantly, that you have forgiven him.”

“If I was in his shoes, I might have done the exact same thing Taehyung. He really did love you and I can see it in his eyes but you chose to love me. I was lucky and he isn’t and that must have sucked for him. I know how it feels to not be able to have you in my life.”

“Hey hey Jungkook, don’t blame yourself on this. It’s not your fault that I chose to love you. His last words were for you to take care of me don’t you remember? That was his final wish Jungkook. He
finally understood and he finally could let me go.”

Silence for 10 seconds.

“You're right Taehyung, I shall take care and treasure you forever. I love you Taehyung, you are very precious to me. Thank you for choosing to love me.”

“I love you too Jungkook and I will be eternally grateful for your love.”

The couple then proceeds to silently watch the sunset together. They cannot promise each other that they will live till tomorrow's sunset because nobody knows exactly when they are going to die. Hell, one of their friends has just passed away and Taehyung himself was a millicentimetre away from death but what they can promise each other is to never take each other's love and life for granted in their present moment as husband and wife. Till the very end, Taehyung and Jungkook will hold each other close and upon their final breaths do they part and meet again in heaven.

I found myself dreaming
   In silver and gold
   Like a scene from a movie
   That every broken heart knows we were walking on moonlight
   And you pulled me close
   Split second and you disappeared and then I was all alone
   I woke up in tears
   With you by my side
   A breath of relief
   And I realized
   No, we're not promised tomorrow
   So I'm gonna love you
   Like I'm gonna lose you
   I'm gonna hold you
   Like I'm saying goodbye wherever we're standing
   I won't take you for granted 'cause we'll never know when
   When we'll run out of time so I'm gonna love you
   Like I'm gonna lose you
   I'm gonna love you like I'm gonna lose you
   In the blink of an eye
   Just a whisper of smoke
   You could lose everything
   The truth is you never know
   So I'll kiss you longer baby
Any chance that I get
I'll make the most of the minutes and love with no regrets
Let's take our time
To say what we want
Use what we got
Before it's all gone

'Cause no, we're not promised tomorrow
So I'm gonna love you
Like I'm gonna lose you
I'm gonna hold you

Like I'm saying goodbye wherever we're standing
I won't take you for granted 'cause we'll never know when
When we'll run out of time so I'm gonna love you
Like I'm gonna lose you
I'm gonna love you like I'm gonna lose you

Like I'm Gonna Lose You — Meghan Trainor

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don't have an account/are on incognito mode?
Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

Connect with me on twitter where I post updates, polls, short stories, AUs and other related content: @hidden__tracks (two underscores)

Also, you can buy me a cup of coffee to motivate me in writing and to show support for my stories here: hiddentracks@ko-fi (thank you <3)
Jealousy Drive

Chapter Summary

Jungkook forces Taehyung to enroll into the mafia army for a greater good. Things happen.

“O, beware, my lord, of jealousy;
It is the green-ey'd monster, which doth mock
The meat it feeds on.”
― William Shakespeare, Othello

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Underground Headquarters Central Mansion aka VKOOK’s underground home

Date & Time: 11th February 2018 1:21PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 4-5 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

***

Jungkook and Taehyung are having lunch together one Sunday at home. It’s been 3 full days after Taehyung is discharged from the hospital with no further complications from the bullet put through his left shoulder.

“Baby, I have something to tell you,” Jungkook speaks slowly but surely after he swallows his last mouthful of rice. He places down his chopsticks and stares straight up at Taehyung who is still munching onto his vegetable-filled rice bowl like a cute little puppy.

In fact, Taehyung has learnt to obediently finish his own portion of vegetables after 5 months of marriage with Jungkook. He most certainly doesn’t want his poor ass to be mercilessly ploughed by Jungkook’s massive protrusion just because of some pieces of uneaten greens.

Upon hearing Jungkook’s solemn words, Taehyung lifts his head curiously from his food to meet eyes with his husband.
“Hmmm?” Taehyung asks innocently, his eyes big and sparkly.

At this moment, Jungkook is once again reminded of Taehyung’s ethereal beauty. Taehyung is so beautiful that Jungkook’s heart just hurts so much every time he lay eyes on his wife. You know how it is always the most random moments when you realize that a lifetime isn’t enough with your other half? That is exactly the way Jungkook is feeling right now - absolutely smitten for Taehyung when he’s just being himself.

5 seconds of dazing out before Jungkook remembers that he is in the midst of announcing something really important. After jerking back from his semi-hypnotized mode, Jungkook hastily clears his throat before blurting out a paragraph in which none of the words are what Taehyung wants to hear.

“Anyway I have discussed with Namjoon about Jin and your recent kidnap by Seo Joon and we’ve decided that since the both of you are directly linked to us in a romantic relationship, it is of vital importance that you guys know the basics of personal protection and defence. We don’t know when any of our mafia members would suddenly turn against us again or worst, to use you guys as hostages. After the incident 2 weeks ago both Namjoon and I are getting increasingly worried about this because we want both of you to be safe from harm so we’ve decided to send you guys into the coming mafia army batch for 6 months of training to equip both of you with basic skills on how to fight professionally.”

Once Jungkook’s last sentence land, Taehyung instantly chokes on his vegetables. He tosses his chopsticks to the side and dramatically slams the table in shock.

“What?! You are sending me and Jin into the mafia training army?! I already know how to fight so this isn’t necessary and hell no, being in the army means that I’ll be trapped in camp 24/7 isn’t it! Kook, don’t you know that I just want to be a free and happy gangster?? Hell no am I going to agree to that!!”

Evidently, Taehyung expresses a high level of unwillingness to enter the army. Jungkook immediately tries to soothe his wife with a tone that is half persuasive but also half persistent.

“Hey hey baby listen up. No doubt you are a great street fighter but when it comes to actual combat with professionals you are still lacking. Especially in terms of using a gun, the most basic yet the most lethal weapon which you’ve never used before in your life - do you know how to fully load a gun within 5 seconds? Do you know how to aim it accurately to take down an opponent? Taehyung, you must serve at least 6 months in the army to know all this.

Also, another reason why I am insisting on your recruitment into the army is for you to learn more
about the people that are serving the mafia. In fact 80% of all mafia members have trained or are still
serving in the mafia army and I want you to interact and learn more about the mafia organization first
hand through this. Hence my decision is final - you will be joining the newly recruited army tier 2
batch once training starts in March. Don’t worry, none of the fresh batch have seen you before or
know your true identity as my wife since they are just freshly recruited into the army. For security
purposes, you’ll still need to go by another name that is not Taehyung just in case because we
absolutely cannot let anyone know your true identity.”

Taehyung is speechless. 3 seconds later his angered face melts into the standard “help me Jungkook
is going bonkus again” desperate expression because Jungkook sounds absolutely dead serious
about his entry into the army.

“But but but but ---”

Jungkook instantly switches into full-on alpha mode.

“No buts. No aegyo. My decision is final.”

With that, Taehyung starts to frown in disgust at his own misfortune. He knows that if Jungkook
says “my decision is final” it means that his decision is really final and that no further debates can
successfully change his mind.

“Kook, you said that Jin is to be recruited too right? *Sigh* at least I have somebody to accompany
me inside the army...”

Jungkook returns a deep sigh upon hearing Taehyung's words.

“No, unfortunately Jin won’t be posted into the same batch as you. Jin is going to enter the tier 1
batch first characterized with “no prior training in combat”. Tier 1 batch is for people that don't know
how to fight at all which is basically where Jin stands currently in terms of his fighting abilities. He
will mainly learn things from the very basic level which is simply how to fight and defend himself
physically in case of attacks and threats. However, you will straight away enter the tier 2 batch which
is characterized by “decent combat skills with no prior training in situational understanding, no prior
training in professional gun or weapon control and no prior training in accomplishing organized team
missions.” There’s another higher level which is tier 3 but it is reserved only for officers-to-be and
high-performing recruits so I won’t require you to go through that. Honestly, Jin is much more
unfortunate than you because after he completes tier 1 he’ll have to finish tier 2 too before he can
return to BANGTAN which means while you only spend 6 months in the mafia army, he’ll need to
spend 1 year in total doing both tier 1 and tier 2 training.”
Taehyung is speechless again. 10 seconds of silence. In his mind Taehyung can't help but picture how Jin is going to ball his eyes out when Namjoon reveals this 1-year-long training plan to the BANGTAN gang doctor.

Speaking about BANGTAN, questions start to invade Taehyung’s mind. He is visibly in distress right now.

“If I go into the ARMY, who’s going to take care of BANGTAN while I’m away and what name am I changing to Kook since you say I can’t use my real name?! This shit so complicated it almost sounds like I'm being an undercover or something. Also, does this mean that we’ll have to be separated for 6 months?!”

“About BANGTAN, I suggest that you ask Jimin and Hoseok to take over for the time being while you are away. About the name issue, usually the army members are addressed by their index numbers directly but yes you do need a new nickname that your army mates can remember you by. Hmmm……what about V, your street name?”

V stands for vicious, villainous and victorious and this nickname has been following Taehyung on the streets for years.

“Alright I’m good with V since everyone in the street calls me that. I’m used to it so it’s good but hey, don’t ignore my last question. I’m good with serving the army and I know that Jimin and Hoseok are capable of handling BANGTAN for the time being but I need to know something - does me going into the army means that I have to separate from you for 6 fucking months?! If that’s the case then it’s a no deal,” Taehyung speaks with crossed arms and a determined pouty face.

“No baby, fortunately we won't be separating because I have appointed myself to take on the tier 2 batch’s commander role! Namjoon has also volunteered to be the commander or direct trainer of the tier 1 batch for Jin. The mafia army training is going to be harder than you think baby and I won’t want any accidents to happen to you so I’ll be monitoring you closely but of course when we are in the army we’ll have to refrain ourselves from revealing our relationship. You’ll be V and I’ll be Commander JK. We cannot interact in any way in front of the rest of the army that might give our relationship status away. In fact, you’ll need to call me “sir” and listen to my commands at all times do you understand?”

Taehyung stares blankly at Jungkook for 3 seconds before bursting out into uncontained laughter.
“Yo Kook! That sounds fucking kinky! I have to call you “sir” and obey to your commands at all times?! Is this all part of the plan? I’m dying now holy I need some holy water this situation is too fucking funny oh god!”

Jungkook watches as Taehyung starts to dramatically clap his hands repeatedly like a seal would of its fins laughing his ass off at something Jungkook doesn’t find even remotely funny.

Jungkook’s eyes narrow into a squint. He doesn’t like it when Taehyung doesn’t take serious matters seriously. They are in the midst of talking about something dead serious and Taehyung just chooses the right moment to twist an honourable code of conduct in the army into something kinky.

What a naughty naughty wifey...Jungkook thinks to himself and is secretly turned on but on the surface he remains a deadpan face.

“I think you’ll need some disciplinary lessons before you enter the mafia army, baby,” Jungkook speaks with so much heat in his voice and suddenly shoots up from his seat, walking slowly but surely towards Taehyung.

Taehyung stops laughing instantly as he freezes in place and looks up at the incoming Jungkook. An alarm breaks out in Taehyung’s mind. OH MY GOD OH MY GOD OH DANGER IS APPROACHING -------

Without warning, Jungkook pulls Taehyung out of his seat effortlessly and flicks Taehyung over his broad shoulders before trudging towards the bedroom all while locking Taehyung in his arms.

Taehyung wails. He struggles futilely and starts whining. Damn it, sometimes Taehyung just forgets how strong the current Jungkook is until the occurrence of such moments.

“Haven’t fucked you since you were hospitalized. Are you asking for it now?”

“Put me down it’s noon Kook it’s only noon!”

Taehyung knows he is in deep shit. When Jungkook starts he doesn't stop till it's at least midnight.
“Do I look like I care what time of the day it is? Taehyung you better learn to listen to me in the army or I’ll fuck you till you cry inside the training forest grounds when no one’s looking.”

Fear mounts up in Taehyung’s heart when he realizes what dire situation he is in right now. From Jungkook’s words he can guess that the general direction of the sex that is about to come soon will be headed with the purpose of punishment.

“Hey hey Kook you need to calm down let me explain I was just CRACKING A JOKE I don’t mean to be disrespectful towards you really I’m just ----”

Before Taehyung can finish his sentence, the sound of the bedroom door being slammed shut can be heard. Taehyung is then crashed onto the bed.

“Hey hey Kookie please no I’m sorry Kookie……ahhhh haaaaangh!!!!!!!!!!!! FUCK FUCK FUCK ASDDHJSKDAHKJDSHKADJSJKHDSJ!!!!!!!”

“Struggle more and I’m going to spank you.”

“NOOOO ---- DFDJFKSFJDLFJSLDFJDLFJKLFJDLJFEORIEOFDSFDFKLF!!!!!!!”

RIP Taehyung.

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Training Ground Central Gathering Quad

Date & Time: 1st March 2018 9AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

***

300 men in military attire stand neatly in formation inside the area of a 5 acres large quad. Among the
300 or so people, a very grumpy Taehyung blends in with the mass. Three days ago he had unwillingly chopped off his locks into a short neat cut to which Jungkook lighted up and commented that he was “incredibly stunning and sexy” before grabbing him into the bedroom to wreck for 7 hours. 3 hours ago Jungkook made Taehyung put on a military attire before driving him into the compound only to drop him off discreetly at a distance as he uttered his last words as a husband to Taehyung: “Go in yourself and make sure to act like we don’t know each other beforehand. See you later baby.” 3 minutes ago, a random sergeant had allocated him into platoon #9 of the 10 platoons and now he and his 29 other army teammates are standing in a block formation facing the elevated stage in front.

A few minutes later, Jungkook and an unknown beautiful woman walk up onto the elevated stage. All hail! The commander and the assistant commander have finally arrived!

While all men in the compound are thinking “oh my goodness we are having a lady commander as our eye-candy yes!”, Taehyung is just trying hard not to feel depressed. He had been told by Jungkook last night that although both of them would get to meet everyday during training, they wouldn’t get to sleep together for Jungkook would be sleeping in the commander’s private bunk while Taehyung would be sleeping with his platoon mates in the shared military bunk. That made both Jungkook and Taehyung incredibly sad but oh well, that is just the way army works.

Jungkook scans the area and once his eyes land on Taehyung he calmly starts his speech. With a loud and stable tone, he begins speaking to the masses.

“Greetings, tier 2. I am sir Commander JK and she is your vice-commander IU. From now on you’ll have to listen to all our instructions and everything we command you’ll have to obey is that clear?!”

Silence because everyone is too dumbstruck to react.

3 seconds later the demure-looking IU suddenly starts to scream crazily like a tigress with a contorted pissed-off face: “Is that clear?! Are y’all dead?!?” to which everyone finally snaps back into reality.

Pretty-face vice-commander isn’t just an eye candy after all.

“Yes sir! Yes ma’am!”

“Now return to your military bunks to unload your bags! You are given 5 minutes. No talking, no
idling, no slacking. Go to your assigned platoon bunk, choose a bed and put down your bag. It’s 9:02am right now and I want you to get back here and stand exactly where you are standing right now by 9:07am. After that you pigs will be going for a 20km run as your breakfast!” Jungkook literally screams his degrading command now without a tinge of mercy in his voice.

The moment Jungkook’s words land is the exact moment when Taehyung realizes what deep shit he is in.

_Are you fucking kidding me 20km of running before food?!_ Taehyung thinks to himself desperately but right after Jungkook finishes his paragraph of instructions Taehyung has no time to sulk but to run as fast as his legs can carry him with his other platoon mates towards bunk #9 as instructed by their attached sergeant to be located some 500m away north of the central quad.

Goddammit, it’s not even 10 minutes into the first day of army and Taehyung is already running with everyone else like a mad dog.

2 minutes later, platoon #9 reaches their bunk. Everyone hastily chooses a bed and so does Taehyung who literally just jumps onto a bed on the left most corner towards the back of the bunk, throws his massive backpack of personal belongings down and proceeds to sprint out with the rest of the platoon again.

3 minutes later at 9:07am everyone including Taehyung is back in the quad. Fortunately, none of the 300 men are late.

As soon as Taehyung stands back in his place, he is instantly met with an eye sore.

He narrow his eyes into a squint at Jungkook who is currently chatting happily on the elevated stage with commander IU.

This woman is indeed beautiful. In the past if Taehyung were to see such a woman walking down the streets he would be fighting to get her number but currently all Taehyung has in his mind is gay panic. He remembers that sometime in the earlier days of their marriage, Jungkook has said something along the lines of the fact that he “isn’t totally gay” and that “he actually finds some women attractive” (refer to Jin’s photo pt. 2).

A wave of fear and jealousy immediately wells up in Taehyung’s heart at that thought. Jungkook is
still young and he isn’t even 21 yet. What if Jungkook is just experimenting with him? What if Jungkook grows up to find that he actually has a capacity to love a woman?! What if Jungkook falls in love with a woman and abandons him?!

3 minutes of Jungkook and IU chatting in close proximity with smiles in front of everyone. They are so close that they seem to be whispering into each other’s ears. While everyone is just happy to earn some resting time before the 20km run later, Taehyung is literally dying from overthinking too much.

*Jungkook doesn’t love me anymore*, Taehyung thinks irrationally to himself after 3 minutes of staring at some Jungkook-IU interactions and when Jungkook and IU finally pull away from each other seemingly to have ended their close discussion, Taehyung finally heaves a sigh of relief but overall he still looks upset.

“Good that you all are back in time. Now your sergeants will lead your 20km run in the forest. After that gather in the canteen for lunch before 12pm. An extra minute from 12pm adds an extra km to your platoon’s run tomorrow morning are you clear?” Jungkook shouts.

This time, there is no hesitation on the recruits' part in acknowledging Jungkook’s command.

“Yes sir!”

Just like that, 300 men including a vexed Taehyung set off into a hellish 20km run in the forest with empty stomachs.

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Canteen  
Date & Time: 1st March 2018 12PM  

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage]  
[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]  

***

At 12pm, 10 platoons of men collapse onto the tables in the canteen looking like they have just died and revived but are still barely surviving.
Taehyung is among one of the many zombies struggling to keep his eyelids open because fuck eating, he just wants to drink a load of water and fall into 439482048930 hours of recovery sleep.

The 20km run is surprisingly tough for Taehyung who isn’t really a fitness junkie to begin with. Yes, Taehyung has a well-built body from fighting constantly in the streets but Taehyung has never in his life tried to train a stamina before. In fact, the 20km run is currently making Taehyung feel slightly giddy such that he needs to grab onto the side tables to stand up properly. Thinking about how he had made Jungkook run every morning in the past when Jungkook was still a child, Taehyung suddenly started to feel like everything that is happening right now is Jungkook’s conspiracy for revenge.

To add on to that, the image of Jungkook and IU standing together is starting to burn into his mind. Wow….just wow….they actually even look compatible, Taehyung thinks spitefully to himself. In anger and jealousy, he decides to ignore his feelings for a moment, springing up from the canteen table to fetch food but 2 seconds later he start to stumble clumsily due to his dizziness.

Seeing that Taehyung is going to fall, somebody from his platoon who is sitting right next to Taehyung immediately stands up and grabs hold of the falling Taehyung safely into his arms.

“Hey there, you ok?” the saviour boy speaks. Taehyung looks up at the sturdy young man who is holding onto him firmly and realizes from appearance that the boy looks like he is at a similar age to Jungkook which is around approximately 20 or 21 years old.

After a moment of confusion owing to his dizziness, the dazed out Taehyung immediately pulls himself away from the boy.

“Thank you so much. Yes I’m good, just feeling a little giddy.”

“In that case you can just sit and rest then, I’ll fetch your food for you. I’m Bogum by the way, but you can call me Gum. What’s your name?”

“Oh in that case thank you so much. I’m V.”

Bogum flashes a warm smile.

“Nice to meet you V,” Bogum says as he reaches out his hand to ruffle on Taehyung's hair.
Well, Bogum is just being friendly. He has the tendency to give people affectionate hair ruffles and encouraging pats on the back and is generally a polite person.

Taehyung blushes slightly because the gesture reminds him of the good side of Jungkook.

On the other hand, Jungkook who is witnessing all these Taehyung-Bogum interactions literally has his eyes popping out of his sockets.

*My wifey is being touched on the head by another man! Taehyung's hair is for me to touch only!* Jungkook starts overthinking dramatically and feels his scalp burning like a steam engine.

“Boss, what are you looking at?” IU whose real name is Jieun, realizes that something is wrong with Jungkook’s vibe and energy. She then looks in the direction of where Jungkook is glaring at and instantly realizes something.

Of course, IU isn't just any vice-commander. After Namjoon left Jungkook’s side to become the tier 1 commander for Jin, a new bodyguard has to replace Namjoon and IU happens to be the best candidate currently to assume the role. Firstly, Seo Joon is gone. Secondly, Ara, the commander of the female army, is definitely not in the correct mental state to assume the role as Jungkook's bodyguard having had just lost her boyfriend so after all considerations, Jungkook have decided to use Jieun, the most elite soldier-turned-officer previously trained under Ara's army to be his personal bodyguard for the time being till Namjoon is back.

Also, although Jieun might appear small and pretty, she is actually strong enough to own sparring battles with any male soldiers picked from the male army and most importantly, what makes her stronger than the rest of the pile is her unrivalled intelligence. She comes in top and manages to break free fastest from the toughest situational training in the mafia. When the others solve a certain puzzle or unlock a certain clue and finally find their way out of the situational complex - say a designed matrix - the first thing they see is a nonchalant Jieun sitting at the exit reading a book waiting rather patiently for the rest to arrive. Yes, this is just how effortlessly smart Jieun is.

On the side note, Jungkook has most certainly informed Jieun the top secret that is Taehyung’s true identity so that Jieun can aid him in keeping an eye on his wife but other than that, not a single soul other than Jieun knows about the relationship between Taehyung and Jungkook.

At this instant, Jieun aka commander IU immediately deduces from Jungkook’s eyes that he is currently being jealous over a random dude showing care towards Taehyung.
“Chill out, boss,” Jieun states with a deadpan face, rolling her eyes at the immaturity displayed by her mafia boss.

Jungkook breathes in deeply and breathes out, tries to look away from Taehyung but a few seconds later his eyes uncontrollably float back to the love of his life. His heart aches to see Taehyung being so tired but this is the army and Taehyung has to go through all these to toughen up. It's even worse now that Taehyung needs to interact and become closer with other men besides himself. Jungkook can’t start regretting his decision in enrolling Taehyung here now, can he? It’s all for the greater good.

“Can’t you see that I am very chill? Yes I am very chill yes I am,” Jungkook speaks with clear desperation in his voice.

“Sure…” Jieun presses her lips into a thin line and sighs. Men are all a little crazy isn’t it, Jieun thinks to herself and is suddenly relieved that she only likes women. She already knows that these few months with Jungkook and Taehyung isn’t going to go as smoothly as planned.

“And yes, I'll admit, I am jealous. I'm jealous of every minute you spend with him, of every concerned expression you send his way, of every tear shed, of every glance, every touch, and every thought. I want to rip him to pieces and purge him from your mind and from your heart. But I can’t.” — Colleen Houck

Twitter: @hidden__tracks (two underscores)
Platoon 9's Bad Day

Chapter Summary

In this chapter and the next we will start to see the wider perspective on things in terms of how the mafia is in fact destroying the lives of many innocent people. We haven’t really seen the bad side of the mafia yet but over here we start to see more and more reality. These two chapters will also touch on the main theme of this fanfiction and that is violence and its effects on the society so sit down with some popcorn and enjoy reading~

“Assumptions are the termites of relationships.” — Henry Winkler

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Training Ground Platoon #9 Bunk

Date & Time: 4th March 2018 4:55AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| The fourth day in The Mafia Army |

***

“V wake up! We’re going to be late!” Bogum screams at the top of his lungs at the currently still sound-asleep Taehyung. The current timing is a dangerous 4:55am and all 300 men in tier 2 are supposed to gather at the quad in position by 5am. Bogum was already all ready in his training attire ready to set off to the gathering venue at 4:50am but before he left he took a quick glance to the corner of the bunk only to realize in utmost horror that his best friend in the platoon, V, is still lying completely dead-ass motionless on the bed like a million-year rock.

“Oh shit V wake up!”

***

Over the past few days, Taehyung have developed a brotherly friendship with Bogum. In fact, they have begun talking a lot right after Bogum saved Taehyung from the fall at the canteen 3 days ago.
Although they eventually learnt the names of all other 28 men in their platoon and got to interact with
the others as a team unit over the past 3 days, Bogum and Taehyung still continued to stick together
pretty much all the time as close partners for example they would run side-by-side during their
morning runs, sit together in the canteen during meals, crack jokes with each other to bring the mood
up, talk a lot about themselves to each other and one thing that they would most definitely do
was that they would always look out for each other’s back. In short, they were simply an inseparable
duo.

To Taehyung, the start of this friendship was absolutely beautiful. In fact, Bogum was the first
genuine friend Taehyung had apart from the BANGTAN family. This was partly due to the fact that
Bogum was indeed an extremely genuine and loving person that the world doesn’t deserve.

How is Bogum a loving person, you might ask.

Well, from their multiple conversations during meals, Taehyung learnt that Bogum is a young 21-
year-old country boy that lived alone with his single dad: no brothers, no sisters, no mother. Bogum
studied extremely hard during his younger days and scored extremely good grades especially in areas
of math and science. Hell, he even earned himself a scholarship last year from academic excellence
in the college exams thereby granting himself a chance to further pursue his studies in the
Sungkyunkwan University but two weeks before his first semester, his dad was beaten up and
captured by the mafia for owing a chunk of debt. At that time, his dad was a secret gambler and it
was only then that Bogum learnt that his dad had literally spent away all of the family’s savings by
gambling and drinking since many years ago and that they had been surviving solely on loan-sharked
money from the mafia all these years. However, Bogum didn’t blame his father. He attributed his
father’s behaviour to his depression after Bogum’s mother had heartlessly left the family for another
man when he was younger.

Unable to pay off his father’s debt, Bogum was forced to join and serve the mafia army in exchange
for his father’s life. Tears shimmered in his eyes when he talked about his father. When his father
sent Bogum off for the last time he was in tears unable to speak a single word from the guilt and pain
in his heart. That image of his crying father broke Bogum in ways he could never imagine. Bogum
believed that his father must have been feeling really lonely living alone right now and he was sad
that he couldn’t take care of his dad and be by his side. Bogum also looked exceedingly
dejected when he talked about the girl named Irene who he had liked for 7 years but now that he is
part of the mafia he would never allow himself to chase her anymore even in the future after the army
training. He simply didn’t want her to be involved with the darkness that is the underground world.

“I pray everyday that my dad and Irene are safe from harm. That’s all I want, for them to be well and
happy,” Bogum said with a bitter smile on his face but immediately changed the topic to something
more casual.
At that moment, Taehyung was shell-shocked in place by how selfless this young man was and how heartbreaking his background was.

This young man had something that most people do not have - a precious heart of gold and yet he was given such a tough life to deal with not to mention that his scholarship had just been wasted. Whatever Bogum was capable of was reduced to dust in one instant.

*Dammit Kook, look at how your organization is destroying somebody else’s life.* Taehyung thought to himself. The sudden realization that the mafia was indeed destroying innocent lives only became clear and apparent in Taehyung’s mind after his personal first-hand connection with a victim. Being a street gangster, Taehyung had never done anything exceedingly bad according to his own moral standards. Yes, Taehyung did beat assholes from other gangs up but damn, nobody had the right to take away another person’s hopes and dreams like that. That was the instant when Taehyung’s mind began to spin and think - what about all other men forced into the mafia army? Aren’t they people like Bogum too? Oh yes what about people captured by the mafia? Human trafficking? Prostitution? Slave labour?! Holy shit Jungkook you motherfucker!

Taehyung instantly made a mental note at the back of his head to personally request for Jungkook to release Bogum from the mafia because hell, this kind brother of his deserves all the happiness and love in this world. He also suddenly had a strong impulse to ask Jungkook about everything. Literally everything - what the mafia had been doing to innocent people because goddammit Taehyung could never ever allow such injustice to perpetuate and harm lives especially when his beloved husband is the mastermind perpetuator.

On the side note, Taehyung unfortunately had to fabricate most of his personal information when talking to Bogum because he couldn’t and shouldn’t reveal his identity. That made Taehyung sad because while Bogum was being truthful to him, Taehyung couldn't help but lie about his history. For that, Taehyung felt bad but otherwise he had to keep his true identity a secret. All in all, Taehyung and Bogum managed to become really good friends within the matter of days which was truly some friendship goals much to Jungkook’s jealousy. Yes, Jungkook has always been checking on Taehyung and Taehyung’s behaviour of seemingly sticking only to Bogum in the platoon is making him feel slightly vexed but of course that is not our primary concern right now because the primary concern right now is FUCK IT WHY CAN’T KIM TAE HYUNG JUST WAKE THE FUCK UP!

***

Back to the platoon #9 bunk where Bogum is still screaming his head off at the unconscious Taehyung.
“V! For the love of god! Wake up!”

For the past 5 minutes Bogum has been trying everything he could to wake Taehyung up. He had gracefully progressed from a casual pat on Taehyung’s shoulder to screaming like a lunatic into V’s ears and shaking the dead-ass boy so vigorously like a cuddled up milkshake but nothing worked.

In fact, the situation is so bad that Bogum is starting to hypothesize that Taehyung is dead. Deep sleeper Taehyung is no joke unfortunately.

Within no time the clock has ticked to 4:58am which is a hopeless 2 minute before gathering time. At this point we can safely say that there are only two people left in the platoon #9 bunk: an unconscious Taehyung and an extremely exasperated Bogum.

“V! Please wake up we don’t have time anymore! The punishment for latecomers might be really severe!”

“Huuuuuuuuuhhhhhhhmmmmmmmmmmmm…….” the half-asleep Taehyung suddenly pops his head out of the blanket and hums with droopy half-lidded sleepy-ass eyes, his saliva drooling all over his pillow. Initially Bogum is overjoyed that Taehyung is starting to show signs of life but within 2 seconds the 28-year-old man crashes back onto the sheets completely dead-ass still again.

Seeing that, Bogum’s heart instantly drops to hell and his face darkens.

“You have left me with no choice, V-ssi,” Bogum mutters solemnly and goes to retrieve a bucket of water.

SPLASH!

A few moments later, Taehyung feels what seems to be a catastrophic waterfall gushing down like a full-blown tsunami onto his own face. Yes, the usually sweet Bogum have just resorted to dunking a
bucket full of water onto V’s face without mercy because god damn it he never knew that it could be
so hard waking a human from sleep till today.

“Ahhh!” Taehyung instinctively jumps awake from his bed, eyes wide open and gasping for air. *Who the fuck just tried to drown me?* Taehyung thinks to himself.

Before Taehyung can react, Bogum throws the bucket aside and shoves his watch into Taehyung’s face.

“V, it’s 5:01am now. 5.0.1.A.M.”

5 seconds of silence before Taehyung processes shit and starts to flip out like an octopus trying to
grab both his boots, belt and clothes at the same fucking time.

“Oh my goodness Bogum I am so so sorry you should have left first! Ahhh I’m such a burden!”

“Stop apologizing V. What to do when you are such a deep sleeper. Just hurry and let’s get there as
soon as possible. Hopefully our punishment would be lighter.”

“Alright alright but hell I AM SO FUCKING SORRY!”

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Training Grounds Central Quad

Date & Time: 4th March 2018 5:08AM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| The fourth day in The Mafia Army |

***

Upon arrival at the quad, it is seen that the 28 other men in platoon #9 along with the two attached
sergeants are already waiting there for Taehyung and Bogum. Seeing that Taehyung and Bogum
have finally reached the quad, the entire platoon start to glare fire at the two black sheeps of their
team. Commander JK and IU are there too waiting with charcoal-black faces. Apparently all other
platoons have already set off for their daily morning run except platoon #9.

Taehyung and Bogum hiss under their breaths at the solemn situation but otherwise runs up to their sergeants to greet them. Taehyung bites his lips in distress, taking a quick glimpse at Jungkook to see his reaction. At this moment, Jungkook is a fair distance away leaning against a tree with crossed arms. Once Taehyung’s eyes meet with Jungkook who is currently watching Taehyung with a penetrating gaze, Taehyung can’t help but shiver slightly. It has just been three days since Jungkook and Taehyung are interacting solely with a commander-recruit relationship but Taehyung is already full-blown nervous of what Jungkook is able to do. Jungkook is indeed an entirely different person when he is a leader compared to when he is a husband and such disparity is making Taehyung feel further and further away from Jungkook emotionally. In fact, Jungkook feels almost like a stranger to Taehyung now. Unable to meet with Jungkook’s angry gaze, Taehyung immediately avoids Jungkook’s stares.

Jungkook, on the other hand, has so many question marks in his head. For the past few days Taehyung and Bogum have been seen to be inseparable. They always do things together and that made Jungkook so jealous he could die. At first, Jungkook tried to rationally ignore his jealousy, attributing his thoughts to overthinking. However, the fact that Taehyung really seems to only stick to Bogum just burns a hole in his heart. In the past, Taehyung had never “stuck” to anyone before, not Jimin, not Jin, not Hoseok and most certainly not his previous ex-girlfriends but now Taehyung is sticking to Bogum. Out of the other 29 men in the platoon, why did Taehyung have to stick to one? Taehyung is such an arrogant man so why didn’t he flinch at all when Bogum patted so many times on his head? Does Taehyung like Bogum’s touches? And now they are even late together fresh from bed? They run side-by-side, eat side-by-side, do they even sleep side-by-side now? All these questions sink into Jungkook’s brain igniting flames of anger in him and it is so bad that Jungkook is literally panting heavily now, his chest rising and falling in pure exasperated anger. Jungkook makes a mental note to summon Taehyung into his office for a private talk later at night.

“#909 and #921, why are the two of you late?” IU walks up to question the two latecomers namely #909 - V and #921 - Bogum while Jungkook remains leaning against the tree watching his wife and Bogum from afar. He seems calm but if you look deeper into his eyes you can see that he is at the perfect mental state to burn a country down right now.

“This commander is a bitch,” Taehyung thinks to himself upon listening to IU’s questions and innately rolls his eyes.

“I overslept Ma’am. This has nothing to do with recruit #921. He is only delayed because he took time to wake me up. I want to receive all the consequences because it’s all my fault,” Taehyung explains in a single breath.

Upon hearing that, Jungkook’s hands slowly clench into fists. At this point Taehyung is still defending Bogum?! Is this Bogum Taehyung’s new-found sweetheart or something? Taehyung
never ever deliberately defends someone unless he truly cares for them and it has only been three days since his entrance into the army. Can feelings develop this fast? Wow. Just wow. Jungkook thinks to himself spitefully and is so pissed-off from the moon and back you can literally see steam coming out of his ears and yet he continues to act cool and composed.

Upon hearing that, commander IU shakes her head and scolds a few sentences at Taehyung along the lines of “how can you be so careless” and “that’s so irresponsible of you” but otherwise tones it down because she knows Taehyung’s true identity as Jungkook’s wife. If it was somebody else she would have straight out screamed “YOU FUCKING PIG!!!!” but no obviously she can’t do that right now especially not in front of Jungkook’s face.

Taehyung and Bogum and everyone else just stands completely still as IU finishes her scoldings. After she completes her paragraph of reprimanding, IU walks to Jungkook who is still leaning against the tree a fair distance away with crossed arms.

“What do we do now boss?” IU whispers to Jungkook closely.

_Fucking bitch I have tolerated you enough! Quit whispering around intimately with Jungkook can’t you just scream like you usually do?!_ Taehyung thinks to himself in rage as he continues to magnify every Jungkook and IU interaction because hell all this is so infuriating like Jungkook is just sitting right there and he can’t go up to give him a hug. Jungkook is just sitting right there and he can’t go up to him and talk. Jungkook is just sitting right there and he can’t even walk over to say “move it bitch this man is mine” when he is supposedly Jungkook’s rightful wife! This whole situation is killing him to pieces and yet he can’t do anything to help it.

At this moment, Jungkook suddenly quits leaning coolly on the tree and stands straight up on both his feet. He then slowly walks over to Taehyung and Bogum taking all the time in the world like the boss he is.

_Tension._

“Recruit #909 and #921, the current time is 5:10am. What do you think I should make you do to make up for the lost 10 minutes?”

Scary silence. Jungkook’s face darkens before he opens his mouth and starts screaming.
“KNOCK IT DOWN BOTH OF YOU! 100!”

After the initial shock, Taehyung and Bogum immediately revert to attention. Although 100 pushups is a lot, it is still manageable thankfully.

“Yes sir!” they scream before dropping to the ground to complete Jungkook’s command but wait, this isn’t all. Jungkook suddenly walks over to Bogum and without mercy, he places a foot onto Bogum's upper back and starts applying pressure on it firstly to humiliate Bogum and secondly to add more weight onto the poor struggling man.

Jungkook starts doing that at Bogum’s 20th pushup. It is so bad that by the 40th pushup Bogum’s hands are already shaking vigorously from the fatigue.

“41….42….43…..mnmnmhmptt!”

“Continue. If you drop you’ll need to redo.”

“Yes sir...”

On the other hand, everyone including the rest of the platoon and the platoon’s sergeants just gawk in absolute shock at the whole situation.

Taehyung who is also doing his pushups is literally burning in absolute fury. How dare Jungkook? How dare he?! Taehyung thinks to himself in injustice but at this moment he can’t say anything. He can’t do anything to help his friend and what’s worst he himself is the cause of this whole fucked-up situation.

In fact, this is the first time anyone in tier 2 has done anything that goes against the rules and hence this is the first time the new recruits have seen anyone being punished. Cold sweat breaks out on their foreheads as they look at Jungkook stepping onto Bogum with his muddy boots as if Bogum is nothing more than an animal. It is so degrading but why is Commander JK only stepping on Bogum? Isn’t V the one that has just admitted to being the one who overslept? Why isn’t he stepping on V instead?
At this point, IU, the only one aware of Jungkook’s jealousy towards Bogum, just shakes her head and rolls her eyes. *This is ridiculous*, she thinks to herself.

5 minutes later, Taehyung and a dying Bogum finally finish their pushups. While Taehyung is just slightly panting, Bogum has his arms shaking in spasms. After a few seconds of recovery on the ground, both of them immediately stand straight up again in attention. This time, the seething Taehyung has his entire face turned to the side, outrightly showing Jungkook that he doesn’t want to make eye contact. Jungkook observes Taehyung’s dissatisfaction but otherwise chooses to ignore it for now because his identity is currently the commander of the mafia army, not Taehyung’s husband. He gives himself another mental reminder that he must summon and talk to Taehyung privately tonight but otherwise continues with his commander duties.

“Platoon #9!”

“Yes sir!”

“Everyone of you except #909 and #921 go submerge yourselves in the pond right now.”

*Eh? What’s going on?*

Everyone is confused but of course the platoon doesn’t dare ask for an explanation.

“Yes sir!”

Within 10 seconds, everyone in the platoon has jumped into the pond and is wet from the head to the toe except Taehyung and Bogum. While Taehyung has been splashed in the face back at the bunk by Bogum, all the water has mostly dried up - nothing compared to being fully drenched like their fellow platoon mates.

“Now, everyone except #909 and #921. Take off your shirts and step out of the pond.”

“Yes sir!”
Another 5 seconds in and everyone in platoon 9 is wet and shirtless in front of Jungkook except Taehyung and Bogum who are literally the ones gawking now.

Watching the perplexed faces of his men, Jungkook just shakes his head. He massages his temples when his eyes meet with all the clueless faces from platoon 9. He can’t decide if he is more angry at Taehyung and Bogum right now or the bunch of platoon 9 idiots.

Till now they still have no idea what they did wrong.

“Your faces tell me you have absolutely no idea why I am making you do this. For goodness sake you guys are a fucking team. Nobody leaves anybody behind next time are you clear platoon 9?! This isn’t even a war when helping your goddamn team mate might cost you your life. It’s just simply putting in the effort to wake your teammate up on time. C’mon! How many of you have seen that he’s asleep and not bat an eye? So what if waking him up is going to make you do a dozen more pushups? Mafia missions are never a one man game - it’s always accomplished in teams and as a team you guys got to work together, not individually. Get that in your fucking head. How am I supposed to trust you all to do big things when you can’t even handle a small issue like this? Now go for your morning run now and reflect on your own asses. Remember, if anyone from the platoon does something wrong that the rest of you could’ve help avoid, the rest of you gets the punishment not the offender himself.”

So in the end there’s a plot twist in which the pissed-off Jungkook decides to make the rest of the platoon run shirtless in the forest when he jolly well knows that they are going to become some premium breakfast for the forest mosquitos. The fact that they are all wet also means that there’s a high chance for them to catch a cold. While Taehyung and Bogum still have to do their morning run along with the platoon, at least they are covered up and dry but of course they can’t help but feel guilty. While Bogum is feeling slightly sorry, Taehyung who is the central cause to this mess is literally dying in misery right now.

Why Jungkook why? All I did was oversleep a few minutes... Taehyung thinks to himself throughout the run.

After the 20km run, platoon #9 crashes down in the canteen at their designated seats half-dead with full-blown mosquito bites visible all over their red chests and backs. Some of them are already looking like they are going to fall into a concussion at any moment. Members from other platoons
gaze over at platoon #9 with curious glances unable to guess what have just happened to their fellow men and why they are so late for their lunch today.

Unfortunately, time doesn’t wait and platoon 9 can’t afford to waste any more time now that they are in the canteen. Since it is already 1220pm by then which means they only have 10 minutes to eat till the clock hits 1230pm signifying the end of their lunch break time. As a result, everyone in platoon 9 proceeds to hastily grab food from the vendor before chunking down large pieces of food down their throat as fast as they can. On the other hand, Taehyung and Bogum have no appetite so they just sit there with frowny faces munching onto a piece of bread.

In no time, it is 1230pm. Unfortunately again for platoon 9, what follows next right after the lunch break is a freaking obstacle course where they’ll have to jump over barricades and roll over sand so most of them that straight up swallowed a stomach full of food during lunch also straight up puked everything out after they completed the course except for Taehyung and Bogum of course, who literally just look with more guilt at the puking mess that is their platoon.

“Errr...Bobby... are you ok...” Taehyung tries to give one of his puking teammates a caring grip on the shoulder.

“Get lost loser,” Bobby who has just emptied his poor-ass stomach hisses in rage and pushes Taehyung’s hand away. Well, it’s not just him. Everyone in the platoon except for Bogum is low-key mad at Taehyung right now for oversleeping I mean who wouldn’t? A guy from your team screws up and the whole team gets dragged down. Anyone would have been mad.

Taehyung presses his lips into a thin line and recoils his rejected hand. He knows that all this is his fault so he decides to tolerate the “loser” insult this time.

Upon hearing what Bobby said, Bogum gives Taehyung a consoling pat on the back to which Taehyung sighs.

Well, all we can say is that today sure isn’t a good one for Taehyung, Bogum and the entirety of an unfortunate platoon 9.

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Training Grounds Platoon #9 Bunk

Date & Time: 4th March 2018 8:21PM
Once platoon 9 members retire to their bunk, a fight immediately ensues.

“Yah! V! What the fuck is wrong with you?! You are a grown ass man for goodness sake and you can’t even wake up on time?! Look what you’ve done to the rest of us. Are you asking for a beating?!” the platoon mate named Junhoe immediately screams at V once the bunk door closes. He grabs onto V’s collars and shoves him into the wall.

Taehyung is shocked for a moment but soon after he tries to calm Junhoe’s tits. Junhoe has always been a loud and straight-forward person on the aggressive side of the spectrum. He is also one of the fittest in platoon 9 and everyone sort of knows that Junhoe is going to ascend to the tier 3 officer training after tier 2 considering his well-built physique and general enthusiasm in completing everyday missions. Although he does scold others lightly when they lag behind at times but otherwise he laughs a lot and is a good person in general but after the whole mess that is today, Junhoe feels like he needs to give Taehyung a lesson on behalf of the whole team because hell, he is so. fucking. pissed. at. V. Just yesterday, Junhoe is assigned by the sergeants to be the official leader of platoon 9 and in his place he feels every right to be the one confronting V regarding what he had done this morning.

Everyone else in platoon 9 just stares tiredly at the commotion but doesn’t attempt to stop Junhoe except Bogum who decides to interfere.

Bogum: “Jun. Let V go. It’s not his fault that Commander JK wanted to be strict with the rest of us. Besides, Commander JK has a point. We are supposed to work together as a team.”

Junhoe: “Shut the fuck up Bogum you have nothing to do with this and when this motherfucker is sleeping his head off you are the one getting stepped like a piece of trash am I not right?!”

At the mention of that Bogum is instantly quiet. The pressure from Jungkook’s foot still aches like a bitch on his back.
Taehyung: “Yah Jun, calm down. I’m sorry that I’ve overslept.”

“Sorry?! That’s all you can say to the rest of us?! I swear to god at least half of my blood is being donated to the mosquitos in the forest just now! Fuck you V!”

Once his words land, a punch just flies in and ---- WHOOP!

A solid punch from Junhoe lands right smack on Taehyung’s left cheek.

For the next 3 seconds Taehyung just gawks in absolute shock.

_Did this motherfucker just punch me when I apologised?!_ Taehyung thinks to himself in pure indignation.

Seeing that Taehyung is just gawking with wide eyes at him, Junhoe mercilessly hurls another punch towards Taehyung and in this instant all hell breaks loose.

“Fucking shithead!” Taehyung screams. He dodges skilfully and punches straight back up at Junhoe’s chin.

_Slam!_

Junhoe, a talented officer-soon-to-be.

Taehyung, an experienced street gang fighter.

Sounds about right to make an interesting showdown so for a full 5 minutes the both of them try their very best to kick each other’s asses in absolute fury with an exasperated Bogum trying to pull them apart.

Junhoe: “I’m not human if I don’t knock at least one teeth out of your stuck-up mouth today!”
V: “I want to see you fucking try you fucking idiot sandwich!”

Junhoe: “Fuck you V you knew I hated to be called a sandwich! You are fucking dead to me!”

Bogum continues to pull them both apart but ends up receiving some of the punches and kicks.

Bogum: “AHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH STOP IT BOTH OF YOU!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

V: “AHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH AJFHAJDHA!!!!!!”

Junhoe: “AHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH DHALDJLDJAK!!!!!!!”

In the meantime, the 27 other men in the platoon just lie down with soulless eyes on their bed watching the commotion. None of them have the energy to move after whatever that has happened today so they just watch the fight happen wondering where in the mother god did Taehyung and Junhoe find such explosive energy to quarrel.

A few seconds later a very solemn-looking commander who we know is named Jungkook appears at platoon’s 9 bunk door. Jungkook had wanted to speak to Taehyung and was just coming down to the bunk to get him but to his surprise the first thing that greets him is a fight in the bunk.

A few seconds of gawking as Jungkook attempts to find words seeing Taehyung being tangled up between two other men namely Junhoe and Bogum.

“#909, come to my office now,” Jungkook commands before walking right into the bunk and pushes Junhoe and Bogum away from Taehyung looking low-key mad.

“From now on nobody lays a finger on V unless you want to die,” Jungkook says with a deadpan face.

With that, Jungkook pulls the still very stunned Taehyung roughly by the arm out of the bunk towards his own private office. What is commander JK? What is recruit #909? It doesn’t matter what
they are right now in the mafia army because damn Jungkook needs to talk to Taehyung right now!

After the platoon 9 door is being slammed shut by a low-key agitated Jungkook, Bogum and Junhoe just exchange confused glances.

“What the fuck?” Junhoe mutters under his breath with a perplexed expression for 5 seconds before his face melts into pure horror.

Now that he thinks about it everything seems to connect – how V isn’t being stepped on by Jungkook although he is the one who overslept, how V didn’t need to run shirtless, how Jungkook just said that no one was supposed to touch V – HOLY SHIT COMMANDER JK HAS A GAY CRUSH ON V! WHAT IS THAT MOTHERFUCKER TRYING TO DO RIGHT NOW PULLING V TO HIS OFFICE?! IS HE TRYING TO USE HIS AUTHORITY TO ---

Junhoe suddenly starts to feel extremely sorry for V. Yes he is angry at V for oversleeping but damn he wouldn't want to be in V's situation right now. Junhoe starts to silently pray for V because no matter what happened V is still his good ol' platoon mate.

Oh Junhoe, listen, you have not a single idea what it's like being the wife of a mafia boss.

“No relationship is perfect, ever. There are always some ways you have to bend, to compromise, to give something up in order to gain something greater...The love we have for each other is bigger than these small differences. And that's the key. It's like a big pie chart, and the love in a relationship has to be the biggest piece. Love can make up for a lot.”

— Sarah Dessen, This Lullaby

Hi fam, I earn nothing from writing these fanfictions but if you want to send some support and appreciation by buying me a cup of coffee to motivate me in writing you can do it here: hiddentracks@ko-fi (thank you <3)
A warning that this chapter contains domestic violence and hardcore angst. Till date this is the most serious and triggering chapter I've written in You're Mine Daddy like my face actually turned pale from writing this. Might break your heart. On the side note, I'm sorry but I can’t bring myself to write smut for this one because if smut really happened imma punch Jungkook so hard into outer space. Also, this might be the most important chapter of the series in which the VKOOK couple discovers that firstly, violence and abuse exists between them and how insidiously destructive it is to have abusive violence as the permanent markers in their 13-year-long relationship from the past till the present.

“The single biggest problem in communication is the illusion that it has taken place.” — George Bernard Shaw

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Commander JK’s private office

Date & Time: 4th March 2018 8:53PM

[Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| The fourth day in The Mafia Army |

***

"Let me go! What the fuck is wrong with you!"

Commander Jungkook drags a visibly flustered Taehyung into his private office and once they enter the enclosed room Jungkook immediately slams the poor recruit mercilessly against the desk.

Taehyung hisses in pain and shock when his back hits the edge of the table. Unbalanced, Taehyung stumbles slightly before gazing up to meet eyes with an evidently provoked Jungkook and in this moment Taehyung’s legs instantly dissolve into marshmallow weakness.

Apart from visible cues such as Jungkook's furiously red face, dangerously popping neck veins and his ominous glare penetrating right through Taehyung's soul, Taehyung can actually smell the
magnitude of Jungkook's exploding rage and you know what this means? This means that shit is about to go down and it's honestly scaring the crap out of Taehyung.

However, Taehyung isn't actually too sure why Jungkook is suddenly so provoked. Did I do anything wrong? This can't be just because I overslept today right? The clueless Taehyung thinks to himself in confusion. To Taehyung, Bogum is never in the picture between Jungkook and him so no matter how hard he tries he wouldn't have guessed in a million years that Jungkook is currently jealous about an irrelevant someone that Taehyung regarded only as a friend and a brother.

In fact, Taehyung can't remember the last time Jungkook had been this mad over something because while Jungkook is usually strict at home, he had never exhibited such uncontrollable anger except during the first few unstable weeks post-marriage so the sudden switch back into unpredictable Jungkook is starting to make Taehyung feel unsafe again.

Yes, the keyword here is unsafe.

In addition, Jungkook and Taehyung have not been able to communicate or interact as a couple for many days on end already. Yet, they have to see each other daily in their different identities making them feel inevitably repressed and frustrated at this whole fucked up situation. Frankly, they could somehow sense each other’s unhappiness to a certain extent. Having known each other for many years now, the couple have developed a unique chemistry in which they could feel the disconnection and frustrated vibes from each other even though nothing is being properly communicated yet. They can sense that something between them is definitely wrong. However, both of them are not too sure of the exact reason why the other party is pissed off and why the tension between them keeps dramatically increasing. Just like how Jungkook is full-blown angry about Bogum, Taehyung is also annoyed about IU but because of a lack of proper communication, both of them are totally clueless as to why their spouses are drifting away and it just makes them feel angrier and wronged.

Well, let's just take a look at the progression of tension over just three short days in the army:

On the first day Taehyung straight up ignored Jungkook's discreet cheeky wave of a hand by rolling his eyes away. Why? Because Taehyung had just seen Jungkook laughing happily with IU and he wasn’t happy about it.

On the second day Jungkook picked faults with Taehyung's boots reprimanding him that it was not polished enough in front of the whole platoon. Why? Because Jungkook had sneaked by Taehyung's bunk the previous night only to see Bogum chatting and helping Taehyung out with the shoe polishing.

On the third day Taehyung actually did a U-turn when he saw Jungkook walking his way to which Jungkook immediately noticed. Why? Because Taehyung didn't want to be reminded of the pain that he was feeling, the pain of being so close yet so far from the love of his life but of course Jungkook interpreted that the wrong way.
Clearly, Jungkook and Taehyung had missed each other dearly and their hearts ached for each other and yet they kept giving each other pieces of hell so it was no wonder that both of them ended up feeling unloved and rejected and today on the fourth day after the whole oversleeping episode both of them finally explode like plinian volcanoes.

In short, there exists a significant communication blockage between Taehyung and Jungkook these few days which ultimately spirals into an emotional blockage which is effectively compounded by the existence of a very frustrating cockblockage not to mention the addition of other catalytic environmental factors such as unjustified jealousy and resentment towards other perceived virtual love rivals ultimately leading to feelings of abandonment and pain. It is indeed the case of no talk plus no sex plus no understanding leading to unhappiness and tension between a couple simple as that.

However, for Taehyung’s situation it’s unfortunately slightly worse because apart from the emotional pain that he has to deal with, Taehyung is also deprived of sufficient rest from the tough daily regime of the mafia army making him utterly drained out both physically and mentally so why the fuck is Jungkook angry? Who gave him the right to be angry? Isn’t Taehyung the one that is supposed to be angry?! Try running 20km everyday morning at 5am on an empty stomach Jungkook! Hell, the whole reason why this tiring messed-up situation arose was because of Jungkook’s stubbornness to enrol Taehyung into the army!

In fact, Taehyung is already feeling upset about his forced enrolment into the army not to mention Jungkook’s close interactions with IU so when Jungkook suddenly rages on him Taehyung literally feels the nerves in his brain cracking apart like splitting dried-up twigs and in that instant he enters what dragon ball fans call a rabid super-saiyan mode.

"Jeon Jung Kook what is your fucking problem????!!!! Have you gone crazy????!!!!" Taehyung screams at the top of his lungs such that he would need new lungs after that and he can actually feel angry tears threatening to spill out of his eyes because damn it, it has been such a long and tiring day for him and he had missed Jungkook so fucking much and yet the first thing Jungkook did to him after 4 long days of separation was to fucking slam him against a cold hard metal furniture. To add on, it wasn’t even the teasing kind of slam that Jungkook sometimes would do when they were having kinky rough sex in the past because this time Jungkook truly just threw Taehyung full force against the table without a single tinge of care.

After all this I’ve gone through for you and this is how you treat me? Taehyung thinks to himself feeling sad, angry, fearful and disappointed all at the same time. In short, Taehyung is currently feeling a salad bowl of mixed negative emotions and he is so close, so nanometer close to becoming full-blown insane.

Jungkook, on the other hand, is consumed in his own internal world of anger and resentment as well. All he sees these days is basically Taehyung sticking around Bogum’s ass. Wherever Bogum goes, Taehyung follows. Wherever Taehyung goes, Bogum also follows like what the fuck are they chopsticks or something?? Once or twice or even thrice it would have been fine but Taehyung and Bogum were always together. How would a husband feel if he keeps seeing his wife cuddling up with some other man right under his nose? To add on, the cuddling just doesn’t stop and continues
24/7 and that image of Taehyung and Bogum being together just keeps on haunting Jungkook wherever he goes because somehow Bogum and Taehyung are always next to each other be it during trainings or after trainings. How is that justified? How is that forgivable?! Even if Taehyung didn’t do things like that with an intention to flirt it is still fucking insensitive. Jungkook is the commander of tier 2 so he officially supervises all the recruits 24/7 and yet Taehyung continues to outrightly interact with Bogum so closely even when Jungkook is in the vicinity but when Jungkook just simply waves to Taehyung, Taehyung just straight up ignores him or acts like he doesn't see anything. Why?! What is with the sudden switch in attitude?! How is this possible? What's wrong?

Jungkook is already insecure in the first place about Taehyung's love. He also hates cold wars and is partly afraid of them so all these small little seemingly insignificant gestures are taken seriously and are ultra-magnified and intensified in his heart. For a 20-year-old boy who knows very well how attractive his wife is and how much of a playboy Taehyung was in the past, Jungkook literally can't handle this kind of pseudo betrayal and dubious behaviour exhibited by Taehyung. It's as if he is seeing his own wife trying to seduce another man right in front of him yet he can't confirm or do anything about it and as a result Jungkook is dying in new-found jealousy and rage towards Bogum and Taehyung right now.

Jungkook glares down at Taehyung with widened eyes, his nose flaring up and his chest pumping in absolute indignance.

_Taehyung needs to be reminded who he belongs to_, Jungkook thinks irrationally to himself as the fear of losing Taehyung starts to invade his body and mind.

Without warning, Jungkook takes two quick steps up to Taehyung at the desk who sees him coming and panickely tries to assume a defensive position but before Taehyung even has the chance to flinch, Jungkook hastily grabs Taehyung from the table by the collar and shoves him straight up against the wall.

"Ummmpfft!" Taehyung lets out a muffled groan when the back of his head crashes once again on a hard surface that is the concrete. He winces slightly and when he processes his whole situation his heart starts to pump furiously. Wait what the fuck why is Jungkook so triggered and violent right now----

"Kook, I..." before Taehyung even gets to ask a question Jungkook yanks onto Taehyung’s hair and digs his punishing fingers into Taehyung's scalp harshly while his other free hand wraps and traps Taehyung by the waist against the wall so that he couldn't run. Taehyung widens his eyes in disbelief. He remembers that he has told Jungkook umpteen times to never yank his hair. WHY. THE. FUCK. IS. KOOK. SO. ANGRY. AND. WHO. GAVE. HIM. THE. PERMISSION. TO. YANK. TAEHYUNG’S. HAIR.

"Jeon Jung Kook don't you fucking touch my hair and can we just talk nicely like can you stop silently raging and motherfucking TALK?! I really don't have strength for anything physical anymore after today’s training and I also don't have much hair left like it's already so fucking short after the army haircut so can you just leave me alone----"
At this point Jungkook finally opens his golden mouth to cut into Taehyung’s sentence.

"Are you playing with me Kim Tae Hyung? You think this is funny? Since when did you take a liking towards younger men like Bogum? There’s no woman around here so you decide to take an interest in other younger boys now huh? Am I not enough for you?!....What a fucking slut!" Jungkook suddenly blurts out what he has been keeping in his mind including that hurtful insult in his last sentence and before Taehyung can even process and respond to Jungkook’s insolent accusations Jungkook suddenly lifts a hand and delivers a hard slap across Taehyung's face.

Right smack on the left cheek where Junhoe has punched Taehyung.

At this moment, time seems to have frozen. Five seconds later, Taehyung turns his head back to glare at Jungkook in utter disbelief and starts screaming.

"Bogum is just my friend! F.R.I.E.N.D. friend nothing more! And did you just fucking slap me and call me a slut! I AM YOUR SPOUSE FOR GOODNESS SAKE!" Taehyung screams at Jungkook with widened eyes. At this point, Taehyung really can't believe that this lunatic is his husband. The last time Jungkook had slapped him was during the wedding night six months ago and damn, Taehyung did not want to remember that encounter at all. Feeling threatened, Taehyung instinctively tries to push Jungkook away but Jungkook easily grabs onto both Taehyung’s arms and locks them in place. He then pushes a knee between Taehyung's legs and presses his entire body onto Taehyung’s.

"Kim Tae Hyung, since you said that you are my partner then you better fucking act like one. Just to remind you that the moment we got married you are my property. Don't test my patience I'm warning you. I’ve been very nice to you and I think you want it to stay that way. I don't care who the fuck Bogum is to you but you better not interact with him after today because I don't like it. I don't like him a single bit and I definitely do not like how you two are interacting so closely so you better stop talking to him."

What??! Wow. Just wow. Taehyung can't believe the words that are coming out of Jungkook’s childish ass mouth. This person right here is not the Jungkook that Taehyung knew. Where is his gentle, kind and understanding Jungkook and what is with this property claim right now?!

"Just to inform you that I am not your property, Jeon Jung Kook. I don't remember signing a property contract selling myself to you and how dare you?! First you forced me into this army bullshit and then now I am not even allowed to make friends within my own platoon?! Wow. I’m just speechless and since when is Bogum in the fucking picture when I haven’t even asked you about IU? Like why the fuck is she always following you around even after training hours?!"
5 seconds of silence as Jungkook tries to process the relevance of IU with furrowed eyebrows.

“Namjoon’s gone to become tier 1’s commander. IU, besides being vice-commander, is also replacing Namjoon as my new bodyguard for now but no don’t even try to change the topic. Promise me that you will stop seeing Bogum----”

“What do you mean by not changing the topic?! This is the fucking topic that we need to talk about! Why do you need a female bodyguard Kook? Since when did women appeal to you huh? Millions of tough men in the mafia and you choose a pretty porcelain-faced woman to protect you 24/7?! Hah! How am I supposed to buy this bullcrap Kook?”

After Taehyung’s words land Jungkook immediately feels his eyes roll 47257393022 degrees into outer space.

“Leave IU out of this Taehyung. She is a great officer in the mafia and she doesn’t deserve this kind of disrespect. Honestly you need to stop seeing women as sexual objects and see them as people too.”

“Says the one who just objectified me as his property. What a fucking hypocrite you are,” Taehyung scolds spitefully as he tries to once again break free from Jungkook’s painful and firm grasp, “release me this instant and don’t you fucking manhandle me like this ever again. Let.go.”

“Oh so now I can’t touch you but Bogum can? I can’t touch your hair but Bogum can pat on your head anytime he likes? Hmmm?! Clearly I’ve spoilt you too much. I think you need a reminder who you belong to.”

Right after Jungkook’s words land, Taehyung gets the shock of his life when he feels two hands roughly tearing his shirt away. There is no love, just pure anger in Jungkook’s touches and in that instant Taehyung realizes that Jungkook is trying to hatefuck him and starts to struggle and kick his way free.

“Yahhh! Stop acting like a lunatic! Release me I'm warning you I said let me go you bastard I have no energy left for this bullshit!”

Taehyung screams and struggles in part anger and part fear. However, his resistance only earns him another slap on the face and a painful elbow twist as Jungkook spins Taehyung around pressing him against the wall before continuing with the assault. That's it. Taehyung realizes that he is full-blown
terrified of the man that is currently holding him and in this instant he feels like a stranger. Yes, the person who he calls his husband literally feels like a stranger to him at this moment.

Within seconds, Taehyung’s shirt is being thrown to the other side of the room. Jungkook wastes no time in latching himself firmly onto Taehyung, trapping Taehyung in position such that he can’t move a single bit before callously biting and sucking all over Taehyung’s ear and neck region.

“Yah Kook you better stop this right now!” Taehyung attempts to sound tough but unfortunately his voice cracks up. Innately he is actually freaking out big time because honestly Jungkook is scaring the shit out of him.

Such sexual violence has literally never happened and Taehyung is shaken to the core. Even during the forced wedding night Jungkook did try to be gentle and even if he did hurt Taehyung that night it was largely due to Jungkook’s ignorance about sex but today Jungkook’s intention is clearly to hatefuck Taehyung brutally.

This time Taehyung actually feels, for the first time since the wedding night, that he doesn't want to be touched at all. He really doesn't want it and he is scared.

“Please Kook just listen---”

“Shut the fuck up!”

Jungkook usually doesn’t curse much unless he is very angry. Taehyung’s blood runs cold when he feels hands travelling to his lower body groping him roughly everywhere with the intention to mark Taehyung with bruises. Taehyung winces and instantly feels his knees go weak.

"Kook listen to me! Bogum is seriously just a platoon mate! I really just thought of him as a good friend and brother...." Taehyung explains with a desperate yet weak voice as he tries very hard to swallow the desire to cry with Jungkook violently undressing him.

"Platoon mate? Just a friend? Then why are you two so close you need to go everywhere and do everything together? I don’t see you hanging out so closely with the other platoon members so are the 29 other men in your unit transparent to you?!"

“No no I just feel a special connection with Bogum that I don’t have with the other platoon members---” Taehyung tries to explain desperately but realizes that he had accidentally phrased his words wrongly. Very very wrongly.
The moment Jungkook hears the words “special connection” all hell breaks loose.

“Special connection?!” Jungkook repeats those two words sinisterly and in fury he spins Taehyung around to face him again and crashes his lips onto Taehyung’s, biting and gnawing his teeth into Taehyung’s mouth and when Taehyung tries to pull away he pinches onto Taehyung’s waist and presses him in place.

“Mmmpt!” Taehyung groans a little at the pinch because fuck, it fucking hurts.

To Taehyung’s own surprise, he actually starts to feel himself shaking uncontrollably in fear even though he had already had sex with Jungkook millions of times before in the past 6 months of marriage. Dann, Taehyung wasn't supposed to be scared he was supposed to be angry and he wants to be angry, not tremor like a frightened kitten and what's worse is that Taehyung knows that he doesn't have much strength left to retaliate because he had already used up most of his energy in today's training and even if he was fully recharged he would still be no match against Jungkook.

Taehyung suddenly feels full-blown unsafe. Really really unsafe in the presence of his husband Jungkook when Jungkook is supposed to be the person that he trusts the most in the world.

“Yah I don’t want this...I really don’t want this now Kook,” Taehyung tries again when Jungkook tugs on his belt and pants. He feels himself getting smaller and more and more powerless by the second in Jungkook’s domineering grasp.

“Even if you don’t want it you’ll still have to take it. You are my wife so you listen to me. What makes you think you have a choice?”

What makes you think you have a choice?

You are my wife so you listen to me.

Even if you don’t want it you’ll still have to take it.

That's it. That statement is too much. Too much. After actually processing the cruel connotation behind Jungkook’s hurtful words Taehyung finally burst out into frustrated tears.
How could Jungkook? How could Jungkook say such a heartless thing?! What a fucking jackass!

In this moment Taehyung conjures up all the strength he has left to throw the strongest punch right onto Jungkook’s face because honestly there really is no other way out of this.

BAM!

A deserving punch lands across Jungkook’s face to wake Jungkook up once and for all.

Jungkook totally did not see that coming. He stuns for awhile when he sees blood trickling down his nose and when he resumes attention all he sees is his wife balling his eyes out in front of him.

Jungkook is completely speechless in place and he literally can't handle whenever Taehyung cries like this. Taehyung, on the other hand, suddenly realizes that he has a lot of old scores to settle. He is so sad and mad at the same time.

“Grow the fuck up Jungkook! I'm seriously so tired of your patterns. Everytime you are not happy about something can’t you just talk it out with me instead of force-fucking or hitting me?! Now that I think about it I can’t actually remember us talking things out when we're both sane because you always disregard my feelings. Must I always burst out crying like this before you finally open your ears and listen? And why the fuck am I always getting fucked when I told you that I don’t want to have sex?! How is that even okay?! Just because you're my husband doesn't mean you own me you bastard and fucking doesn't cure the fucking problem! For the millionth time you need to learn how to talk things out with me not fuck me unconscious like seriously what does that even achieve?! I'm not going to magically get what you are trying to say the next day so can you please just OPEN YOUR STUCK-UP MOUTH AND TALK TO ME!”

Jungkook is speechless. He stares at a disheveled Taehyung breaking down in front of him. Jungkook is unable to find words and at this moment he finally sees for himself the new bruises that he has just created on Taehyung’s abused body. All the blues and blacks and purples, all over Taehyung ever since the beginning of their marriage.

Finally realization hits Jungkook again right smack across the face. What have I done? Jungkook thinks to himself in both guilt and shock.

“Sometimes I really feel like I'm loving the wrong person. You didn’t even try to think things from
my perspective. You forced me into a marriage, forced me into having sex with you, forced all the rules on me, forced me into learning all the complicated bullshit about the mafia, forced me to sit through tests and now you force me into such tiring army training like why the fuck do I need to go through all these for?! I can be happy all on my own without you being with BANGTAN everyday but it's ok, I endured it because I love you but I guess all that I'm doing is still not enough for you to be happy huh? You never asked for my opinion on things. Now you are even stopping me from making friends like seriously Kook? What else do you want from me? I gave you everything already. I already gave you my heart, my body, my mind, my freedom….I took a bullet for you, I even ate vegetables for you, I let you have your way with me every night and then I laugh it off the next day - you know what? I can’t believe you are doing this to me….you are my husband and you promised that you'll protect me and treat me right. I'm sorry to say this but even Bogum, a person that I've met just three days ago can treat me better than how you treat me and he's just a new friend. Even Namjoon knows how to be kind to me unlike you. Can you please explain why you are always so mean to me? How am I supposed to believe that you love me as a husband? You say you love me all the time but you don't show it. You care about what other people in the mafia think about us but you don't actually care about how I feel do you?! I’m not your fuck toy Kook, I'm your partner! Are you sure that you love me? Are you sure?!”

After throwing out his last statement, the teary red-eyed Taehyung pushes a stunned Jungkook off from him, picks up his shirt, hastily dresses himself and walks right out of the office door while still crying from the anger, shock and sadness. He is so utterly disappointed in Jungkook, so so disappointed.

Jungkook, on the other hand, continues to daze out in shock in his own office feeling as if his whole world is crashing down on him. As a man who had been growing up in a violent environment induced by his own adoptive father-turned-wife Taehyung, violence had become his natural way of life, his natural way of expression but still that couldn’t justify how guilty and shocked he is feeling right now.

Am I abusing Taehyung? All this while?

He didn’t know that Taehyung was so in pain. He didn’t know that at all. He thought it was normal. He thought it was his right to rule over his wife.

In profound sadness, Jungkook reminisces the past on how violent Taehyung used to treat him and how Taehyung used to control and restrict him and in that instant he suddenly realizes something and that is the existence of an endless cycle of violence and abuse between the both of them.

Jungkook sees Taehyung’s shadow in himself and he sees his own shadow in Taehyung.
Jungkook used to be so miserable. So miserable with his adoptive dad but Taehyung never seemed to care. Though Taehyung was protective and exhibited subtle love on various occasions, his patterns were never predictable leaving Jungkook feeling neglected, confused, scared, insecure and drained and yet he loved Taehyung with all his heart. He loved Taehyung with all his heart even though Taehyung had always hit him or just simply, ignored him. Taehyung had never listened to what the young Jungkook had to say in the past as a child. Taehyung had never listened to Jungkook’s cries and as a result Jungkook began talking less and less over time. Taehyung had never taken Jungkook's distress seriously and as a result Jungkook found it hard to speak about his negative emotions and all these led to his inability to convey his emotions well even up till today.

_How could you make a child understand how to communicate if the first thing you did was to send in a punch before listening to what he has got to convey in the past? How could you make a child feel secure about your love when you were being so unpredictable and cold all the time?_ 

Yet Taehyung did all the things he did due to his ignorance on how to love properly as an orphan. Taehyung did all the things he did without knowing that he was in fact harming Jungkook permanently.

Jungkook was so in pain as a child and now Taehyung is also feeling the same pain like Jungkook.

Nothing progressed in their relationship and nothing will progress in their relationship if they continue being this way.

In the end, Taehyung and Jungkook are just two broken people who switched roles in being the abused and the abuser and the realization of that broke Jungkook.

Yet, he still used his power to abuse Taehyung and that is a fact and upon realization of that he just wants to bring all of this to an end. Although he is the one in power right now, he doesn't want to feed this cycle of abuse anymore.
Jungkook decides that he needs and must end the violence and abuse in his own marriage. Without the cessation of violence there can never be true love and happiness and he wants Taehyung to be loved and happy. He wants Taehyung and himself to be happy together but how can he redeem himself now? How can he let Taehyung trust him again? How can he let Taehyung, someone emotionally challenged, to understand all these? Is all these still fixable? Jungkook can't believe that he has just hurt Taehyung when Taehyung is the last person that he would ever want to hurt in the world.

“Taehyung ah…. I’m so sorry... I’m so sorry for being a bad husband...” Jungkook mutters under his breath and finally starts to cry.

***

Taehyung slowly trudges back to platoon 9 bunk and with his foggy eyes he actually sees Junhoe waiting at the door for him from a fair distance away.

“Oh V you're back! Hey I wanted to say that I'm sorry for being rash…..” Junhoe apologizes but when the zombified Taehyung approaches him up close in visible distance Junhoe gets the shock of his life.

“Yah! What's with all these bruises and why are you crying? Are you ok?” Junhoe exclaims in pure shock as he eyes the bruises all over V’s face, neck and lips. The tattered clothes on Taehyung also speaks partially for what has happened.

“I'm ok Jun, thanks for waiting up. Your apology is accepted and I will set my alarm to 4:45am so don’t worry about me oversleeping. I’m tired now and I need to sleep so goodnight and see you tomorrow,” Taehyung speaks with a monotonous tone.

With that, a visibly traumatised and hurt Taehyung walks right past a still very stunned and concerned Junhoe into platoon 9 bunk and crashes motionless onto his own bed. Since everyone else is already asleep, no one else except Junhoe noticed Taehyung’s return.

Too tired to think, Taehyung curls himself into a ball and falls asleep while still shaking uncontrollably in trauma wondering how it would be like if Jungkook could just treat him a little bit better.
Just a little bit better would be great.

***

The next day Taehyung wakes up at 4:45am and reports to the quad at 5am as if nothing happened.

“Violence is a disease, a disease that corrupts all who use it regardless of the cause.”
— Chris Hedges

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don’t have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden_tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don’t forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
Chapter Summary

Jungkook attempts to become a better person for Taehyung.

“Consistency is the true foundation of trust. Either keep your promises or do not make them.” — Roy T. Bennett

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Commander JK’s private office

Date & Time: 5th March 2018 3:03AM

Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| The fifth day in The Mafia Army |

***

Jungkook is currently ringing Namjoon up at 3am in the morning. At this point of time, the world has ceased all forms of operation: the flowers are dozing off in the chilly night wind, the trees are snoring their barks off, the birds are concussing motionless in their nests, the cockroaches are catching a restful shut-eye in the shadows of fruit baskets and even the goddamn baby carrots in the kitchen are drooling their roots out in dreamland but Jungkook has decided to summon upon the one and only human he calls best friend who is probably also dead-ass asleep in bed like the other souls of mother earth because the mafia boss is desperately in emergent need of some immediate advice from his best mate and the time on the clock isn’t going to stop him from doing what he’s got to do! SAVING HIS MARRIAGE SHOULD BE THE TOP PRIORITY! SLEEP IS FOR THE WEAK!

On the other spectrum of the line, Namjoon emerges conscious from auditory shock. He then furrows his eyebrows at the source of disturbance namely his own ringing phone in utter disbelief and dismay. Which asshole is calling at 3am in the morning?! Namjoon thinks to himself in annoyance. A few seconds later, the sluggish Namjoon drags his unwilling ass out of bed and takes a quick peep at the caller code on his phone located a fair distance away at the side desk.

Oh, so the asshole in question is Jungkook.
Namjoon swiftly picks up the call to greet his boss.

"Good morning boss, is there an emergency?" Namjoon speaks with a serious, somewhat polite tone. He must remain professional at all times even though he is currently low-key annoyed. Of course, a part of him is also concerned about Jungkook rather than irritated because no one simply calls at this ungodly hour of the day for no good reason.

Upon hearing that, the mafia boss skips the greetings, ignores Namjoon’s question and without warning he jumps straight into the topic that has been plaguing his mind for hours.

"Namjoon ah, tell me the truth. Do you think that I’m mean to Taehyung? Am I a bad husband?" Jungkook asks with a voice etched with so much desperation sounding as if he’s going to burst out crying anytime soon.

5 seconds of silence as Namjoon tries to process Jungkook’s sudden misery. He is slightly taken aback by how upset Jungkook sounds and at the same time he is confused as well. What does Jungkook mean? Isn’t it a known fact that Jungkook has always been a jackass to Taehyung since 1997 so what is with this sudden regretful realization in the middle of the goddamn night right now but oh well, Namjoon isn’t in the position to judge Jungkook. Mafia bosses aren’t automatically angelic husbands. As Jungkook’s right-hand-man, Namjoon is currently more concerned about the mental state of his dejected mafia boss because something impactful must have happened that ultimately triggered Jungkook into such depressive mood.

“Boss, did something happen between you and Taehyung?”

5 seconds of silence.

“Namjoon ah, I’m doomed. My marriage is gravely at stake you need to help me.”

Wow. That’s the first time Namjoon hears of such discouraged and helpless words coming out of Jungkook’s mouth.

“What exactly happened? Is it that serious?”
10 seconds of silence as the desperate Jungkook conjures words to say.

“Basically Taehyung and I had a huge fight a few hours ago ----”

“Okay.”

“I was being rougher than usual with him because I was too angry ----”

“Mmmmmm okay what’s new.”

“Then he suddenly punched me and scolded me and ran off crying. My nose is still bleeding by the way.”

“Okay I get it now.”

“But the main thing is that he claimed that I was being mean to him all the while and wasn’t treating him right as a husband which I sort of get it but at the same time I don’t actually get it because ----”

“Yes boss, I can confirm it. You have been the meanest bastard to Taehyung.”

Upon hearing Namjoon’s words, Jungkook stuns abit to process the fact that the cool-headed Namjoon has just said what he said. The mafia boss is speechless as stone in that moment. Am I seriously that mean such that Namjoon needs to curse at me on behalf of Taehyung? Jungkook thinks to himself in utter disbelief. Namjoon has never referred to him as a “bastard” before.

“But I love Taehyung so much why would I ---”

“This has nothing to do with whether you love him or not, boss. It’s about how you treat him. You can love him with all your life but still treat him wrong and in that way it means that you are not loving him right.”

Jungkook stuns again. So Namjoon isn’t actually that emotionally autistic after all. He is just really verbally constipated at times but deep inside Namjoon is a relationship guru of genie level. At
this moment Jungkook realizes that he wants and needs to know more from Namjoon right now. He needs to know exactly how to chase his wife back.

“So what do I do now Namjoon?! Please enlighten me! Teach me how to love Taehyung right!”

“Calm down boss. Are you currently in your office?”

“Yes I am!”

“Do you want me to come over so we can talk face-to-face?”

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Commander JK’s private office

Date & Time: 5th March 2018 3:45AM

Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| The fifth day in The Mafia Army |

***

Namjoon reaches Jungkook’s office and the first thing he sees is a lost bunny with a bloody nose and blood-shot eyes looking absolutely terrified and worried.

That is only when Namjoon realizes how much this whole situation must have shaken Jungkook to the core because the mafia boss doesn’t simply become traumatised by just any situation.

“Namjoon! You gotta help me get Taehyung back I think I’ve screwed up big time!” Jungkook screams with a whiny voice upon Namjoon’s appearance before charging towards saviour Namjoon like a bull only to deliver him a tight welcoming hug.

Two minutes later both men sit down to sip some coffee in a room engaging in an early morning conversation for breakfast.
Jungkook is also seen to have his nose patched-up by the human called Namjoon.

“How am I mean to Taehyung, Namjoon? Don’t worry about it. Just tell me the specific truth up front. I need to know so that I can change.”

Upon hearing that statement, Namjoon’s eyes narrow into a squint. Jungkook is a genius when it comes down to academics, fighting and leading the mafia but when it comes to his own love life and matters of the heart he is as clueless as a camel that has accidentally loitered into the icy regions of north pole but at least Jungkook is claiming that he wants to change for the better so there’s still hope after all.

To be honest, Namjoon isn’t really sure how to answer Jungkook with the “specific truth” so in this moment the ex-bodyguard decides to seek google for help. He grabs onto his iPhone and searches for an “am I a bad husband?” questionnaire to which he quickly picks one from the endless list of quizzes and clicks start.

Question 1 pops up on his screen and Namjoon reads it dutifully.

“Tell me boss. Have you bought flowers or any pretty looking handicrafts for Taehyung before?”

Jungkook is taken aback at the sudden questioning but decides to answer it anyway.

“No, don’t think he’ll like it since he’s a tough guy. Tough guys like Taehyung usually don’t like flowers or pretty things so I’d rather not ---”

Namjoon presses the cross button and swipes to next question.

“Have you brought him out for a candlelight dinner before? Or a fancy restaurant of some sort for a treat?”

“No, I usually cook at home. We don't have time to eat for hours outside because I'm busy and why are you asking me so much weird questions are you using an app or something ---”

Namjoon presses the cross button and swipes to next question.
“This is a quiz boss so please answer me seriously. Third question: did you celebrate his last birthday by doing the things he likes with him or at least giving him something you know he loves?”

Jungkook stuns a little and after 5 seconds of zoning out he finally speaks with a guilty tone.

“Oh right. We haven’t gotten to celebrate his birthday in December because I was out on a mission. Oh damn now that I think about it did I just forget about his birthday last year?!”

Upon hearing that, Namjoon routinely presses the cross button and swipes to next question while slightly shaking his head in disapproval. If Jin was his wife, Namjoon would undoubtedly treat Jin like a disney princess for the rest of his life. Jungkook needs to know that wives are supposed to be treasured and loved not neglected like this but then again, Namjoon feels that he isn’t in the position to judge Jungkook because mafia bosses aren’t exactly fluff-ball good husband material to begin with.

“Have you brought him out for a long weekend drive to relax recently? Or at least a picnic at the beach away from the hustle of life?”

“Eh no, not at all. Again, the romantic way isn’t our style. We only go out for mcdonalds drive-throughs and picnics are way too cheesy. We are two grown men for goodness sake ---”

Namjoon sighs hard, presses the cross button once again and swipes to next question with an unimpressed frown evident on his face.

“Gave Taehyung chocolates or candies before?”

This time, the unbothered Jungkook suddenly widens his eyes as he recalls something important.

“Oh RIGHT VALENTINE’S CHOCOLATE. VALENTINE’S WAS JUST LAST MONTH BUT IT COMPLETELY SLIPPED MY MIND BECAUSE I WAS ---”

Cross and swipe.
“Written confession love letters? The cringe kind?”

5 seconds of silence as Jungkook gawks at Namjoon looking like he’s going to give up on life.

“Ehhh…..I sort of kidnapped him for the confession remember?”

Cross and swipe.

“Brought him out for a honeymoon or short holiday after you guys have gotten married?”

This time Jungkook curses under his breath with a frown.

“Oh right. That. I have been thinking to do it around one month into the marriage but I have been too busy these days to actually fulfill it---”

Cross and swipe. Upon reading this question, Namjoon raises an eyebrow. He prepares his finger near the cross button.

“Do you let him have a say in the bedroom often?”

Oh shit. Up till now top Taehyung is still a myth.

“Eh we are currently still getting into that but the situation is pretty complicated so ---”

Cross and swipe and the quiz ends with a big fat zero which corresponds to the “baddest husband ever” rating.

“Boss, I’m sorry but even google says you’re a terrible husband.”

“ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME?!”
Jungkook proceeds to snatch over Namjoon’s phone to complete another 10 related questionnaires. All results point to him being a disqualified husband that needs to be disowned.

Jungkook is absolutely horrified.

“Holy shit Namjoon should I jump out of the window?!”

“No boss, please stop with those suicidal thoughts. There’s still hope, trust me.”

“There is?!” Jungkook screeches with his widened hurt bunny eyes currently brimming in tears.

Seeing how upset Jungkook is, Namjoon sighs deeply and reminisces his past. Somehow Jungkook reminds him of himself when he was younger. In this moment, Namjoon decides to open up about his ex-boyfriend whose name shall not be mentioned.

“My ex-boyfriend is a…how do I put it….he is an extremely kind and generous person. Really loved him but I hit him every time I got angry. He had many people chasing after him and I got jealous easily whenever I saw him being nice to others. As a teenager I wasn’t this calm like what you see of me now, in fact I was violent because I didn’t exactly know how control myself especially when I became angry. Couldn’t speak my thoughts well either and always resolved things with force. It’s so serious that one day we would be out on a date having the time of our lives and the next day I would slap him multiple times in the face for speaking to another guy. We are back to square 1 every time I do that. We become strangers every time I resort to violence,” Namjoon pauses here and swallows hard as if he has just remembered something traumatic. He then takes a deep breath before continuing.

“Gradually, I realized that I had been hurting him for too long because of the many emotions I couldn’t control so after a long time contemplating, I decided to end things. Needed to set him free because he deserved it and I didn’t deserve him. I didn’t deserve him a single bit.”

Jungkook quietly listens and doesn’t utter a word. The context of Namjoon’s past relationship sounds very much applicable and relevant to his own not to mention that Namjoon barely speaks this much so Jungkook is currently treasuring every word coming out of Namjoon’s mouth as if they drip in expensive gold.

At this point in time, Namjoon lits a cigarette and takes a quick puff before proceeding with his
melancholic speech.

“On the day of the break up, I was devastated…. I told myself that...I told myself that unless I could find a way to control my temper, I would never date another person again. Don’t want to hurt another person like I did to him. So in the subsequent years, I took a conscious effort to curb my angry feelings. Tried every method from getting myself a therapist to practicing meditation and in the past 10 years I stayed away faithfully from dating anyone until I saw Jin a few months ago. Took me...how long is it?... 10 years. 10 years to pick up the courage to date another human being again.”

5 seconds of silence.

“Sorry boss, I got carried away. My point is that we all commit mistakes but what we do after realizing what’s wrong is what truly defines us. We are mafia members, boss. Violence is in our blood, in our nature, in our very own character from the start. Talking isn’t our expertise but fighting is and it is going to take a lot of effort to restrict our true innate tendencies to break and destroy. To tell you frankly, you are actually quite a workaholic, boss but you got to realize that many things can wait including mafia matters. Take a leave every now and then to spend some time with Taehyung. Bring him out for a movie, visit a museum together, bring him out to the arcade or a restaurant even. So many things you can do with him. Frankly speaking, it’s going to take you not just 1 or 2 days but many years to change something that has been ingrained inside you but since you realized it today, you got to start now. Change yourself for Taehyung. I know that Taehyung is an aggressive person as well but you shouldn’t wait for him to change. You are aware of your mistakes so be the change and influence him too. If you haven’t gotten him flowers before, get him a bouquet now. Who fucking cares if it’s cheesy. You never know how much it means to him. Ask him about that British drama he always watches, ask him why he always wears those old-fashioned pants at home because there must be a reason why he adores them and always, always listen to him when he speaks. Show him that you care whatever that is on his mind. Take the effort to know Taehyung, boss. Don’t make such moments rare. Don’t make these moments happen only in times when you are in a good mood. Make it consistent. Do something kind and loving for Taehyung everyday and you know if you ever get angry at home, it’s simple. Leave the house and go for a drive before you can have a chance of acting out. Think about things while you’re out and then communicate things with Taehyung effectively after you’ve calmed down. If you feel like you still can’t verbalize your thoughts well then by all means take the time to write it out. Find any way you can to communicate properly with Taehyung. It’s not always about a physical relationship, boss. It’s about the heart-to-heart connection and understanding of your partner and by understanding this and taking action towards this you are in a way effecting the change, boss. In that way, you are loving a person right and that person will change for you too.”

With that, Namjoon completes his speech.
Jungkook stuns for a few seconds before all hell breaks loose. The zestful mafia boss suddenly shoots up from his seat and slams the table hard with a resounding bang to which Namjoon jolts slightly as the cigarette falls out from his mouth onto the floor.

“You are damn right Namjoon! I got to treat Taehyung right from now on! I got to EFFECT THE CHANGE!” Jungkook screams in excitement and proceeds to run out of his own office like a bull on drugs.

“Wait boss! Where are you going in the middle of the night?” Namjoon reacts in time to shout out a question.

Jungkook shouts back while sprinting towards the door.

“Of course I’m going to chase my wife back! I know what to do from now on, Namjoon! Thanks for the advice and goodnight!” Jungkook screams and with that he disappears out of the door.

Namjoon stares into space at the ajar door for awhile before a little grin emerges onto his face.

As Jungkook’s best friend, Namjoon is proud to see the good in Jungkook. The moment a man decides to change for the better, he is already changing.

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Central Assembly Quad
Date & Time: 5th March 2018 5:00AM
Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage
[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| The fifth day in The Mafia Army |

***

Taehyung reports to the quad at 5am sharp as if nothing has happened last night. He stands in attention facing the front like the hundreds of other soldier minions in the quad waiting for the arrival of the commanders.
Junhoe is standing beside Taehyung on his left as he glances to the side time to time to steal peeks at the visibly dejected man.

“V, are you sure you’re okay?”

“Yes,” Taehyung speaks with a tough tone, but it isn’t hard to spot that his eyes have been swollen and puffy from crying the previous night not to mention the visible evidence of abuse clearly written all over his uncovered face, neck and arms in the form of red and purple shades.

That fucking pervert asshole Commander JK, got to beat him up the next time I see him! Junhoe thinks to himself in absolute resolution. Junhoe has always been a man of justice. Even though confronting Jungkook is likely to cause him severe punishments, he will still do it for good because nobody simply touches his platoon mate without his permission! Nobody! Not even the superior commander!

On the other hand, Bogum who is standing on Taehyung’s right looks over at Taehyung, his expression as confused as a lost camel in north pole when he notices the bruises all over Taehyung.

“V, are you okay? Did something happen yesterday with commander JK that we need to know about?” Bogum whispers discretely in a concerned tone over at Taehyung.

Upon hearing that, the numbed Taehyung just replies with a quick “no, nothing happened” in a monotonous flat-out tone devoid of any emotion.

In this moment, both Bogum and Junhoe decide that they’ll have to watch over Taehyung for today. Taehyung doesn’t seem to be in the right mind and as platoon mates they’ll have to look out for Taehyung in case anything happens.

Surprisingly, Commander IU is the only one that turns up some minutes later.

“Commander JK is away for a mission so from now on, I’ll be taking over all the trainings are you clear tier 2?!?” Commander IU screams to the masses in a strict tone.
“Yes Ma’am!”

Upon processing that, the visibly dejected Taehyung switches to confusion mode. *What’s up with Jungkook?* However, two seconds later Taehyung switches back to depressive mode again thinking that Jungkook has left him to fend for himself in the army just because of the intense fight they had last night. He’s right, maybe Jungkook doesn’t really love him. Maybe Jungkook is avoiding him right now because he isn’t actually sure about his love towards him. Taehyung recalls ending the fight last night with the question “are you sure you love me, Jungkook?”.

Maybe this is Jungkook’s way of answering him that he isn’t sure. Maybe Jungkook doesn’t love or care about him after all and so Jungkook left, just like how he left without a word 5 years ago for his real family.

***

Location: The Mafia Army Platoon #9 bunk

Date & Time: 5th March 2018 8:27PM

Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| The fifth day in The Mafia Army |

***

After the whole day of training, the zombified Taehyung returns back with the platoon to rest in their designated bunk. It’s real, Jungkook has left. Throughout the day there is not a single shadow of Jungkook that Taehyung can spot around the army grounds. Dejected and heartbroken, Taehyung slings a towel over his slumped shoulders but before he can proceed on to the shower room, a little something that is poking out from under his pillow catches his attention.

Curious, Taehyung reaches out for the item and pulls it out. A pink heart-shaped envelope pops into view with a “from J.K.” written over at the seal.

Upon seeing that, Taehyung’s heart immediately starts thumping at a furious rate. He quickly proceeds to hide under his bunk bed so that he can read the precious envelope from his husband who is currently missing-in-action.

[Letter #00]
Dear wifey, I’m so sorry about what happened last night. I’m sorry that I couldn’t control my anger and that I was being rough to you.

Honestly I have been reflecting a lot last night after our fight and it turns out that you’re right. You don’t need my permission to interact with your platoon mates. You don’t need my permission to make new friends in the army. You have sacrificed so much for me and all I’m good at is forcing you into things and being angry over trivial matters and I’m so so sorry about the fact that I’ve disregarded your feelings. This is all my fault and I’m apologizing sincerely to you so don’t be afraid of me or angry at me okay wifey? I promise that I’ll never treat you this way again.

Also, I’m sorry about the fact that I didn’t put in any effort to chase you in the past. Please give me another chance to love you right okay? I’ll prove it with my actions so please, give me another chance and continue to believe in me and after thinking for awhile, I have decided to retire from the commanding position in tier 2 for now. That is why you didn’t see me in training today because I’ve decided to leave.

To be frank with you, my jealousy isn’t going to magically disappear any moment from now. In fact, I can still feel it in my heart - all the anger, the sadness and the pain but trust me baby, I’m working on it. During our marriage, we had mostly good days together after you moved back with me into the mansion but I do recall moments when I mistreated you especially when I was angry and feeling hot-headed. That’s why I have to work to change myself. I’m working on becoming more understanding towards you, I’m working on controlling my negative emotions and my temper and I’ll never want to hurt you like that ever again and that’s why I have to leave first Taehyung, to protect you from my unstable self before I become a better person.

Also, I know that you don’t like seeing me with IU so I hope that this temporary leave can help you focus on your training as well. Train well alright Taehyung? Hope that you’ll become stronger, stronger than me even which I know you are entirely capable of. That’s the whole point I’ve sent you here in the first place so that you could defend yourself. I’m so sorry that I’ve been distracting you with all the drama over the past few days but from now on I’ll be a supportive husband I swear! Retiring as the commander would mean that I’ll have less interactions with you for the next few months and this decision is seriously a heartbreaking one for me to make but I think we both need to spend some time away from each other. I don’t want to lock you up or chain you under my supervision 24/7 because that is just being plainly obsessive and the last thing I want is for our love to spiral into obsession.

In case you’re wondering, no. This isn’t a “goodbye, let’s have a break” announcement. I’ll still watch you from afar once in awhile and everyday from now on through your training in the mafia army I’ll send you a letter under your pillow okay? Send letters back if you want by putting it under your pillow and I’ll come to collect it when the tier is away for training.
Hwaiting baby~ Focus on what you got to do and I’ll support you from afar!

#ChasingLeWifeBack2018 #SecondChancesForLeBadHusbands2018

With love,

Husband JK

P.S. there’s medicative oil inside the envelope too besides the letter. Use it well alright? Sorry for the bruises, I love you so much.]

After reading the letter, Taehyung spaces out a little not entirely sure whether to cry, or smile or laugh his head off at the hashtags. He then reads the letter ten more times before tucking it away somewhere discrete as he heads for the shower.

He is undoubtedly adoring Jungkook’s adorable letter but at the same time he isn’t sure if Jungkook will do as he promised. Maybe it’s because Jungkook has failed him too many times before in the past with empty promises.

Should I trust him again this time? He wants to chase me back? Isn’t that a little cheesy heheh come on we’ve been married for months, Taehyung thinks to himself feeling some awkward goosebumps emerging on his skin but doesn’t realize that he is also currently blushing like a teenage high-school girl. Come to think about it, Taehyung is still in disbelief that Jungkook has just taken the effort to write him a love letter which has never happened before. Jungkook usually only sucks up to him when he wants sex or when he needs Taehyung to do him a favour so maybe things are really going to be a little different this time. Will Jungkook really learn to treat Taehyung right this time with consistency? Will he be able to stay clean from abuse?

Hmmmm….how will he chase me back after I get out of the army? Will he buy me flowers? Nahhh...he never gives me flowers....Chocolates? Nahhh.....he never gives me chocolates even during valentine’s.....Movie date? Nahhhhh he’s too busy....Hmmmmm.......Taehyung proceeds on showering and in the process he is already subconsciously conjuring up millions of situations in his mind. He suddenly gets extremely excited so he sings a little happy tune.
Well, Taehyung can’t say for certain whether he can trust Jungkook to really change to become a better husband now but he knows for sure that he can’t wait to receive Jungkook’s 2nd letter tomorrow.

When Taehyung returns back to his bunk bed post-shower, he quickly scribbles a note and puts it under his pillow before sleeping on it peacefully.

The note reads: [I’ll see how you act from now on but for now you’re still not forgiven. By the way, is your nose still straight? I didn’t hit too hard last night did I?]

"I’m not the silly romantic you think. I don’t want the heavens or the shooting stars. I don’t want gemstones or gold. I have those things already. I want…a steady hand. A kind soul. I want to fall asleep, and wake, knowing my heart is safe. I want to love, and be loved." — Shana Abe

Twitter: @hidden___tracks (two underscores)
Jungkook's Letters

Chapter Summary

Jungkook writes heartwarming letters everyday to Taehyung without fail while Taehyung’s replies are usually short and cold.

― Rosamund Hodge, Gilded Ashes

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Platoon #9 Bunk
Date & Time: 6th March 2018 4:45AM
Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage
[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| The sixth day in The Mafia Army |

***

Taehyung does everything with undiminished enthusiasm today.

He shoots wide awake with vigour at 4:45am screaming “wake up everyone rise and shine!” when the first ring of his alarm goes off before snuggling under his cozy marshmallow blankets to reread Jungkook’s letter for at least three more times and in the process he swears that he can actually feel butterflies exploding in his stomach like volcanoes. “Awww stob it,” Taehyung murmurs under his breath with a goofy grin. After a good night’s rest, the 28-year-old street gang leader can finally register just how sweet and considerate Jungkook’s words are in the note as compared to the past. It’s just so sweet that Jungkook is apologising and being so supportive instead of being his usual possessive and strict self and it’s making Taehyung roll into a ball of feels right now. Maybe their love is really going to change! Maybe everything is really going to become better! Maybe Taehyung can really top his husband when he graduates from the army and Taehyung definitely cannot wait for that moment to come!

After dazing out a little missing his husband, Taehyung places the letter somewhere safe before flipping out of his bed only to diligently ninja to the quad 5 minutes earlier than usual. He then proceeds to smile like an undying Hawaiian sunshine throughout his 10km morning run as if he had just overdosed on a gazillion load of dopamine prior training. At some point of time during the run,
the high-spirited Taehyung even manages to surpass Junhoe in his strides. Junhoe is known to possess the best stamina in tier 2, making everyone in platoon #9 including Junhoe himself gawk in bewilderment when the ecstatic Taehyung just so suddenly shoots head first in lead because seriously, what the hell happened to Taehyung? Is he high on crack?! The last time the platoon members checked they were quite sure that Taehyung was still a bundle of nervous mess trying desperately to keep up with the rest of the team. What is this black magic?! What is this sudden madness of an improvement?!

During lunch, Junhoe and Bogum just gawk at Taehyung across the bench as he happily wolfs down 3 plates of rice as if his stomach has transformed into an empty galaxy craving food atoms. This is their first time witnessing their platoon mate V encompassing such generous appetite and it’s honestly freaking them out. Where is the sulky V they know? Where is the gloomy V they know? Where is the vulnerable and downcast V they know? It’s as if the negative side of Taehyung has vaporized into thin air thrown away to another dimension never to be seen again forever. In this instant, the duo starts to ponder the possibility that maybe Taehyung has officially went crazy with bipolar because just yesterday, the 28-year-old man was still dead depressed as if a mass war funeral on a sad rainy day and yet today he looks like he is all set on conquering the entire world.

Bogum tips over to the side and whispers softly into Junhoe’s ear.

“Jun, do you think he has bipolar? Or some sort of personality disorder?”

“Highly probable but I’m not too sure. We need to continue observing him.”

“Agreed.”

At this moment, Taehyung elevates his gaze from his rice bowl to meet eyes with Bogum and Junhoe effectively knocking them out of their stalker-mode trance.

“Not trying to be rude but you two have been staring at me since the start of the day. Is there something on my face? I know my face is handsome but just to remind y’all that you have only 5 minutes left of lunchtime to eat,” Taehyung speaks nonchalantly.

Wait what? 5 minutes?! Junhoe and Bogum furrow their eyebrows and glance down at their watches only to realize that there is indeed only 5 minutes of lunchtime left for them to quickly consume and digest whatever food that’s left on their plates before the intensive noon training begins. Food wastage is not allowed in the army so they cannot just throw whatever that’s on their plates away without finishing them off. Well, the perplexed duo has been too busy observing and analyzing Taehyung to the point where they have forgotten to eat their lunch.
“Shit!” Junhoe and Bogum scream collectively before digging their faces into their rice bowls furiously munching like panicky chipmunks that have been starving for days. They really do not want to start puking like what happened 2 days ago.

Well, they’ll continue observing Taehyung later but for now, they have themselves to save first.

***

Location: The Mafia Army Platoon #9 Bunk
Date & Time: 6th March 2018 8:13PM
Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 6 months into marriage
[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]
| The sixth day in The Mafia Army | 
***

After the whole afternoon of combat weapons training, Taehyung returns to platoon 9 bunk with a heart combusting with acute anticipation and nervousness.

Will there be a letter? Will Jungkook really write everyday? What will Jungkook write about today?

Taehyung inches close to his pillow as his heart goes boom boom. With shaky fingers he flips his pillow aside and there it is. There. It. Is.

A note.

But wait. This time the note only has four words.

Taehyung squints his eyes into a narrow slit and picks the small piece of paper up and reads it.

“Look under your bed,” Taehyung reads the words on the note under his breath.

_Hmmm? Under my bed? What could it be? Could it be a cringe surprise?!_ Taehyung thinks to himself in excitement.
He immediately bends over to inspect the underside of his bed and there he sees it. Two gigantic tubs full of off-white liquid and another piece of heart-shaped letter with more words on the ground.

[Letter #002]

Dear wifey, my nose is fine don't worry about me~ Well, even if I'm disfigured, you can't just abandon me because heheh you are stuck with me forever~ oh oops! did I sound too possessive again? I'm sorry, you are allowed to abandon me anytime but please don't do it T.T Anyway the weather is getting hotter so here’s some barley water that I've cooked for you~ Barley helps to cool the body down so please drink it alot especially since training is going to get tougher~ Don't get sick okay~ I love you~

#ChasingLeWifeBack2018]

After reading the fluffy message, Taehyung cannot stop grinning. It’s as if there are a pair of chopsticks holding his cheeks up in place because seriously, Jungkook is just too adorable like a youngster being all flustered and shy with his first love writing all these geeky hand-written letters and all. The last time Taehyung received such letters and gifts were from his first few girlfriends many years ago. Oh wait. Jungkook is 20-year-old youngster. Taehyung is his first love, and yet such awkward actions and words only surface now between them and Taehyung suddenly finds this behaviour all too cute and intimate to handle. What is this magical wooing technique? Is Jungkook going for the national good boy image now? Damn, this is really something new but Taehyung secretly likes it. After bathing and singing in the shower like a contented spongebob that has sold 3494048392080893 krabby patties, Taehyung returns to his bunk and quickly scribbles a reply note something along the lines of: [Kook, judging from the colour of the water I almost thought you sent me a load of cum but thank you I will drink it well and is the cheesy hashtag necessary?]

As usual, a reply note with no excessive emoticons or overt romanticized expressions. Even the handwriting is fugly. A very Taehyung letter indeed.

Taehyung then proceeds to stuff his letter under the pillow and goes to sleep again, his brain healing slightly everyday because of Jungkook’s unconditional and consistent love for himself.

Tomorrow gets better with love, every single tomorrow.
Today Taehyung receives a few freshly-taken photos of Bangtan. First photo he sees is of Jihope couple. They were in the bangtan underground hideout when the photo was taken. Next is a photo of the Namjin couple. They were of course still in the tier 1 army when the photo was taken privately when no other recruits were looking. Lastly, it is a collective 417-members-bangtan-group-photo taken exclusively in Taehyung’s village district along with the current temporary-in-charge Jimin and Hoseok. In all the photos, everyone is posing with finger hearts and smiling heartily into the camera as if saying: “we're good boss! Hope you're doing great too!”

Jungkook’s attached letter of the day:

[Letter #003]
Dear wifey, I hope you are feeling all the love you deserve in this world after seeing all these photos. I guessed that you must have missed Bangtan and all these are to show you that they are missing you too but still they will continue to support you in whatever you are doing! Just like me! The world loves you and we are waiting! Hwaiting wifey! I really miss and love you alot. P.S. of course the tag is necessary :)

#ChasingLeWifeBack2018 #BangtanMissesYou #HusbandMissesYou #HwaitingHwaitingHwaiting]

Taehyung smiles. He can imagine photographer Kook going around taking photos stealing Jin’s job without permission.

Taehyung scribbles a reply and tugs it under pillow.

Taehyung: [Wow I'm impressed at your photography skills Kook. It’s almost as good as Jin’s though I actually want a photo of you too. Send me one in the next letter?]
Fast forward a few days with cliche love letters and gifts. Basically by this time the whole bunk has already confirmed the fact that Taehyung indeed has some sort of secret admirer that has been sending girly heart-shaped notes and gifts everyday. Probably a member of the mafia-affiliated female army? Well, not a surprise judging from how exceedingly handsome Taehyung is but what these platoon #9 members don't know is that the actual identity of Taehyung's secret admirer is none other than the most powerful mafia boss of this organization.

Today Taehyung receives something a little different.

[Letter #012]

Dear wifey, I came by to watch your gun training today from afar. Sorry I didn't mean to be a creep but I've missed you too much and couldn't help but come to visit you uwu T.T Anyway, the reason why you're not shooting the bullseye consistently is because the moment you pull the trigger you reflexively break your wrist upwards which changes your shooting angle. My suggestion is that you can try aiming a little lower just right below the bullseye to compensate for this effect. All the best wifey~ P.S. the communal soap in the army is filthy so that's probably why you are getting rashes. Don't use it anymore it breaks my heart seeing red patches on your skin T.T I’ve gotten you better soap and some baby powder to use and try not to share it with your buddies alright? It's for you only wifey~ and also…. you are becoming more and more handsome with them tight muscles and tanner skin~ can I have a taste soon? :P yum yum~ >:)

#ChasingLeWifeBack2018 #HotWifeyFTW #YumYum]

Taehyung majorly cringes as he reads Jungkook’s semi-flirty note but somehow this note gets him a little hard in the pants. He scribbles a quick reply.

Taehyung: [Wow, I really didn't notice that I've been breaking my wrist. You have always been
obsessive about all these small details aren't you? Thanks for the advice Kook and actually you don't need to apologize for visiting. Maybe say hi next time? P.S. I think I'm getting more handsome too. Count yourself lucky and whether you are getting any of this yum yum depends on my mood when I get home.]

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Platoon #9 Bunk

Date & Time: 4th April 2018 8:25PM

Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 7 months into marriage

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| The thirty-fifth day in The Mafia Army |

***

[Letter #031:

Dear wifey, this Eiffel tower keychain is a souvenir I've gotten when I went to Paris last year. I'll bring you to see the real Eiffel tower soon alright? Let's go on our overdue honeymoon real soon okay? I'm sorry for delaying it! Also, aside Paris, is there anywhere else you want to go? I can bring you to travel the world! P.S. the Eiffel tower glows in vibrant lights at night and it's so pretty. Hope we can see it together someday~

#ChasingLeWifeBack2018 #ParisBound #EiffelTowerBound #TravelTheWorldWithWifey]

Taehyung feels his heart blossoming at this one. Damn, this honeymoon thing. Is it really going to come true soon?

Taehyung: [Sounds good the way you say it. Can't wait for the honeymoon. I don't have a preference actually because anywhere in the world should be fine with as long as it's with you and can you tell me more about your day and just what you're doing in general every letter? Don't just focus on me because I'm curious about you too.]

***

Location: The Mafia Army Tier 2 Platoon #9 Bunk

Date & Time: 18th April 2018 8:16PM

Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 7 months into marriage]
Dear wifey, I've baked some cookies for you. You used to like these a lot remember? I'm sorry that I'm always forcing vegetables down your throat after marriage though I still feel that greens are good for you. Remember to eat more greens in the army okay! Nevertheless I will try baking more cookies since you like them. P.S. can I be your "kookie" too? So that I can pack myself in a box and send it to you? :) Oh no sorry for the bad joke let me just tell you about my day. Well….*inserts 3 more sentences about Kookie's boring work as a mafia boss*....that's about it, just work :( Life is so boring without you wifey. I miss you and love you so much, can't wait for you to be back in my arms~

#ChasingLeWifeBack2018 #CookieOrKookie #ChooseHusbandPlease

Upon reading this one, Taehyung is instantly reminded of a little bunny waiting loyally for its owner to return. Previously Jungkook is an aggressive bunny demanding Taehyung to eat vegetables and now Jungkook has melted into a soft marshmallow bunny eagerly seeking his attention. Tears come washing into Taehyung’s eyes because Taehyung has always had a soft spot for cute vibes.

[Taehyung: I've missed the cookies you baked so thank you for sending them. Anyway I don't know what's gotten into me but even vegetables are starting to taste good to me now. Maybe I’m really getting older and my taste buds are changing. P.S. Sorry not sorry but I'll choose cookies over you anytime. ]

Today Taehyung receives a short but groundbreaking letter because Jungkook suddenly transforms into a poet. Attached to the letter are some beautiful crimson roses.
[Letter #053:
Roses are red
Violets are blue
You are born so sexy
It makes me crazy for you

Roses are red
Violets are blue
You can be the 6
And I can be your 9

Roses are red
Violets are blue
I have missed you dearly
Please darling, can we fuck soon?

#ChasingLeWifeBack2018 #PoetKookie #RomanticKookie #HornyKookie #SincereRequest
#LoveAndMissYouAlways #MyDickMissesYouToo #WaitingForYouToComeBack]

Taehyung chokes on his saliva while reading this. He reads it a few more times again just to make sure that his husband has wrote this. He needs to make sure that his husband has written a shameless poem and sent flowers for the first time to request for a sex that isn’t going to come till at least 2 months from now.

Taehyung pens a reply.

Taehyung: [The second stanza doesn't rhyme but it's nice. Good effort. I love flowers and fucking so this is officially my favourite letter. About your request, I’ll consider it when I’m released for term break in July.]

Jungkook reads the reply the next day and spazzes a little at the corner.
Dear wifey, I’m afraid but I have to apologize because I came popping by today again peeping at you because I’ve missed you so much but wow, I’m surprised that you’ve grown! The army uniform fits so tight and sexy around you and it looks so hot and manly but I’m afraid that the other guys will look uwu T.T Please wear the new set of looser uniform that I’ve just given you~ Please baby it's just one size bigger! P.S. sorry I don't mean to be controlling but so many of your platoon mates are staring at your ass and biceps :( Love and miss you so much and do poke their eyes out for me alright? Love you wifey~ hwaiting!

#ChasingLeWifeBack2018 #HotWifeyFTW #PokeTheirEyesPlease

Taehyung: [It's nice to know that I am becoming manlier and thank you for giving me fresh sets of uniform because the previous sets are starting to suffocate me. Hmmmm….since even you’re acknowledging that I'm becoming buffed up maybe it's time I top?]

After reading Taehyung's reply, Jungkook never mentions about Taehyung’s manly body in his daily letters again.
Today Taehyung learns that he has a new family member.

[Letter #083:

Dear wifey guess what? I’ve gotten us a new puppy! See attached photo. Anyway I was walking by a pet centre yesterday and there this puppy was staring up at me with such aggressive eyes and yet it just looked so cute and squishy and lovable! It reminded me of you so I got it and I have no regrets~ We’re waiting for you at home! Can’t wait for your term break that is coming in 7 days. I love and miss you so much~ P.S. I’ve named it Yeontan hehehe and Yeontan is already a Bangtan member by the way! Come back home to our new family member soon alright wifey! Come back to see our new baby~

#ChasingLeWifeBack2018 #YeontanWelcome #NewFamilyMember #TwoBecomesThree #7daysCountdown #OneWeekLeft #WifeyReturning]

Wow, a new puppy and is it only a week to term break? Taehyung thinks while dazing out. He then fishes out the photo inside the envelope and there he sees it, a puppy that appears somewhat angry but physically it is so small and fluffy making it look so harmlessly adorable. This photo is taken in selfie mode and half of Jungkook’s face can be seen. His husband is smiling radiantly back at the camera.

Upon seeing this, Taehyung suddenly feels himself choking back tears and he isn’t sure why. Maybe he is triggered by a few words and images that seem to stand out. Words and images such as “home” and “family” and “love” pieced together in a single letter finally strikes a few chords upon his nearly non-existent heart strings and he suddenly finds the overwhelming feels a little hard to handle. Besides, this yeontan puppy looks so fucking cute.

Damn, these ninjas cutting onions flying in from outer space all of a sudden.

The emotionally distant 28-year-old man puts down the letter and looks up at the calendar hanging by his bed and discovers that it is really already his third month into training. How did time past so fast? Taehyung has been too focused on his training to realize this. In fact, Taehyung has emerged as one of the top recruits in the tier 2 army along with Bogum and Junhoe after having worked hard enough to improve his stamina and skills. He is so busy that he doesn’t even realize how close it is to the holiday break. As Jungkook mentioned in the letter, there is only 7 days more before term break and only 7 days more before he can finally return to his family.
I have a home? I have a family? A bunny husband and a new baby puppy waiting for me? Taehyung cannot register what he is thinking right now. As a man that is born an orphan, Taehyung finds all these a little hard to conceptualize.

In this instant, Taehyung decides to forego sleep tonight. He grabs onto the stash of 82 letters, discreetly moves out of the bunk to a private outdoor corner and rereads every single one of Jungkook’s letters again. Every single sentence. Every single word. Every fucking single hashtag.

After looking through everything again Taehyung suddenly finds it hard to breathe.

The magnitude of what has been happening finally hits him. This husband of his, this Jungkook, has been consistently writing to him every single day without fail.

How many letters has it been? 82 letters. 82 days. 82 times Jungkook kept his promise to support and love Taehyung through his journey in the army.

These moments don’t just happen on lucky days anymore. It happens every single day now and no matter how short or emotionless Taehyung’s replies are, Jungkook continues to write with the same amount of affection and attachment back to Taehyung every single day.

Jungkook makes an effort to love and care for his wife every single day.

Taehyung sits there in a dark corner with furrowed eyebrows, his mind unable to fathom what Jungkook has done for himself because this whole new way of interacting feels so new. The way they are communicating currently feels so new and Taehyung realizes that he has been gradually shedding his defenses against his husband.

This stable kind of love is something Taehyung has never experienced before. Taehyung has never loved Jungkook this way in the past before either and he cannot imagine what it is like to be loved like this.

This new way of showing love is so comfortable that Taehyung has fallen head first into it without realizing.
In fact, Taehyung doesn’t realize that as time goes by he starts to see each letter sent by Jungkook as something less and less significant. It happens everyday so what's the big deal?

Precisely because it is becoming a consistent part of Taehyung’s life to be loved so kindly, the magnitude of this compassion starts to shrink. The letters come consistently every day and as a result Taehyung starts to take the love for granted and is unable to see how blissful he actually is but at the same time this feeling liberates him and frees him from misery. He does not dwell in suffering with his husband and is able to move forward steadily to live his life. This safe feeling allows Taehyung to fully focus on being himself again, to improve and train with concentration and to become a better fighter and the leader he has always been today.

Jungkook is willingly doing all these without asking for anything back. He puts in the effort to provide Taehyung with that constant support and care and allows Taehyung to be completely and utterly spoilt in it. He allows Taehyung to take his love for granted and waits for it to be reciprocated patiently.

The amount of willpower Jungkook must have taken to overcome the insecurity and possessiveness inside himself so that he can filter the best and rawrest love to his Taehyung.

The amount of gentleness.

The amount of selflessness.

And there Taehyung is, a 28-year-old grown ass man sitting in the corner at the steps trying to resolve his feelings.

This is love right?

It feels so right to be loved like this.

Taehyung stares into blank space for a little while trying to digest his feels before penning a reply.

Taehyung: [Good choice of puppy. This Yeontan looks so cute and I can’t wait to meet him...or is it a her? Also, I just want to say that, thank you for loving me this kindly even though I treated you
badly in the past. Hope you forgive me for that. I can’t believe you really wrote letters to me everyday. Frankly speaking I’m very touched. Just wait a little more alright, I’m coming home soon and we can finally see and talk to each other face to face again. I love and miss you so much Kook, see you and Yeontan 7 days later.

The next day when Jungkook receives and reads this reply he cries a river of tears.

“I have a million things to talk to you about. All I want in this world is you. I want to see you and talk. I want the two of us to begin everything from the beginning.” — Norwegian Wood

---

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don't have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden__tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don't forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
[M] Fuck Me Daddy!

Chapter Summary

Taehyung fucks Jungkook once. Never again.

“People protect what they love.” - Jacques Yves Cousteau

***

Location: Tier 2 Training Camp - Platoon #9 Bunk

Date & Time: 1st June 2018 4:23AM

Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 10 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| The Holiday Week |

***

Guess what day it is today?

Well, it’s the 1st of June, exactly 3 months into the start of the vigorous tier 2 mafia army training and also the much-anticipated date in which all recruits can finally be released for a well-deserved week-long mid-term break away from this hell-hole of a training forest grounds.

Taehyung is low-key excited to return home so the first thing he does in the morning is to spring wide awake prior the first ring of his alarm before somersaulting to the bathroom for a nice long soapy bath. After the wash-up he hastily throws on a white singlet, a pair of ripped jeans and a fashionable snapback over his sexy short hair and proceeds to grab onto his chunky bags of belongings including the many gifts given by his secret admirer Jungkook only to throw them bulks all over his broad toughened shoulders. Taehyung sneaks a peek at himself in the mirror. Wow, handsome.

As mentioned before, Taehyung has become leaner and more muscly ever since the start of the army
training but not in the let-my-golden-muscles-explode-in-your-face kind of way. Good things come in small packages and Taehyung is as lean and compact as he can possibly be in an unexaggerated manner which of course, makes him exceptionally attractive to any dog cat frog boy girl man woman cockroach alien grandma grandpa not to mention the oranges in the kitchen because damn, Taehyung is one hell of a refined gem of a man now that he is all fit and strong.

Smiling contentedly at his own perfect reflection, the mildly narcissistic Taehyung starts to strut out of the compound like a classy fuck-boy. However, before Taehyung can step foot out of the bunk, platoon leader Junhoe shoots awake abruptly and pauses Taehyung in his act. It is notable to mention that Junhoe has been having a tiny little rainbow candy of a crush on Taehyung after witnessing his new-found prowess in all areas of the army training. The daddiness in Taehyung is becoming more and more prominent over time causing Junhoe to be perpetually in awe with the older man. Over the past few months, the platoon leader has been dutifully observing Taehyung with Bogum in a joint effort to look out for mental symptoms in Taehyung but for some reason his disobedient dick always gets hard as steel in the process. Especially when Taehyung jumps over those barricades and obstacles like a pro or when Taehyung slashes opponents down during sparring battles like a savage or when Taehyung just so easily shoots down all designated targets in their pseudo missions like he is in a video game. Damn! The more Junhoe stares at Taehyung the more he can't take his eyes off him. Such a pretty face but also masculine and sexy at the same time. Frankly speaking, Taehyung attracts Junhoe in the most confusing way possible and Junhoe finds himself desperately gasping for air multiple times when Taehyung just so casually sends a "bro smack" on his shoulder or back. Such sweet mixed feelings of admiration and attraction isn't it? But of course, Junhoe keeps his little gay secret to himself and doesn't tell anyone about it, not even Bogum.

“Wow V I see that you are already rushing off first thing in the morning! Meeting that girlfriend of yours that has been sending you letters huh?” teases the platoon leader cheekily. He is still slouching lazily on his bed at this moment and yet he is already attentively tuned in and poking his nose into the affairs of his beloved crush.

Taehyung keeps his classy smile on.

“Yeap you are right, I’m meeting that girlfriend of mine. Bye hoe, see you in a week.”

What? V really has a girlfriend?!
Upon hearing that Junhoe’s face instantly flushes white-washed pale.

Junhoe has always assumed that the love from Taehyung's secret admirer was a one-sided affair.

So the secret admirer really became his girlfriend?! Or is she his girlfriend all along?!
NOOOOOO!!!!!!!!!!!!

Junhoe is devastated. He didn't expect this. He was just teasing like he always did but then this time Taehyung unexpectedly revealed an insight. In this moment the platoon leader begins to mentally strangle the aforementioned “girlfriend” in his mind as he silently watches Taehyung leave with a twisted plastic grin on his face.

“Hahahaahahaha wow so you finally admit to having a girlfriend! Good one brother! Have fun!” replies Junhoe in a cackled cheerful tone to which Taehyung reciprocates with a nonchalant flick of a hand-wave before finally exiting.

After Taehyung vanishes from Junhoe’s sight, the heartbroken 20-year-old recruit slumps and buries his entire existence into the sheets with a pitiful pout thinking about how he had just temporarily lost his chance with his beautiful crush. In one instant his heart is shattered into a million pieces.

Poor Junhoe but it’s probably time he accepts the fact that his crush is one hell of a rare sexy cup of tea that he can only admire from afar but can never get to taste because after all, Taehyung belongs to Jungkook. He is Jungkook's tea and Jungkook is his cookie. A match made in heaven and unmistakably a divine pair that should always coexist together by the law of nature because let's face it: cookie and tea always completes the set and now this cuppa tea is going to reunite with his little cookie who is currently still sleeping his head off at home totally unaware that tea would return so early in the morning because tea had lied to cookie saying that he would sleep in a little longer today before setting off for home in hopes to sneak in a surprise.

Taehyung sure is a naughtae cuppa tae isn't he?

Well, it's finally time for a little tea party surprise.

***

Location: “The Mafia Origins” Underground Central Mansion aka Kookie and Tae Tae's Home

Date & Time: 1st July 2018 6:21AM
When Taehyung reaches home, Jungkook is still sound asleep.

Even the new little Yeontan puppy is snoring away in dreamland at a corner of their master bedroom looking like the cutest fluff ball ever.

Taehyung wants to play but he also doesn’t want to disturb both the human and the dog so he silently lifts the blanket covers on the bed and snuggles into the empty space inside Jungkook’s arms to which Jungkook reflexively hugs Taehyung tightly in his embrace. Even after building up his body, Taehyung realizes in this instant that he is still significantly smaller than his cookie monster of a macho husband who then proceeds to wrap his heavy hulk-like limbs around Taehyung’s lean frame as if an enzyme encapsulating a substrate molecule in an induced-fit model.

“Wifey...wifey…” Jungkook subconsciously hums in his sleep as his body reacts to Taehyung’s familiar touches to which Taehyung tears up slightly. After all this time they were apart, Jungkook still loves him with such dedication. Besides, the warmth radiating from Jungkook's body makes Taehyung feel so nostalgic. Damn, Taehyung really missed cuddling with his husband. He wonders how miserable and lonely it must have felt for Jungkook to sleep alone every night ever since his enlistment into the army. It must have felt so empty for Jungkook who has always had a habit of sleeping near Taehyung ever since he was a child and thinking about this makes Taehyung sigh lovingly at his husband. Poor Kook, he thinks but the moment Jungkook starts drooling grossly over Taehyung's singlet, the sparkly feels in Taehyung’s heart abruptly vanishes into thin air as he squints his eyes with a deadpan face trying to climb out of Jungkook’s tightened grasp.

“Wake up Kook. Stop drooling on me goddamit are you a dog or something?!” Taehyung protests and struggles slightly in Jungkook’s arms.

A few moments later, Jungkook emerges conscious from the turbulence only to see his beautiful wife inside his embrace.

Is this.....Taehyung?

Is this wifey?
“Omo! It's wifey!!!!

“AHHHH!!!! WIFEY YOU ARE BACK!!!!!!!!!!!!” screams Jungkook as he literally pounces onto Taehyung flipping said wife underneath him as he attacks Taehyung with kisses and licks all over Taehyung’s victimized face as if a dog that has just reunited with its long-lost owner while furiously hugging and squishing the breath out of his wife. In fact, Taehyung's face is practically dripping with buckets of Jungkook's saliva now, a testament of pure excitement and craving from Jungkook who has been severely-deprived of his wife’s company.

“Let me take a look! Wow, you are so fit now - I did the right thing sending you to the army!” screams Jungkook in pure bliss, his eyes gleaming brightly with admiration and lust as he starts to randomly grab and feel up Taehyung's currently well-built body.

Horny Kook will always be horny Kook after all.

“Oi! Calm down and stop being a pervert!” Taehyung manages to reprimand his husband in the chaos.

At this moment the previously asleep puppy in the room springs awake from the noise as it starts to bark loudly at the sight of the writhing stranger that is Taehyung.

“I can’t calm down! I have missed you so much! Let’s do it now! Let me love you properly this time!” Jungkook screams and starts tugging at Taehyung’s shirt.

Oh no, not this “let me love you properly” shit again. Everytime Jungkook says this it means that Taehyung’s ass is going to be spent.

“Now? Right now?! Don't you have other things to say to me now that we are finally reunited in 3 months?!”

Oh right. It’s supposed to be a romantic and heartfelt reunion when they both hug each other and cry a little and hypothetically Jungkook should say something like “I’m proud of you Taehyung you did great” while Taehyung should hypothetically say something like “I’m so touched about your letters thank you so much for being my pillar of support Kook” but nah, not when your husband is horny mafia boss Jungkook.
“Can we fuck first and talk later? I’ve been waiting for months and I’m barely surviving please save and understand me wifey!”

Upon hearing that, Taehyung stuns for a moment.

5 seconds of silence as Taehyung ponders the severity of the situation before conceding with a nod. Sounds about valid. It has been 3 long months apart and Taehyung can still remember how desperately he had craved for sex 24/7 when he himself was a budding young adult in his early 20s. Jungkook is a man with needs after all. Besides, if they wait any longer both their dicks could stand a chance of withering prematurely so it's best to just do the deed now before it's too late.

“Okay fine let’s fuck but can we at least remove the pup first?”

Pup? What pup?

Oh, Yeontan.

“Right,” Jungkook speaks upon realization, climbs away from Taehyung, grabs onto Yeontan who is barking curiously and places him (yeontan’s gender isn’t confirmed yet in reality but I’ll just assume it’s a male first so I won’t need to refer to the puppy with “it” all the time) outside in the living room with his breakfast.

“Wait here alright Tannie, we are going to do some adult things now and you can’t watch until you’re older. See you later~” Jungkook says before closing the door shut for Yeontan’s own good.

In response, Yeontan replies with the most innocent little bark ever before burying his face into his breakfast bowl, totally unaware of what his human owners are going to do.

***

As usual it starts with Jungkook fucking Taehyung.
After a very rushed foreplay, the 20-year-old husband presses his wife down into the sheets, mounts on top of him and swiftly enters his wife in missionary position before proceeding to rock his hips skilfully but at a painfully slow pace of a 9-million-year-old snail.

Taehyung furrows his eyebrows and groans a little at the penetration of a certain majestic jungcock. He adjusts a little and waits for cock-drilling to happen.

However, what follows next is 2 minutes of awkward silence. In fact, the pace Jungkook is entering at is so ridiculously slow with an approximate dicking rate of 0.000276mm/min such that Taehyung starts having a delusion that he is in a slow-mo sports broadcast replay and it's starting to majorly piss him off because minutes have past and the whole cock isn't even stuffed in his butt yet.

This isn't sweet vanilla sex anymore, this is literally sloth sex they are having right now.

“What is wrong with you. Move faster,” Taehyung can't take it anymore and commands in a rather disapproving tone.

“No. I have decided to be a gentleman from now onwards no matter what happens,” Jungkook says with stubborn perseverance yet at this moment his face is already fully red from trying to keep himself from pounding into the tight hole that hasn't been used in a while. Urghhh….that tight hole….that tight butt…..urghhhhhh so irresistable…..urghhh…. 

“That’s nice to hear but can you just at least fuck me at a normal pace?”

“No. You might get hurt and I’m scared that I’ll start losing my mind again.”

“Come on just move faster. If not we’re going to take forever to nut and I honestly can't feel anything now that you're moving so slowly.”

“No, I have promised myself that I will treat you delicately with care for the rest of my life to love and to hold and to never ---”

Taehyung loses it.
“JUST FUCK ME ALREADY! I'M A GROWN ASS MAN NOT A PRINCESS!”

“NO I REFUSE! I, JEON JUNG KOOK, HAD ALREADY SWORN TO THE HEAVENS TO NEVER HURT YOU AGAIN!”

In this instant, Taehyung has his eyes rolling 180 degrees to the back of his head as he facepalms innately 29330303091 times. Jungcock is only being pushed around ~4cm into his twitching ass at this moment and it already feels like an eternity has passed.

*God save me,* Taehyung thinks to himself as the sloth sex continues by will of Jungkook.

A few hours later, both Taehyung and Jungkook are found sitting nakedly in front of a computer googling “how to have rough sex in a gentle way”.

Two hours ago they have completed the most boring sex they could ever have experienced and derived to a consensus that the sloth sex they were having was possibly one of the worst things they could have ever done but otherwise didn’t know how to resolve it. How to be gentle but have thrilling sex as well? How to balance things out safely? Jungkook knows that he is capable of going all out completely out of control during sex and that is the reason why he didn't trust himself to not hurt Taehyung earlier on. If he accidentally went too hard on Taehyung and hurt him again like what he did in the army, there might be no way to redeem himself after that.

In face of this issue, Jungkook had of course, called his saviour Namjoon to enquire about this to which Namjoon left a five worded advice being “when in doubt ask google” but otherwise didn’t bother to comment further. He was packing for his impromptu vacation with Jin who is also having his week-long holiday break now and honestly Namjoon is officially so done with Jungkook and his cock problems. It’s time Jungkook learns to deal with such issues himself so after Namjoon threw the responsibility to an online search engine and hung up the phone, Jungkook had no choice but to take to the internet and so here they are now, looking with furrowed eyebrows through an online article regarding the usage of “safe words”.

"Subs have the most power, even more power than the dom" - says the confusing online article classified under the tag "education".

Took them another hour to process and grapple with the concept of borderline consent.

“So that means if I choose a safe word and says it during sex you have to stop immediately but if I
don’t say that safe word you can continue to go as hard as you wish? Even if I say stop?” Taehyung asks again to confirm.

“Yeap I think so. Something like that.”

“So stop doesn’t equate stop but the safe word equates stop?”

“Yes.”

Taehyung finally hits his eureka moment and flashes a grin.

“Fuck! This is actually genius! Let’s try it now. My safe word is....erm....Gucci.”

5 seconds of silence.

“Sure you want to do this? You trust me?”

“Yes I trust you.”

“You trust me but I don’t trust myself.”

Taehyung almost rolls his eyes again.

“Just do it! Don’t you dare hold back at all unless I say Gucci!”

Jungkook stuns for a moment upon hearing Taehyung’s decisive statement. The way Taehyung tells him spontaneously and desperately not to hold back literally sends waves of excitement into his dick so Jungkook picks Taehyung up and without warning starts to use his wife as he wishes for the next hour, fully relishing in the loud moans and raw screams from his beloved spouse. In fact, the subsequent love-making is as crazy and rough as it can get. One moment Jungkook is gripping onto Taehyung’s hips fucking Taehyung brutally against the wall despite his whiny screams and the next moment he is choking Taehyung into subspace to which Taehyung incidentally experiences the most intense orgasm he had ever experienced due to the erotic asphyxiation. There’s also a calming
romantic 6 9 conducted some time in the midst of their rough fucking to recharge on neurotransmitters. After that, they promptly resume to the standard hardcore bed-post banging with Taehyung's favourite death metal song playing as the background music before finally nutting off their fifth climax as they collectively collapse on the bed panting heavily in sweaty satisfaction.

Has the sex ended?

Seems so but at this moment the high-as-fly Jungkook suddenly says something life-changing.

“Taehyung, it's your turn to fuck me now. My safe word is seagull,” Jungkook says decisively.

“Okay sure….wait….what?!?”

Taehyung is instantly mind blown into outer space. He can't believe the words coming out of Jungkook's mouth.

Did Jungkook just said "fuck me"?

“Yes, fuck me. Isn't it your dream to do so? I'm ready and I'll let you try once first.”

Jungkook is ready and is actually feeling curious how it would feel like to bottom for once but Taehyung isn’t feeling ready yet. At all.

“You serious?!?”

“For the last time, yes I'm serious.”

Well, Taehyung has always thought that he would be feeling euphoric the moment Jungkook consents to the switch but for some reason he is feeling more terrified and alarmed than excited now.

“But you're not even 21 yet right?”
Upon hearing that question, Jungkook has that facial expression teenagers have when they sneak into an R21 movie and got exposed but otherwise switches to a deadpan face in two seconds.

“Oh come on Taehyung, I'm turning 21 in 3 months plus the legal age for sex is 16 not 21 and it won’t make a difference right? I'm already fucking you on a regular basis so stop treating me like an innocent child.”

“But but but ---”

“If you don't do it today I can't guarantee when I'll agree to it again.”

Oh shit, what if Jungkook never says yes again. This will mean that Taehyung can never have the chance to top Jungkook for the rest of his life again. Ever.

“Argh. Fine I'll do it. Now lie on your back.”

***

Taehyung is panting heavily.

Jungkook and him are currently in the same missionary position as they were in a few hours ago but this time their roles have switched.

The 28-year-old is currently on top grasping onto his own dick with a hand that for some reason can’t stop shaking. He pokes his dick at Jungkook's lubricated entrance.

“Gosh I'm scared, tell me if it hurts,” Taehyung says with a trembling tone.

“Yes wifey. Don't worry about it,” Jungkook soothes Taehyung slightly seeing how anxious Taehyung is. Honestly Jungkook is slightly amused but also touched because of Taehyung’s unexpected nervousness. Taehyung has always talked about how much he wanted to “own Jungkook’s ass” but when it is really happening Taehyung becomes all soft and gentle and Jungkook finds the contrast particularly endearing.
On the other hand, Taehyung is low-key freaking out because yes it has always been his fantasy to top and dominate his son-turned-husband Jungkook but now that he is actually going to do it it just feels so wrong.

Jungkook has been a child to him after all. Taehyung doesn't mind being fucked but the fact that he has been Jungkook’s adoptive dad for some 8 years before just makes him unable to fathom the concept of fucking his ex-son even though Jungkook isn’t his son anymore but a partner in marriage.

To him, Jungkook will always be the one he wants to protect till he dies. Sex aside, this protectiveness applies to all other aspects in life as well. In fact Taehyung had saved Jungkook a total of 4 times in the past - first when he took the 7-year-old Jungkook in after he fainted on the streets, second when Jungkook was almost attacked by a paedophile at the old village field, third when Jungkook almost shot himself in the heat of the moment during their wedding ceremony and lastly when he took a bullet for Jungkook during the Seo Joon kidnapping incident.

Taehyung is willing to die for Jungkook and he will never want to hurt or break him. Since Taehyung experienced a very painful encounter on his first time as a bottom in the wedding night few months ago, he somehow can’t stop rid the idea that first times are bound to hurt a lot and he don’t want Jungkook to feel miserable. Besides, Taehyung isn't particularly interested in guys’ buttholes to begin with and has always wanted to try topping Jungkook just for the sake of being in control in the relationship so for a long time he just stares at his own cock blankly thinking about life choices and whether he really wants to deflower Jungkook or not.

Jungkook sees that Taehyung is spacing out in his own world again. At this moment, the mafia boss is extremely curious how it would feel like to be fucked and couldn’t wait any longer so without warning, he grips onto Taehyung’s dick and inserts it into his own hole as if he's plugging into a power socket.

In this instant Taehyung gets a shock and tries to shift away but Jungkook just grabs onto Taehyung by the hips firmly and start to fuck himself on Taehyung, or rather fuck Taehyung into him.

“….mmmmm…..doesn’t feel too bad….“ Jungkook widens his eyes in awe and tenses up slightly at the new sensation upon penetration but after awhile closes his eyes and relaxes. He has secretly prepared himself yesterday with his fingers so he isn’t feeling too much pain and instead is starting to enjoy it.

On the other hand, Taehyung is beyond shaken to his core. He widens his eyes in horror at the scene in front of him: his most beloved husband fucking himself beneath him on his own dick with a moaning slut face just WHAT THE FAAAAARRRRRRKKKK ---
“Wait Kook wait a second ---”

Too late.

Within the next second Jungkook decides he likes the sensation so he grips onto Taehyung and fucks Taehyung roughly into himself at a rapid pace using Taehyung as his wishes.

Taehyung gets the biggest shock of his life.

“Ah I have sinned!” cries Taehyung in shocking guilt as he watches his own cock disappear and reappear and disappear again repeatedly inside Jungkook’s hole as Jungkook literally grabs onto Taehyung’s hips roughly and fucks his wife who seems to have frozen in place rapidly into himself.

After awhile, Jungkook even flips Taehyung beneath him, presses Taehyung down so he can’t move away and sits all the way down onto Taehyung’s dick and starts riding a low-key sobbing Taehyung furiously.

“Woah…..mmmm….feels good…..” Jungkook keeps groaning with his mouth half-ajar as he rams his prostate onto Taehyung’s cock and within seconds Taehyung starts to moan sinfully in pleasure as well. Taehyung is beyond embarrassed because fuck, the way Jungkook is milking him feels so goddamn good. At this instant, Taehyung decides to just enjoy the sex first and think later so he finally relaxes and just lies down allowing Jungkook to ride him.

2 minutes of intense fucking with Jungkook bobbing up and down from different angles before Taehyung starts to allow himself to move his hips. He grabs onto Jungkook’s hips and slams in his thrusts at a forceful rate causing Jungkook to moan loudly as he collapses his torso onto a furiously panting Taehyung.

They kiss passionately as they fuck and through the process Taehyung keeps picking up pace while growling like a beast. For some reason, he really wants to impress Jungkook like goddamit his previous track record with women isn’t a lost myth and he takes pride in his skills.

“Ahhhhh…..mmmmmm….wuaahhh…” Jungkook moans indecently and licks his lips with shut eyes causing Taehyung to get all riled up and excited.
Currently the whole bed is shaking vigorously and 3 minutes later Jungkook and Taehyung finally starts to climax and guess what Jungkook screams this time? It’s not Taehyung, it’s not wifey, it’s…..

“DADDDDDYYYY!” Jungkook howls before ejaculating his load onto Taehyung’s stomach while arching his back slutty to which Taehyung chokes on his own saliva at the scene but before he can properly react Jungkook is riding him again.

Taehyung can’t do it anymore after Jungkook calls him daddy. He shouts his safe word causing the sex to abruptly stop. He then pushes Jungkook off him and lies down in trauma like a dead fish clutching onto his dick before emerging awake again only to demand for Jungkook to fuck him in an attempt to quell his guilt. Jungkook, of course, has no choice but to fuck Taehyung another three more rounds happily before they finally end their 8-hour-long reunion sex marathon.

“I think I’ll just let you top me forever. It’s better this way,” Taehyung says half asleep in Jungkook’s embrace.

“Sure?”

“Definitely.”

“Okay no worries, just leave the fucking to me.”

They both chuckle a little. 5 minutes of silence.

“Kook, is there panda express in the fridge?”

“Yes.”

“Perfect.”

***

In the evening after waking up from his nap, the crying Taehyung who can’t seem to come to terms
with the fact that he has fucked Jungkook decides to drag his husband to a local Taoist temple to pray for atonement.

“Deities please forgive Jungkook and me for our sins...we have fucked indecently yesterday and we want to beg for forgiveness....he is still young and ignorant and it all happened when we aren’t clear in the mind ---" Taehyung begs while kneeling on his knees in front of a massive tiger deity statue before turning his head to face a nonchalant-looking Jungkook: "Kook! don’t just stand there! Come kneel here beside me!” There are many gods in this temple and currently Taehyung is going around all the statues paying respect and repeating the same goddamn repentance speech in an attempt to feel better.

The amused Jungkook walks over as commanded and kneels beside Taehyung who is currently focusing on his prayers with his eyes shut.

Jungkook tilts over and whispers.

“So…..you’re not going to want to top me anymore? It kind of feels good though. You were so daddy during those moments,” Jungkook says with a smirk.

Upon hearing that Taehyung innately flips a table in distress.

“Hell no Kook! You are not allowed to think about being fucked again or else I am sending you here to become a monk! Have some decency!” Taehyung warns.

“Okay, anything you say….daddy.”

“Don't fucking call me a daddy ever again you idiot!”

“Oops,” Jungkook says cheekily. Why is Taehyung so goddamn adorable. In this instant, Jungkook has this urge to shower all his love onto his wife who obviously cares so much about him so he leans in to deliver Taehyung a long kiss on the forehead.

“Jokes aside, thanks for giving me a second chance Taehyung, even after what happened in the army. I have hurt you so much but you always want to protect me. Sometimes I wonder what I
have done in my past life to deserve an angel like you. You’re the most amazing person I can ever ask for to be in my life. I love you so much.”

Upon hearing that Taehyung stuns for a moment and flushes pink. Jungkook always has the tendency to suddenly blurt out something mushy at random moments but Taehyung isn’t complaining is he?

“Damn why the sudden heartfelt words now. Well, I don’t really like saying things like that but I do love you too Kook and I loved the letters as well, all 82 of them though I have to confess I lied in one of my replies. If I could choose between cookies and you - it will always be you,” Taehyung replies with a awkward emotionless face and for some reason that cheesy statement causes Jungkook to feel some wetness in his eyes.

That night after the temple visit, Jungkook and Taehyung go out to have their first candlelight dinner before returning home for a slow dance to jazz music.

Yeontan has also become low-key obsessed with Taehyung because as mentioned before, Taehyung is universally beautiful. The little puppy proceeds to follow the wife shamelessly everywhere while ignoring Jungkook altogether so at night when all three of them lie in bed, Yeontan and Jungkook are literally snuggling up Taehyung as they fight hard for the man’s attention.

“Taehyung is my wife!” says Jungkook.

“Woof!” barks Yeontan.

“No he isn’t! Taehyung is MY wife!” says Jungkook.

“Woof!” barks Yeontan louder and so the million-year-fight between the puppy and the bunny begins.

What a happy family of three isn’t it?
“Shut up you two and go to sleep,” after some time, Taehyung speaks with a deadpan face.

Oops, Taehyung is starting to get annoyed. Both yeontan and Jungkook instantly stops fighting.

“Yes wifey. Goodnight~”

“Nights.”

“Love you~”

“Love you too.”

"Woof~"

“If you can love someone with your whole heart, even one person, then there's salvation in life.” - Haruki Murakami, 1Q84

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don't have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~

Connect with me on twitter where I post updates, polls, short stories, AU's and other related content: @hidden__tracks (two underscores)

Also, you can buy me a cup of coffee to motivate me in writing and to show support for my stories here: hiddentracks@ko-fi (thank you <3)
In the 6 remaining days of holiday, the mildly dysfunctional couple attempts to do what is classified as “normal couple activities” together.

“Love takes off masks that we fear we cannot live without and know we cannot live within.” - James Baldwin

***

Location: Various Places

Date: 2nd - 8th June 2018

Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 10 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

Day 1: Sinful Saturday Screenings

Saturday’s schedule is a movie marathon at the town’s cinema. It is agreed that they will just buy one ticket each into the screening of “Deadpool 2” before smuggling into the screening of other movies during the end credit scenes because as full-time law perpetrators they feel absolutely obliged to carry on with the tradition of committing petty crimes like this. It is also a point to note that Deadpool is Taehyung’s favourite superhero so after the clock strikes 12, the wife just can’t stop nagging like a broken cassette repeatedly reminding the husband that they need to leave the house in 15 minutes because Taehyung absolutely doesn’t want to be late for his favourite film of the year.
On the other hand, his husband Jungkook decides to dress casually for the date instead of putting on the tuxedos he usually wear to work and in response to that Taehyung seems to be very happy because Jungkook is looking extra boyfriend-material today.

“You look really handsome in casuals Kook. It makes you look younger too and I like it very much but shall we go now? Don’t want to be late,” Taehyung throws in a very rushed compliment before nagging again to which Jungkook experiences an explosion of butterflies in his groin area because Taehyung rarely compliments him on his appearance. The husband stuns for a moment processing Taehyung’s words and almost fucks the wife right there and then but too bad, they have a movie to catch in less than an hour so horny Kook got to keep it down and drive to their destination first.

When the couple along with the bodyguards other wise known as the dark knights collectively arrive at the cinema with Yeontan who they have to smuggle in with an opaque shopping bag, they realize to their surprise that the movie theatre is ridiculously vacant and such emptiness doesn't usually happen on weekends for popular films like this but it’s all good because the lack of people implies that sex can happen so within 30 minutes into “Deadpool 2”, Jungkook who obviously is a horny bastard 24/7 starts to creepily rub circles with his finger on Taehyung’s thigh.

“Hey baby…” Jungkook tips over to his left and whispers into Taehyung’s ear with a low and seductive voice as his hand slide up from Taehyung’s mid-thigh towards his crotch area. Well, the husband can’t really control his cock sometimes and no matter how hard he tries to curb his sexual urges his cock just gets harder and that is just the way he is. His member has been hard ever since Taehyung praised him as handsome awhile ago at home and remains hard as he is driving the family here and now that Taehyung is unknowingly licking his lips while watching a movie trying to subtly invite Jungkook in, Jungkook finally finds it an impossible task to restrain his impulses anymore.

On the other hand, Taehyung who is currently engrossed in the movie absentmindedly turns his head to face Kook only to see a ferocious bunny looking down at him as if a predator would of its prey.

Oh shit. This iconic look that Jungkook is giving him right now suggests that there is a 2000% chance of sex happening in the next 5 minutes. Taehyung flips out but otherwise isn’t surprised because he is so used to this already.

“Wait Kook what the fuck! Are you serious how in the fuck are you horny right now ---”

Too late to say anything now, Taehyung. Too late. Jungkook’s cock has already been provoked and there is no running away ----

Violent caressing occurs.
“Oh shit not again,” a fair distance away one of the dark knights whose name we didn't know is Jihoon speaks with a desolate tone to his colleague whose name we didn't know is Kang Daniel. The group of dark knights on duty are currently seated three rows behind Taehyung and Jungkook and they can literally see everything that is happening not that Jungkook cares anyway. In this moment Jungkook is already holding Taehyung’s head in place forcefully french-kissing the wife who looks partly in passion but also partly confused and frustrated trying to sneak peeks at the ongoing film because he wants to know what’s going to happen to his idol Deadpool.

“Just watch the movie and ignore them,” replies Kang Daniel, his lips pressed into a thin line.

Jihoon shrugs.

“Been doing that for ages. I mean I’m not even surprised anymore and honestly I really feel for Taehyung sometimes,” Jihoon says truthfully and both sighs. Ever since Taehyung and Jungkook’s wedding day, the group of dark knights have already been witnessing all these from afar and just like Namjoon and Taehyung, they are officially so done with Jungkook and his uncontrollable cock problems. Although they do not actually see the sex happening most of the time as they are guarding outside closed doors they are still able to hear a good part of it. Oh well, guess they’ll just have to act like they aren’t witnessing anything explicit and just focus on the movie itself. Hopefully Taehyung doesn’t moan too loudly like how he does at home.

*15 minutes later*

“Ahhhh...Kook….! Not so hard I’m trying not to….mmmmm….trying not to scream….” Taehyung whines helplessly in between rigged breaths as Jungkook presses him down and rams into him savagely from behind at a rapid pace sucking onto his erogenous spot that is his ears. They are currently on the ground below the seats engaging in vigorous adult activities to which muffled moans can be heard every now and then. Because they are on the ground away from sight, nobody is actually aware about what is happening except for the dark knights who are sitting behind the couple at the moment.

Oh yes. What about their little puppy Yeontan? Well, Yeontan is currently sitting on one of the seats above as he silently watches the movie as if nothing is happening. It is unknown what the puppy is currently thinking.

“Sorry wifey, is this new pace okay for you?” Jungkook slows down his thrusts to a more manageable pace before asking with concern.
“Yeap this is better...ahhhh……”

20 seconds of grunting.

“You’re so hot wifey…your ass is always so tight hmmm?”

“Mmmmmm yes……use my tight hole…..pound me with your lovestick mmmmm…..”

2 minutes of muffled groaning and gasping and panting and smooching and occasionally some dirty talk but after a while Taehyung snaps out of his trance when he hears movement from people in the cinema. He enters into panic mode from the fear of being caught.

“Faster Kook, before anyone sees us like this…” Taehyung rushes Jungkook to quicken and finish up as soon as possible because he would probably die of shame if anyone from the public finds him in this state.

Upon hearing the word “quick”, Jungkook suddenly levels up like a pokemon and accelerates his hip thrusting motion, banging his cock mercilessly into Taehyung’s soft hole with a crazy amount of force sending Taehyung instantly into sensory shock from both the pain and pleasure shooting up his spine.

“Ahhhh!!!!! KOOK! At least give me some adjustment time!!!!!”

Copy and paste this sex scene into the next few movies they eventually sneak in.

By the time Jungkook and Taehyung exit the cinema it is already night time. They have successfully sneaked into a total of three other movies and had sex for a total of 9 times and in this current moment Taehyung’s back is about to crumple not to mention the fact that he is limping rather pitifully with a series of carpet burns incurred on his knees and elbows. Jungkook gently rubs and massages Taehyung’s lower back and helps the exhausted wife who is currently quietly sulking with the strenuous task of walking.

“Am I being too rough again? Please don’t ignore me like this wifey~”
Oh well, since Taehyung likes it rough and spontaneous, the sex and the exhaustion after that don’t really bother him and he has most certainly enjoyed himself but what really makes Taehyung upset is the fact that Jungkook keeps choosing the MOST CRUCIAL MOMENTS IN THE FILM TO FUCK HIM. Now that Taehyung thinks about it he can’t actually remember the main progress of the plot for all the movies he had just watched because Jungkook keeps jumping onto him when the plot twists are about to come.

“Why must you fuck me during the fight scenes? Or when the identity of the murderer is about to be revealed? Or when the girl is about to bitch slap the boy? Just why?!” Taehyung scolds.

At this moment, Yeontan also tugs his head out of the black shopping bag that Taehyung has slung over his shoulder and climbs over onto Taehyung’s head.

“Woof woof!” Yeontan scolds.

Bodyguards follow behind them on the travelator back to their mansion listening to the three-way conversation with straight faces, their lips pressed into a thin line. Tension fills the air.

Jungkook blushes and scratches his head.

“Sorry wifey, but the way you lick your lips when you’re excited during the movies is just too hot….and Yeontan go inside your bag don’t interrupt your papa ---”

“What?! I licked my lips just now?!” Taehyung is beyond shook. He isn’t sure whether he is more mindblown of the fact that he licks his lips habitually without knowing it himself or the fact that Jungkook has fucked him 9 times in the goddamn cinema for this one simple action.

“Yes I swear to god. Your tongue always comes out when you’re excited and it somehow makes me hard every single time and I’m sure you know that when I’m hard it’s already the point of no return…” Jungkook explains with an innocent pouty bunny face looking at Taehyung as if Taehyung is the main culprit of the crime he has just committed. Taehyung stuns for a few seconds before his face darkens.

“YOU FAAAAARRRRKKKKKKING SANDWICHHHHHHHHH!!!! NEVER EVER FUCK ME AGAIN WHEN THE CLIMAX OF THE MOVIE IS COMING!!!!”
Day 2: Shopping Sunday with Sugar-daddy

Sunday is reserved solely for shopping. Jungkook knows how Taehyung is easily corrupted by capitalism hence the plan to bring him out to buy all them luxury goods to his heart’s content. Bringing Taehyung out on shopping trips is also going to greatly increase his chances of getting into Taehyung’s pants so although Jungkook hates shopping he will still willingly do it for the sex but of course, besides the obvious sexual benefits Jungkook’s main reason of shopping with Taehyung is to spoil his wife like he has never gotten to do in the past. What’s the use of being a billionaire when you’re not spending it on the ones you love right?

So there Jungkook and Taehyung are, stuck inside a Gucci outlet for 2 hours and counting. Taehyung who is a massive Gucci fan is literally salivating at anything he sees in the shop and in the process millions of heart shapes pour out from his eyes incessantly as he picks up and throws the 3920238303027th item from the shelf into the cart. Yesterday’s night massage by Jungkook has left many of his muscles feeling relaxed so Taehyung isn’t having much of a problem with moving today. In fact the 28-year-old man is currently running around the store like a kid trying to swallow the entire candy shop.

“This is too beautiful…..too goddamn beautiful…..” Taehyung speaks in a shaky voice and is literally on the verge of tears looking at them branded goods piling up like a mountain in his purchase trolley.

Jungkook cuts in abruptly.

“Wifey, no offence but may I just ask why do you need five wallets? Can’t we get just one first,” Jungkook complains slightly trying to keep the situation under control but the next moment Taehyung comes up to Jungkook and plants a soft kiss on his cheeks.

“Please! All of them are so pretty I want all of them! All five wallets please I can suck you in the dressing room if you wanna!!!” Taehyung says in a desperate and aggressive tone with a tinge of seductiveness.

5 seconds of silence as Jungkook’s ears turn completely red at the sight of the spontaneous Taehyung before him as he takes in a deep deep breath. This is one of the rare moments Taehyung initiates sex so Jungkook’s heart is currently blossoming so intensely it can explode any moment.

In happiness and resolution, Jungkook turns around to face the cashier at the counter: “Missus, wrap the entire store up for me please.”
After finally exiting Gucci, Taehyung also visits several other department stores as well as luxury brands like Saint Laurent, Chanel, Obey and sports shops such as Puma, Nike and Adidas buying whatever he can wear from head to the toe.

He then goes on to buy absolutely random things like golden chopsticks, fake grass, all the girl group albums and British drama DVDs, unicorn-flavoured bread, a XL bag of cookies, three new radios, a new Ferrari and several mini clothing and socks for Yeontan.

After the shopping finally ends at 8pm, Taehyung and Jungkook proceeds to dine at a world-class restaurant with a perfect view to which Taehyung tries on his new Gucci sunglasses for the first time looking all slick and chic.

Jungkook looks mildly worried and asks in concern.

“Baby, it’s night time now. Can you even see anything wearing those?”

Upon hearing that Taehyung is beyond flabbergasted. No one simply questions his fashion sense like this.

“Kook, I think it is necessary for me to dispel the myth that sunglasses can only be worn when the sun is up. Do you know that the moon has UV rays as well? Such destructive moon rays can hurt my eyes too alright so stop being ignorant and google your shit before you make hurtful comments like that!”

Upon hearing that, Jungkook presses his lips into a thin line and shakes his head. He slowly places his fork and spoon down and switches into dom mode. Jungkook’s dom mode only comes out when absolutely necessary such as the current moment when Taehyung is getting out of hand.

“Baby, you have two options now. Number 1: me signing you up for basic science lessons because I think you need it very badly. Number 2: getting spanked for spending my money absentmindedly today like a spoilt brat and still being all sassy and stubborn like this. Hmmm baby? Which one you’ll choose?”
Shit, not strict bunny Kook again.

Taehyung's ass is quaking.

“Can I….can I….choose the science lesson?”

“Nah, get your ass ready for some whipping tonight.”

Upon hearing that, Taehyung loses his appetite and majorly flips outs. Whipping and anything bdsm that Jungkook has tried on him previously in the past when they are experimenting actually hurts like a goddamn motherfucker.

“No! Please Kookie I seriously won't buy anything redundant anymore in the future just don't hit me again please----”

Jungkook chuckles. Taehyung is so dramatic all the time and it’s so cute.

“Just kidding wifey, I will never hit you again. Just don’t spend all my money away alright? It's a shopping spree but I think it's a little too much when you bought the fake grass and a goldfish tank when we don't even have goldfishes at home.”

Upon hearing that, Taehyung heaves a massive sigh of relief. Holy shit, his ass is saved today.

“You scared me Kook. Sorry, I will be more careful next time.”

“Don’t mention it. It was my intention to let you spend any way you wanted but thank you for understanding.”

“No, thank you Kook,” Taehyung speaks, his grateful eyes gleaming beneath his sunglasses.

Jungkook’s eyes dilate. He reaches over, takes off Taehyung’s sunglasses and without further talk, they kiss passionately for five long minutes in the breezy night wind.
“Awww this is actually so sweet. Wish someone would kiss me like this someday too but damn we’re so busy there’s no time to date,” a fair distance away Jihoon the dark knight whines a little and pouts.

5 seconds of silence.

“Erm….erm…..erm….actually I do not mind kissing you at all,” confesses Kang Daniel awkwardly to which Jihoon looks up at him in shock.

In this moment when their eyes meet the drama OST “You Are My Everything” starts playing in the background inside the restaurant.

A few seconds later a total of four people kiss passionately in pairs under the clear moon rays.

What a romantic Sunday night indeed.

**Day 3: Magical Monday Melon Moments**

Monday’s schedule is a trip to the amusement park namely South Korea’s Lotte World. Jungkook remembers clearly how Taehyung had once brought him to the amusement park on his birthday when he was still a kid and as a result the thought of amusement parks always leave Jungkook smiling boyishly.

Finally, he gets to have a chance to bring Taehyung to one of the best amusement parks in Korea and Jungkook is especially proud of this moment.

On the other hand, Taehyung seems to be focused on other things. Young and energetic high school girls wearing short skirts and high socks are everywhere in the area and Taehyung who hasn’t seen anything female other than flat-chested size zeros or old menopausal women in about 2920483030 years is practically salivating from the moon and back. Taehyung is born straight after all and some things he just can’t change especially when curvy young women squeeze up against him in crowded regions of the amusement park saying “Oh! Sorry oppa!” Taehyung’s eyes will almost always be popping out from his sockets though he tries to keep it down because he doesn’t want Jungkook to feel hurt.
Jungkook starts noticing where Taehyung’s eyes are always following and chuckles.

“Hey wifey, are you staring at the girls’ chest?”

Taehyung stuns into outer space because he thought that he has been hiding his creepy glances pretty well but decides to play it cool and composed.

“What? Obviously no, just looking at how funny that coffee stain is on her shirt.”

Some 2 minutes later Jungkook asks again.

“Hey wifey, are you staring at the girls’ butt?”

Taehyung gulps and starts sweating but keeps up with the lie.

“Nah, just wondering how the skirts of high school uniforms these days be looking so delicio-
coughs* professionally well-designed.”

5 seconds of silence.

“Actually wifey, you can just tell me if you are looking at women. It’s normal to look since you are born straight right? I probably won’t understand the appeal of women’s boobs but oh well you can always be open about it to me. Promise I won’t get angry,” Jungkook speaks with a heart-aching bittersweet smile to which Taehyung almost bursts out crying from how touched he feels.

Taehyung really loves women. Ever since the moment he is born he has already started playing around with the nurses-in-charge at the hospital crying 24/7 for their attention though he probably can’t remember it. He will probably still secretly fantasize about them big fluffy chest till the day he dies but the fact that Jungkook is being so understanding of his natural impulses instead of being jealous even though he is already his spouse just makes Taehyung feels so loved and if so, just a teeny bit guilty.

“Really? You really allow me to look at them? You really accept this hetero side of me?”
Jungkook sighs.

“Yes I do. After all the only reason why you’re mine is because of the fact that I’ve kidnapped you in the past. Just don’t hide anything from me ever again alright? Feel free to look to your heart’s contents but just know that you are allowed to look only. No touching or flirting with them okay?”

Upon hearing that, Taehyung is over the moon and he is beyond touched. Tears spring into his eyes.

“Yes of course I won’t hit them up since I’m already yours anyway since you don’t want me to hide anything from you then I’ll be honest. Frankly speaking I’ve been staring at that girl over there for quite awhile yo Kook where you looking focus FOCUS see where my finger is pointing? See that girl with the striped tee over there? She is ART. Even though she is short but DID YOU SEE THAT RACK SO BASICALLY ALL STRAIGHT MEN IN THE WORLD INCLUDING MYSELF WOULD GO CRAZY OVER THOSE MELONS ---”

In that moment Jungkook starts regretting life decisions and drags Taehyung away to a rollercoaster.

Maybe if Taehyung flips upside down sideways and up again for a few times he would forget about them melons for the time being.

**Day 4: Thoughtful Tuesday Times**

Day 4’s schedule is a picnic with the Jimin and Hoseok. Taehyung brings Yeontan along as well causing Jimin to instantly die from all that cuteness that is the little puppy he’s seeing for the first time.

“Awww~~~ he’s saooowwww cuteeeeee~~~” Jimin squeals and proceeds to hug the little puppy in his embrace. The four of them then proceed to have a great catch-up session at the park talking about BANGTAN and just how life is progressing in general for everybody. After the picnic and a dance session for Jungkook to reminisce his childhood, the four of them hit the karaoke room together and once again, Jimin’s singing is so perfect like an angel causing everyone to basically just push the mic to him.

“Baby, you know if we’re not gangsters you’ll probably become a singer. Your voice is so beautiful
I cannot find words to describe how wonderful you sound,” Hoseok says as he once again falls into an endless hole of passion for the mochi boy. There’s a saying that goes “once you jimin you can never jimout” and Hoseok feels this saying on every level possible.

Jimin smiles upon the compliment and turns around from the screen to face Hoseok.

“Well I think you’ll make a good dancer too.”

Upon hearing that conversation, Taehyung and Jungkook suddenly comes to a revelation. They imagine in their heads at this instant an alternate universe where Jimin is a renowned singer and Hoseok is a renowned dancer in the music industry. In that universe Jimin and Hoseok are stars.

How different would their lives be if say they didn’t grow up in the orphanage? How different would their lives be if somebody adopted them and gave them the resources to pursue their talents?

For instance, Taehyung has always wanted to become a pilot meeting girls of all shapes and sizes all over the world while Jungkook has always wanted to just open a cookie-selling franchise with the name “Kookielicious” and just sell cookies for the rest of his life.

These dreams that will never come true in this universe but is everything already too late?

Is all these dreams not worth pursuing anymore?

Well, only time will tell the answers to all these questions eventually.

**Day 5: Wild and Wet Wednesday**

On Wednesday, Jungkook flies Taehyung to a private island for some quiet fishing time. Nothing much, just the two of them sitting in a boat in the middle of a water body holding fishing rods as they silently wait for fishes dumb enough to come on hook. However, it turns out that fishes are not as dumb as they think they are so two hours into the session there’s still no movement from the sea.
“Wifey, should I row the boat somewhere deeper? Maybe there’s more fishes there?”

“Yeap okay.”

Rowing in the deep. Fishing in the deep.

Two hours pass by again.

“Wifey, should I row the boat deeper again?”

“Sure.”

Rowing in the deep. Fishing in the deep.

Two hours pass by again.

“Wifey should I row the boat --- oh shit,” Jungkook can’t even finish his sentence before rain starts pelting down onto them. Perfect, now they are stranded in the middle of the waters getting drowned not by the sea but by the rain without a single umbrella or sheltering material on board.

Taehyung who has been recuperating in meditation with his eyes closed finally opens his eyes. His facial muscles soften with love as he gazes upon the melancholic rain.

“What’s that classic movie again? The one in which the couple rowed the boat into the middle of a lake of swans and then it started raining like this?”

“Can’t remember for sure. Titanic?”

Upon hearing that Taehyung instantly gets triggered.

“No Kook are you an idiot. Titanic is the one when the couple jumps off a giant ship and one of
them dies.”

“Oh right.”

5 seconds of silence.

“This is so goddamn romantic isn’t it Kook? Like we’re in the movies.”

“Just how is this like the movies ---”

To heighten the mood, Taehyung then proceeds to play some classic love songs over the radio and continues to fish in the rain though by the end of the day both Jungkook and Taehyung don’t even manage to catch one single fish.

“What might be the reason….did the fishes in the sea all disappear at the same time or something….?” Jungkook asks himself thinking again and again the reason why even after he has reached the shore.

Oh my sweet darling Jungkook, will you ever realize that you’ve forgotten to hook baits onto the fishing rods? Also, the movie Taehyung is thinking of is “The Notebook”, in case you guys need to rewatch it again for educational purposes.

**Day 6: Thursday Talk Tonight**

On the last day of Taehyung’s holiday week, the couple decides to just rest at home and chill all day. After several rounds of breakfast sex, the couple washes up and sits in front of their own respective computers surfing the net. Jungkook is a cat fanatic so he keeps watching them cat videos whereas Taehyung is the gamer that can’t seem to stop playing overwatch. After a few moments, Taehyung finally decides to take a break from the gaming world and goes on the biggest black web search engine also known as DarkNet on his phone and due to the sudden strike of curiosity he types in “Taehyung and Jungkook” and presses enter. After all, Jungkook and him are legendary people in the underground world and though many people have already seen the couple before at the mafia ceremony or their wedding, most of them insignificant thugs that are not invited to these major events do not actually know how to mafia king and the mafia queen look like other than the fact that they are both extremely hot men so when Taehyung discovers a “taekook” tag in a site that is locked for mafia origins members’ use only with the url “mafiaoriginsfanfics.com”, all hell breaks loose.
“Kook! Come and see this shit oh my goodness I am dying!” Taehyung screams for Jungkook who has to pause his cat videos and come over to Taehyung who is currently dying of laughter on the bed.

“What’s going on wifey?” Jungkook asks while climbing onto the bed beside Taehyung.

“Okay wait. Just listen to me read this,” Taehyung speaks and clears his throat. He then holds up his phone which is now at a page of a particular Taekook fanfic and starts speaking in a low and seductive tone.

“You're so naughty aren't you? Mmm,” Jungkook whispers seductively biting onto Taehyung’s ear as he unzips Taehyung pants. He pulls down Taehyung’s pants and white underwear all the way down to his knees and without warning sends a teasing spank onto Taehyung’s naked bubbly ass ---” Taehyung has to stop reading till this point just to wheeze like a dying epileptic horse.

Upon hearing that, Jungkook widens his eyes, snatches over the phone and reads the next part aloud. He knows of the existence of fictions written about himself and Taehyung ever since their wedding day but has never read any.

“Taehyung whines a little at the spank and blushes slightly knowing that his naked ass is blatantly exposed in front of a stranger whose name he doesn't even know is called Jungkook. "Can't believe you even wore a white underwear? You're totally asking to be fucked," Jungkook says in a voice clouded with so much lust and desire. “I'm helping you with the drug so please stop humiliating me....and what's the matter with white underwears....” Taehyung retaliates weakly again with a pout and suddenly feels something poking ---” apparently Jungkook is unable to continue reading this anymore and just bursts out into a wheezing laughter like Taehyung.

Laughing for 5 minutes straight till they tear up as they take turns to read till the end of the oneshot fanfiction.

“Who’s the author wifey? It’s so bad but at least it made me laugh. I’ve never laughed so hard in my entire life.”

Taehyung checks the page that he has secretly bookmarked again.

“Hidden Tracks. Basic information says she’s female.”
“Ooh, since this page is locked for use of mafia origins’ members only, she’s probably a member of the female mafia army.”

“Yeap, probably all those that write about us on this site are in the mafia female army…..Hmmm...but what if the author is actually one of the house maids we have right here?”

“Holy shit no way!”

“I know right I would be shocked too.”

Both are silent for few seconds thinking whether it could be Auntie Maria or Lucy who had written these stories.

“Anyway are we the most popular couple on the site?” Jungkook breaks the silence to ask in curiosity.

Taehyung checks the tag list and sees that the “Chanbaek” tag comes out on top.

“Nah, Chanyeol and Baekhyun takes first place with the most amount of fanfiction written about them.”

Jungkook nods slightly.

“Valid. They have been married for so many years already after all. We just started.”

5 seconds of silence as they both stare at the ceiling thinking about god knows what.

“Anyway wifey, care to try on a white underwear tonight?”

“Oh FUCK OFF KOOK!”
Jokes aside, tonight is the last night they get to spend together. Taehyung and Jungkook both can’t sleep at all so they talk till it is late at night. They did not have sex because all Jungkook wants at the current moment is to hug Taehyung in his embrace.

“Can’t believe time passes so fast. I swear to god it almost feels like you’re released only yesterday. Can’t believe it’s time for you to leave again. I’m already missing you so much wifey,” Jungkook says choking back tears as he hugs onto Taehyung so tightly the man finds it hard to breathe. In fact the sheer thought of Taehyung leaving him is enough to generate an overwhelming despair in his own heart and that despair isn’t something that he can even begin to explain with words.

There is only one person he loves in the world and that is Taehyung.

“Kook I’m not leaving, it’s just three more months. You’ve survived it and you can do it again.”

Jungkook isn’t convinced and is still sad.

“I’ll still write you letters everyday like what I did in the past three months okay? Actually wifey I have a small request. Can you reply me everyday instead of just on some days? Even a dot is fine. I’m sorry that I’m so insecure and clingy but I love and worry about you so much it hurts me when I do not see a reply from you.”

Taehyung’s heart breaks into a million pieces hearing those words.

“I promise that I’ll pen a reply everyday this time and next time just tell me what you want okay? If you want me to reply more often you could just request it in your letters and don’t be sorry Kook. Don’t be sorry for loving me and don’t ever be sorry for who you are. Your clinginess is awesome alright? I actually love it so much and I love all of you for what you were and what you’ve become.”

Jungkook listens with a smile on his face as tears fall uncontrollably from his eyes onto Taehyung’s shirt. He isn’t sure if his tears is the result of being touched by Taehyung’s words or the result of sadness because Taehyung is leaving but he is sure in moments like this that he has made the right decision to love Taehyung deeply with all of himself.

"He’s not perfect. You aren’t either, and the two of you will never be perfect. But if he can make you laugh at least once, causes you to think twice, and if he admits to being human and making mistakes, hold onto him and give him the most you can. He isn’t going to quote poetry, he’s not thinking about
you every moment, but he will give you a part of him that he knows you could break. Don’t analyze. Smile when he makes you happy, yell when he makes you mad, and miss him when he’s not there. Love hard when there is love to be had. Because perfect guys don’t exist, but there’s always one guy that is perfect for you.” - Bob Marley

(Bob Marley - Is This Love)

I want to love you, and treat you right
I want to love you, every day and every night
We'll be together, with a roof right over our heads
We'll share the shelter, of my single bed
We'll share the same room, yeah! For Jah provide the bread
Is this love, is this love, is this love
Is this love that I'm feelin'?
Is this love, is this love, is this love
Is this love that I'm feelin'?
I want to know, want to know, want to know now
I got to know, got to know, got to know now
I, I'm willing and able
So I throw my cards on your table
I want to love you, I want to love and treat, love and treat you right
I want to love you every day and every night
We'll be together, yeah, with a roof right over our heads
We'll share the shelter, yeah, oh now of my single bed
We'll…

Twitter: @hidden__tracks (two underscores)
Chapter Summary

Namjoon and Jin's first time on the airplane.

"Science is not only a disciple of reason but, also, one of romance and passion." — Stephen Hawking

***

Location: Korea-bound Plane

Date and Time: 8th June 2018 4:23AM Korean Time

Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 10 months into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, approximately 2 years before marriage]

| Last Day of The Holiday Week |

***

We know how fruitful the Taehyung and Jungkook have spent their holiday week but what about the Namjin couple that went to Hawaii together for a week-long vacation?

Well, Namjoon and Jin are currently on a first-class private jet flying from Hawaii back to Korea. No one else is on board except for the pilots and a few stewardesses catered to serve the couple.

Namjoon and Jin have most certainly spent their vacation well taking photos eating good food enjoying the scenery and just relaxing. Similar to Taehyung and Jungkook, Jin and Namjoon have done various sorts of couple-bonding activities that normal couples would do together and have even started kissing and holding hands but for some reason these two grown men have yet to bond bodies albeit sleeping together in the same hotel room bed every single day. Part of the reason is because Namjoon has always been ultra-awkward around Jin. When Jin is close to him the 30-year-old bodyguard-turned-tier-1-commander would automatically evolve into a stuttering flustered stiff block of mess because goddammit, Jin sure is a handsome piece of eye candy with an exceptionally kind and adorkable personality and Namjoon sure does love him to pieces. In fact, he loves the boy so
much to the extent that he is afraid to hurt his little precious prince especially due to his past violent tendencies plus he isn’t exactly sure if this is the right moment to request for sex so he keeps his dick fantasies to himself during the entire trip out of respect for Jin hence the obvious delay. Imagine Namjoon lying next to Jin on the bed with his hands hanging creepily in mid-air contemplating whether to advance or not every single night when Jin is going to fall asleep. To fuck or not to fuck, that is the question. On the other hand, Jin, albeit already a grown 25-year-old man, is still a virgin due to his blank dating records so although he wants to do it with Namjoon he is also a teeny bit afraid and unsure since he isn’t a sexual person to begin with (more of a scientist/doctor) so he doesn’t talk about this sensitive topic at all hence the obvious delay.

As a result, sexual tension continues to rage between Namjoon and Jin as they sit side by side on the plane silently holding hands with their own headphones plugged in watching different movies on their respective built-in screens.

Namjoon whose ultimate kink is airplane sex is currently suffering acutely from heightened sexual arousal just from touching hands with his boyfriend. Being a considerate gentleman with a functioning moral compass unlike Jungkook, he attempts to keep his bodily reactions to himself, using his right hand to discreetly shield his hard-on that is currently poking out dangerously from within his pants away from Jin’s sight hoping the younger boy wouldn’t take notice or be burdened by it.

Well, Jin really doesn’t notice anything until Namjoon starts to wince slightly from the discomfort in his pants. Upon hearing that, Jin who is conditioned to react to even the slightest call of pain as an experienced doctor turns his head out of concern to meet eyes with Namjoon but before his eyes can elevate to eye level he sees the root of Namjoon’s distress - the obvious bulge of Namjoon’s majestic cock showing through the thin fabric of his pants.

Jin snaps his head back and gulps on saliva furiously as he ponders life decisions.

*Should I do it? Should I take the first step? Should I sacrifice my booty?* Jin asks himself.
After a full minute of thinking, Jin takes in a deep breath and takes a leap of faith. As a doctor and currently a specialized medic in the tier 1 army, he feels that it is his responsibility to alleviate an identified patient’s agony and even more so since the said patient is his boyfriend.

With the thought in mind, the younger boy removes his headphones in a snap, leans in towards his left where Namjoon sits and without warning kisses passionately onto Namjoon’s lips to which Namjoon jolts to a shock. What is with this sudden spontaneity from Jin? Before Namjoon can even process anything, Jin violently snaps off Namjoon’s headphones as well and throws it to the side before flinging his legs over onto Namjoon’s spacious seat as he plants his own ass down onto Namjoon’s lap. The younger boy then takes off his own shirt and throws it to the side before screaming in resolution: “Let’s do it Joonie!”

The airplane stewardess who has just walked into the cabin to deliver refreshments widens her eyes slightly at the scene. She immediately turns around and walks out of the cabin professionally keeping her cool never to be seen again. On the other hand, Namjoon who has just recovered from his shock attempts to open his mouth to speak.

“I….I…” apparently Namjoon has lost all ability to speak at the sight of fiery sassy Jin sitting on his lap facing him up front with a face etched with passion and resolution. All he can do for a few moments is to stutter like he always does with his mouth half ajar in an attempt to find words. Upon seeing that, Jin hastily reaches forward and pinches Namjoon’s upper and lower lips together with his index finger and thumb effectively shutting Namjoon up in his trap.

“Don’t speak anymore. Don’t think anymore. I know you’ve been wanting this and I’m ready so let’s do it. Show me what you’ve got Joonie,” Jin challenges firmly and with that, he removes his fingers from Namjoon’s lips and replaces it with a long passionate kiss, his heart palpitating from slight fear and anxiety for what is to come.

Two seconds later Namjoon who is caught in a trance finally processes what’s happening and in excitement he takes over the situation, returning the kiss in a magnitude 9000 times more passionate than what Jin has started out with. He will surely show Jin what he’s got in his pants in a few moments.
“Oh baby… thanks for taking the first move…. let me take care of you from now onwards…” Namjoon moans with half-lidded dilated eyes as he grasps onto Jin’s lean waist with his big hands pulling his boyfriend closer to himself as he kisses back zealously sucking and biting onto Jin’s plump red lips. Jin moans softly at the sensation and after a few minutes of kissing, Namjoon’s lips travel downwards onto Jin’s exposed neck and naked torso kissing and licking the boy everywhere on his body.

“Ahhhh….. Joonie ah…..” Jin moans with a high-pitched voice when he feels Namjoon’s hardened dick grinding up hungrily onto his ass and throughout the process the older man is kissing and palming the younger boy all over his upper body. When Namjoon swoops down to attack Jin’s right nipple, Jin is taken by surprise and yelps. He grasps onto Namjoon’s head and pushes himself away from Namjoon yearning for more yet is suddenly all shy and flustered.

Namjoon who has a sadistic streak feels his dick expand to a much generous size.

“So sensitive aren’t you? And we aren’t even into the main course yet,” Namjoon smirks and from then on his bad boy persona which has been simmering within him finally springs out into the open to take control. Although Jin loves the quiet stuttering Namjoon a lot, the sudden switch-up into bad-boy mode is a pleasant surprise and is even more appealing and hot to Jin sending waves of desire through the younger boy.

“Mmmmm…… this feels good Joonie… touch me more…..” Jin moans as Namjoon’s tongue continues to caress his erected nipples and when Namjoon’s hands travel downwards to cup Jin on both his ass cheeks squeezing onto it a little too roughly, Jin wriggles a little in discomfort. In this moment the younger boy starts to panic after being reminded of the pain associated with sex because goddammit he just realizes that he is about to lose his virginity and scientifically speaking a cock in an ass is physically unnatural and might cause substantial torment.

Jin is currently quaking innately and panting heavily from Namjoon’s skilled touches as Namjoon continues to grind into him sucking onto his chest acting like he gonna eat the younger boy up any time yet Jin also finds all these very enjoyable and thrilling as he continues to let out delicious moans subconsciously causing Namjoon to get even more turned on.
“Baby…do you like the pants you are wearing in particular? You still have extra in your luggage right?” Namjoon suddenly shoots out a question to which Jin stuns for a moment in his trance before replying.

“Erm…not exactly…and yes I still have extra…” Jin replies and without warning, Namjoon pulls on Jin’s pants with both hands and with a quick yank he tears Jin’s pants into half ripping it into pieces. Jin howls again in shock and crashes onto Namjoon whining, his bare ass exposing in the air.

“Shush baby…I’ll take care of you I promise…” Namjoon switches into gentleman mode again seeing that Jin is being slightly overwhelmed and kisses the boy on the ear lovingly to which Jin calms a little.

“I trust you Joonie…I trust you…”

They look into each other’s eyes for a few seconds communicating their anticipation, fear, love and passion for what is to come before crashing lips together for a long time, a connection arising between them.

A few minutes later, Namjoon breaks the kiss.

“By the way baby, you look so sexy with your pants ripped and your ass exposed like this,” Namjoon whispers in a low and seductive voice and suddenly his concentrating face cracks into an extremely perverted smirk as he glances down while grabbing a hand full of Jin’s bare milky white ass.
Jin gets all sassy again upon hearing that.

“Oh you naughty aren’t you Joonie! Don’t see you acting like that usually oh gosh --- ahhhhh!”

Jin screams when Namjoon unexpectedly sends a hard spank onto Jin’s ass before groping onto it possessively with an impact that is not too hard to hurt the younger boy but not too light either to send a kinky issue of warning.

“Baby…who’s in charge here now hmmm?” Namjoon speaks as he licks onto a sensitive spot on Jin’s neck as his fingers reach inwards to caress on Jin’s also very sensitive ass crack.

Jin is quaking.

“You Joonie…you…”

“That’s right. I’m going to prepare you now, tell me if it hurts baby… and call me sir like how you call me in the army.”

Jin’s eyes widen upon hearing that command and he can literally hear the fiftys shades of gray theme song playing in the distant but after awhile his eyes soften in submission so does his voice and attitude. Jin secretly likes to be submissive in bed and he just loves how Namjoon can switch it around to become more dominant when it comes to the hoohaa.

“Yes…sir…” Jin speaks with a soft tone.
Namjoon smiles.

“Good boy.”

When the first lubed finger enters Jin, the boy trembles slightly at the cooling yet piercing sensation but otherwise bites down on his lips not making a sound. The entry of something foreign is causing his heart to pump even faster and in this moment all he can think about is how a 2.16cm finger can make him feel so sufferable in the ass. Literally. Is the gut so tight? Jin has never realized and at this moment he is making a profound scientific discovery and revelation to which he will certainly write down in his log book later.

The second finger in and Jin starts to forget the science. He whines a little at the stretch throwing his head into Namjoon’s embrace as if to take cover in Namjoon’s warm chest.

Namjoon’s heart soften.

“Come on baby, relax…” the older man leaves his two fingers in for a few seconds waiting for Jin’s tight ring of muscles to loosen up.

“Mmmm…..mmmm…..yes sir…..” Jin licks his lips in desire yet his face is so flustered and looking mildly helpless. The younger male attempts to be compliant as he thinks about scientific methods to relax his rectal muscles. Think about flowers….think about a soft fluffy cat….think about icecream….Jin talks to himself in his head as he calms himself like how a dentist would try to appease a young frightened patient. After some time, he finally relaxes heaving out a deep breath.

Namjoon takes the cue and proceeds to thrust his fingers in and out of Jin causing Jin to moan all of a
sudden. He adjusts slightly on Namjoon’s lap trying to push himself up and away, his blushing face showing all sorts of pleasure, shock and pain at the same time. Namjoon doesn’t stop and continues to thrust his fingers in at an increasing speed, his eyes fixated and focused on Jin’s face.

“Ahhhh! Mmmmm…….Ahhhhh!” Jin can’t hold it in anymore and alternates between screaming and moaning as he feels the fingers brushing against his prostate sending shocking electrical sensations all the way up his spine spreading throughout his body. The younger male has never felt such a sensation before, how the pain and the pleasure can mix together so well in harmony and it is igniting fires of passion within him. He will most certainly record this down in his science logbook.

Namjoon, on the other hand, can’t wait any longer. He needs to take Jin right now.

“You okay baby? I’m entering now okay?”

Jin takes in a deep breath as he prepares himself for the new scientific experience.

“Yes I’m good,” he replies, not entirely sure why his voice sounds cracked up weak and with that, Namjoon hastily loosens his belt and pulls out his erected majestic cock from within his pants, lubes it up and aligns it with Jin’s ass.

Upon seeing Namjoon’s gargantuan dick for the first time, Jin gapes and starts praying for himself trying to come up with a plausible risk assessment but before he can react, Namjoon pushes a significant length of his shaft in causing Jin to yelp hard and grab onto Namjoon like he’s on a rollercoaster ride. The yelp sounds painful and somewhat pitiful as Jin reflexively shoots up away from Namjoon but daddy Namjoon decides to hold the younger boy’s hips down in place. The older man starts to thrust in shallowly and steadily to which the younger boy can only let out a series of whimpers.
“Just relax baby…just relax…” Namjoon commands as he kisses Jin, his lower region continuously thrusting up into poor Jin’s suffering ass. The sadistic streak in Namjoon enjoys the painful sounds elicited from Jin but his loving side is breaking into a mash of feels. He just loves Jin so much it is driving him crazy and even at this point when they are having sex he still doesn’t want to actually hurt his beloved boyfriend.

“Yes sir…ahhhhh…...ahhhhhhh hurts….but I’m good…” Jin sounds rather pitiful even when he announces that he is fine to which Namjoon slows down his thrusts for a few moments so that Jin can adjust and after feeling that Jin has more or less accustomed to his size he starts to really move deeper and faster but cautiously.

“So tight baby…..feels so good….come on, be a good boy for daddy and open up hmmm?” Namjoon grabs onto Jin’s ass cheeks and starts to sink his shaft deep into Jin’s tight and pulsating hole causing the younger boy to howl and tremor from the overwhelming pain and pleasure. Jin’s toes curl up when he feels Namjoon’s dick sinking deep on point onto his prostate eliciting a loud and unrestrained moan from him. Namjoon groans too as he feels his entire dick being hugged so tightly by Jin’s tight ring of muscles and starts to slam into the warmth.

Slam! Slam! Slam! Namjoon pounds dutifully each time aiming straight into Jin’s prostate not forgetting to stroke onto Jin’s already hardened dick time to time.

“Wahhhhh......Joonie ahhhh…..” Jin moans and gasps in pleasure. Apparently Jin has completely forgotten about the “call-me-sir” command which is entirely okay for Namjoon since this is their first time having sex together. He will let Jin off this time because Jin is already being so good for him. In this moment Namjoon gazes up at the love of his life trying to remember everything that he is seeing and feeling right now. The way Jin moans and clutches onto him helplessly, the way Jin is overwhelmed by the sensation and yet still submitting so obediently to him, the way Jin’s hole is already sucking onto his cock in a perfect fit…gosh…Jin deserves to be fucked so hard its good.

Upon that thought, Namjoon lets out a deep growl of desire. Without warning, he grasps onto Jin’s hips and slams the boy down hard onto his own cock to meet his thrust to which the boy yelps again. He then continues to slam in at an exceedingly fast and forceful pace causing the sound of balls slapping against ass to fill the air. Namjoon bites in onto Jin’s neck eliciting another scream from the younger male who is currently digging his nails into his back from the overwhelming pain and thrilling pleasure ripping into him tearing him from the inside.
“Ahhhh!!!! Joonie!!!!!!!” Jin screams and howls and yet the next second his mouth is met with a strong and forceful kiss by Namjoon who proceeds to suck and bite into his mouth giving his all to Jin.

The moment Namjoon discreetly reaches over and starts stroking Jin’s dick again Jin’s eyes and mouth both widen at the same time in shock. This time, however, he doesn’t scream out loud. The younger male climaxes from sex for the first time trying to digest this godly feeling but even then Namjoon doesn’t let go and continues to milk all the cum out of Jin before climaxing and ejaculating too inside the younger boy.

“Jinnie!!!” Namjoon finally screams too before pulling out and cumming all over Jin’s belly.

10 seconds of panting before they crash lips again to kiss.

Smooch smooch.

“Love you so much…” Namjoon speaks with so much love and care in his voice. His baby has done so well.

“I love you too Joonie…but oh god my ass is so freaking sore now…”

“Do you…do you need massage?”
“Nah it’s fine. You know there’s no way you can massage my insides right? I’ll self-medicate later with some hydrocortisone acetate and from what I currently feel the ache will probably last for another 2 days with possible fissures in my asshole which means I will need to issue myself an MC from army because moving around too much or whatever will possibly lead to an infection which means we can be together for another 2 more days~ A blessing in disguise isn’t it? To be honest I don’t want to leave you yet huhu…One week isn’t enough with you Joonie~” Jin speaks with his usual sassy tone again having had pulled away from his submissive self in bed as he slowly climbs off Namjoon’s lap. The younger boy then proceeds to wrap the airplane seat blanket around his waist because his poor pants has been ripped into pieces. Oh shit, now that he is standing up the pain feels worse than he thinks it to be.

“Ahhhh….I think it’s more than 2 days…” Jin winces as he speaks.

Upon hearing that, Namjoon’s lips press into a thin line as he gazes down at his gradually hardening cock. Hmmm….truthfully speaking he has been going pretty soft on Jin today and they have also only done it once yet Jin is already so sore and possibly hurt in the ass. Guess he will have to take it down a notch first.

“Sorry baby. Will be gentler in future. Will need to train you more too.”

Jin blushes when he hears the words “train you more”. How is Namjoon going to train him hmmm? The younger male can only wonder.

***

In the small cabin in an airplane, the smell of sex permeates the air as two men who have changed into fresh clothes sleep together in a single seat in each other’s embrace. This is exactly the reason why Namjoon loves the idea of doing it on the airplane – the idea that he is with the love of his life up in the sky away from the rest of world in a small cosy area having the time of their lives is so much of a turn on and at the same time heart-warming as well.
Namjoon sneaks a peak at the boy who is currently being all drowsy and sleepy. He opens the window blinds and see the sun arising from beneath the clouds.

It’s sunrise, a symbol for beginnings.

Namjoon smiles and speaks.

“Hey baby, don’t sleep yet. I have… I have a surprise for you,” Namjoon speaks what he has been rehearsing for a long time so to keep his stuttering to the minimum, his heart palpitating even faster than how it was during the sex earlier.

Upon hearing that, Jin rubs onto his sleepy eyes and opens it slightly such that only a speck of light can enter his field of view.

Namjoon fishes out something from his pockets and places it in front of Jin’s eyes.

It is a ring. A beautiful diamond ring.

Jin gasps.

"Oh my god Namjoon!" Jin shrieks and is speechless for some moments.
Namjoon speaks.

“Jin, I am someone that cannot always be beside you due to my job and that’s why I chose you in the first place because besides the fact that you are incredibly handsome, you are also someone that is so strong and emotionally independent. I remember how when we first started dating I could only meet you once in a while when I am on leave and yet you tolerated it almost effortlessly and every time we meet you do not complain at all. At first, I thought you didn’t love me enough to feel sad when I’m gone but gradually I realize that it is because you love to spend time alone, because you love yourself which is something that I have never gotten to understand. This is what I love about you: I love how you understand and love yourself and I love how you are able to create a space between us and yet this space brings us so much closer together. You connect with me so deeply and yet you make me understand that we are two separate individuals as well and deserves to love ourselves as much as we love each other. You are someone that is able to find happiness and gratefulness in everything in life, even when the odds are against you. Do you remember? The very first time we met? I’m not talking about the day at the billiard room. I am talking about that time long ago which I’ve come to remember, the day when we first met in your village and you were munching on that scrappy bun looking so scrawny and dishevelled and yet you looked so happy to have something to eat, to have someone to talk to. I am so glad I gave you that camera that day and even now when you take pictures you never fail to tell me how beautiful the world is to you and when you discover something you tell me how wonderful you feel to learn something new. You look into the mirror and every single time without a single doubt you call yourself the most handsome man in the world. Frankly speaking, your confidence, strength, independence and beauty amaze me every single day but the most important of them all is your kindness, Jin. You saved so many people in your lifetime without asking for anything back. How does the world deserve you? How do I deserve you? You are truly an angel Jin. You inspire me so much and I will do my best to become better in every way for you. Will you marry me Jin? I promise to take care of you forever,” Namjoon blurts out a speech that he has painstakingly memorised for weeks but when it comes to this moment the words just flow out so naturally and painlessly.

5 seconds of silence before a previously sleepy boy jumps out from his boyfriend’s embrace, fully alert in attention now that he hears the question.

That question that he has been waiting for the moment he became Namjoon’s boyfriend.

“AHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH WHY YOU DO THIS TO ME JOONIE YES YES YES YES YES!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!” Jin screams before landing multiple forceful kisses onto
“Let there be spaces in your togetherness, and let the winds of the heavens dance between you. Love one another but make not a bond of love: Let it rather be a moving sea between the shores of your souls. Fill each other's cup but drink not from one cup. Give one another of your bread but eat not from the same loaf. Sing and dance together and be joyous, but let each one of you be alone. Even as the strings of a lute are alone though they quiver with the same music. Give your hearts, but not into each other's keeping. For only the hand of Life can contain your hearts. And stand together, yet not too near together: For the pillars of the temple stand apart, And the oak tree and the cypress grow not in each other's shadow.”

— Kahlil Gibran, The Prophet

Twitter: @hidden__tracks (two underscores)
Once A Dad, Always A Dad

Chapter Summary

Taehyung realizes his mistakes but chooses to forgive himself.

“Happiness is holding someone in your arms and knowing you hold the whole world.” — Orhan Pamuk, Snow

***

Location: Central Mansion

Date and Time: 12th September 2018 2:30AM

Jungkook is 20, Taehyung is 28, approximately 1 year into marriage]

[Namjoon is 30, Jin is 25, less than 2 years before marriage]

***

Taehyung goes on to complete the tier 2 training gloriously and along with Bogum and Junhoe, he emerges as one of the top 3 of the batch scoring a perfect score in 4 out of 5 of the skill evaluation tests in a compulsory post-training assessment in the army. His impressive all-rounded achievement automatically grants him the opportunity to further pursue his career in the prestigious tier 1 mafia training programme.

Should he go on?

Taehyung ponders life decisions as he gazes down at Jungkook who is fast asleep. It is 2:30AM currently and the 2nd week into Taehyung’s graduation from tier 2 which means he only has one more week to decide whether to take up the tier 1 training programme before the acceptance deadline.

Taehyung can’t sleep peacefully until he comes to a definite decision.

Well, if he signs up for tier 1, it means that he would have to be apart from Jungkook for another 6 more months at least and it would also imply that he have to abandon BANGTAN again.
On the other hand, if Taehyung signs up and graduates successfully from tier 1 there will also be two positive implications: Number 1 – He can become Jungkook’s qualified bodyguard on paper. Taehyung, albeit having been used to the lack of privacy, would rather not have Namjoon or a group of deadpan bodyguards follow his and Jungkook’s asses everywhere especially on private dates. It’s fine to employ more protection on missions but on private romantic dates Taehyung would rather not have people watching from afar. If he himself can become Jungkook’s bodyguard then this discomforting problem would be resolved. Besides Taehyung has always been protecting Jungkook and would very much want to continue doing so for the rest of his life so this option to accept his place in the tier 1 training programme is a big appeal to him.

Number 2 – Taehyung will continue to learn more about operations of the mafia army in tier 1 training and when he graduates he will automatically be qualified to partake in mafia missions alongside his husband. Jungkook, being the mafia boss in charge of many side territories not only in Korea but abroad as well, would need to fly regularly to other countries for discussions and missions. Taehyung loves BANGTAN very much but he would rather be close to Jungkook especially in dangerous moments like these. Besides, he knows he can entrust BANGTAN to Jimin and Hoseok but as of Jungkook’s side there holds much more uncertainty and unpredictability. Who knows when is the last time he is going to see Jungkook alive? Taehyung wants to be there always for Jungkook, he also wants to understand fully what is on his husband’s mind and if possible aid him in solving the many problems he would encounter so once again this option to accept his place in the tier 1 training programme is a big appeal to him.

“Kook ah…. I think I’ll have to go for my place in tier 1…. just another 6 more months and I’ll be back for you…” Taehyung murmurs under his breath softly as if pacifying a child, his hand brushing gently against Jungkook’s hair.

Jungkook looks so peaceful and innocent when he is asleep currently, nothing like the big bad perverted bunny he is during moments of wakefulness.

Taehyung smiles under the dim night lights.

Although Taehyung loves the grown-up Jungkook a lot, he also misses the young and innocent Jungkook sometimes. Somebody so small who he can hug entirely in his embrace has grown to become the one to hold him in his arms every night. So amazing, isn’t it? How is it possible? The chubby little arms Jungkook used to possess have grown into terrifying guns, the squishy little rounded cheeks Jungkook used to possess have sharpened into defined jaws, the soft little belly Jungkook used to possess have hardened into toned abs. Did 13 years pass so fast?

At late nights like this Taehyung gets emotional.
Taehyung remembers wanting the kid to respect him as an admirable father figure when he was still a son to him. If possible, he still wants Jungkook to continue seeing him as someone who he can look up to even though they are already married in an intimate husband-wife relationship. He had adopted and raised Jungkook for 8 long years after all and all these feelings and desires associated with being a father are unlikely to go away anytime soon.

At first Taehyung tried to resist these thoughts. In fact, there was a whole lot of denial in the first part of his marriage as he attempted to deny the fact that he had become Jungkook’s spouse. However, the denial Taehyung has recently lies in the past - the denial of the fact that he had once been Jungkook’s violent adoptive father but perhaps, it is time he needs to let all these go.

He needs to let go of all doubts and accepts his past, present and future with Jungkook wholly.

He needs to learn to forgive himself too.

They are not a normal duo to begin with and has gone through lots of shit together be it before or after their marriage. The fact that they are both low-key screwed up people means that they both have their own inner demons to fight even up till the current moment.

Well, it is true that they have been communicating more recently after Jungkook’s transformation but most of the time because of how they had interacted in the distant past they are currently still unable to fully open-up to each other. Sometimes silence would encapsulate them and they would continue to dwell in it like how they did when they were still father and son and because of this realization, Taehyung starts to really reflect on his past actions as a father, comparing it to how Jungkook treats him now and finds himself in a guilty trance.

There were a fair share of good times spent with Jungkook but there were a fair share of traumatic times as well. He recalls how he used to slap and beat Jungkook till his entire arm was shades of purple and red, he recalls how he dragged Jungkook out to witness violent events albeit his traumatised cries, he recalls how he forced Jungkook to do the many household chores and ordered the boy around like an entitled king. He also recalls how he would threaten to abandon Jungkook time to time which now that he thinks about it is exceedingly cruel to do to a defenceless child. Taehyung heart aches yet in a dull sort of way because there isn’t a way in which he can rewrite history. At that time Taehyung had wanted the young Jungkook to accept his situation quickly, to become stronger and to grow up fast and now he wishes for the opposite.

In Jungkook, Taehyung continuously sees a broken childhood he could never have fixed because his was broken or even non-existent too. Besides, Taehyung was only 15 when he first took Jungkook in. The one in power is the one in charge, Taehyung had said before to Jungkook because that was what he as a street gangster believed until recent times. A poorly developed moral compass had caused him to be exceedingly heartless especially at the very start but as time progressed he gradually
softened up to Jungkook. He loved and still loves Jungkook deeply and even if the current grown-up Jungkook decides to be mean with him his entire life then so be it, it is his own karma to reap for being such a lousy dad after all but the thing is that Jungkook has single-handedly decided to break this seemingly endless cycle of violence and abuse.

The younger boy has chosen to be kind to Taehyung even though Taehyung hadn't been kind to him. Jungkook's capacity to forgive is so selfless and to some point Taehyung feels that he doesn’t deserve it but because Jungkook has chosen to forgive, Taehyung thinks that he will learn to forgive himself too. After all, Taehyung raised the boy for 8 long years and loved him in his own way.

Jungkook, the victim in the past, has decided to take the first steps to end the violence between them without even asking Taehyung for an apology. Without even asking for anything in return.

Isn’t this love at its finest?

There must indeed be the presence of true love to inspire real change.

Previously in the army when Jungkook had hit him, all Taehyung saw was his own misery and only recently after he had graduated from the army and had become free to ponder about life did he clearly see the cause of Jungkook’s violent tendencies which was tied to how he had raised Jungkook in the first place. Still, the current Jungkook never stops trying his very best to restrain himself from hurting Taehyung even during moments of conflict.

Taehyung comes to realize that even when he had failed Jungkook as a father, Jungkook chooses not to fail him as a husband and with this, Taehyung is just so grateful for Jungkook.

From Jungkook, Taehyung learns how to love properly and albeit them still being mildly dysfunctional, they are both working together to effect a change within and between themselves.

One step at a time.

Wounds are still present but these wounds can heal.

Truthfully, Taehyung would probably not be able to write long “I’m sorry” letters or verbalize lengthy speeches to ask for forgiveness like Jungkook because maybe he just isn’t as smart or adept with his words and has always been too proud and emotionally awkward so in return, Taehyung
decides that he will convey his love for Jungkook with his actions instead.

He will go through the tier 1 training programme and emerge as someone stronger and capable to protect and understand Jungkook for the rest of his life.

He wants to do it for both Jungkook and himself, to become a better spouse and a better dad for Jungkook even if it means to suffer in camp for another 6 more months.

Oh wait, the above sentence does sound wrong, doesn’t it? You can’t be both a dad and a spouse to someone Taehyung but I’m sure we all know what he truly means and that is to give Jungkook the love he has never gotten to give in the past while retaining the kind of love he has recently developed for Jungkook and that is the kind of love that exists between lovers.

It really does feel like a family now, with Jungkook, himself and Yeontan as their baby and with that Taehyung will treasure this little family with all his heart.

“I love you so much Kook… I’m bad with words but if I could dig my heart out and show it to you… you would understand how you mean the whole world to me…” Taehyung speaks softly with a bittersweet smile and kisses Jungkook on his forehead, making a mental note to speak of his decision to enter the tier 1 batch and his wishes to serve as Jungkook’s bodyguard over breakfast tomorrow morning.

Needless to say, the supportive husband goes on to agree with his wife’s decision during breakfast. His eyes, albeit holding a tinge of loneliness, are filled with an overwhelming sense of pride to see the growth in Taehyung.

“People think a soul mate is your perfect fit, and that's what everyone wants. But a true soul mate is a mirror, the person who shows you everything that is holding you back, the person who brings you to your own attention so you can change your life. A true soul mate is probably the most important person you'll ever meet, because they tear down your walls and smack you awake.” - Elizabeth Gilbert, Eat, Pray, Love

Do you know that you can leave kudos even if you don’t have an account/are on incognito mode? Do leave a kudo to show support if you like this fanfiction~
You can connect with me on twitter here: hidden_tracks@twitter

You can find me on archiveofourown (ao3) here: hidden_tracks@ao3

You can find me on asianfanfics (aff) here: hidden-tracks@aff

You can tip me coffee here to support me writing continuously in the fanfic community or simply to show appreciation: hiddentracks@ko-fi

You can also DM me for commissions to write your prompts/story ideas at any of my social platform be it on twitter, asianfanfics or ao3

P.S. Have a nice day, lovely, thanks for reading my stories. Don't forget to eat well, rest well and smile today~
A Brand New Beginning

Chapter Summary

A double marriage occurs.

“Marriage isn't a love affair. It isn't even a honeymoon. It's a job. A long hard job, at which both partners have to work, harder than they've worked at anything in their lives before. If it's a good marriage, it changes, it evolves, but it does on getting better.” — Rosamunde Pilcher, Wild Mountain Thyme

***

Status Update:

1. Some months later, Taehyung completes tier 1 training and successfully becomes Jungkook's personal bodyguard and an officer alongside Bogum and Jumho in the mafia army. He begins to aid Jungkook in mafia affairs.
2. Meanwhile, Namjoon takes up the chief commander role in the mafia army whereas Jin starts studying professional medicine to become even more knowledgeable. Namjoon still feels the need to protect a person 24/7 so recently he starts being Jin's personal bodyguard following his soon-to-be husband everywhere.
3. After Taehyung becomes fully involved with the mafia, Jimin and Hoseok collectively take over BANGTAN together and are actually already married many years ago in secret and had only recently revealed their marital status to the rest causing Taehyung, Jungkook and Jin to almost die from heart attacks.
4. Lastly, baby Yoongi is about to be born - The baddest son of all time is going to exist soon. All hail the almighty Yoongi!

***

| Onward To The Day of The Double-Wedding |

***

Location: Catholic Church on a beautiful hilltop in god-knows-where on Earth but certainly not in
the underground hell-hole that is the underground church the previous time

Date and Time: 1\textsuperscript{st} November 2019 8:30AM

[Jungkook is 22, Taehyung is 30, Second Wedding Day]

[Namjoon is 32, Jin is 27, Wedding Day]

***

“Jeon Jung Kook, do you take Kim Tae Hyung to be your husband? Do you promise to be faithful to him, in good times and in bed…erm sorry I mean in bad times, in sickness and in health, to love him and to honour him all the days of your life?” recites priest Bang Si-Hyuk with a bright smile this time despite once again screwing up part of his lines as in the mafia boss’s previous marriage ceremony. In fact, he still remembers the very day when this pair has gotten married under him for the first time 2 years ago in which one had maintained a face as black as burnt overused charcoal while the other had turned rogue halfway through trying to shoot himself in the head.

Well, the previous vow exchange between these two was definitely not a fond memory to recall but this time around priest Bang is unable to detect any conflict or disagreement arising between Taehyung and Jungkook as they grin toothily at each other like two lovestruck hamsters waiting to grow fat and happy together in their new home. The mood is celebrative this time fortunately with Jimin and Hoseok randomly throwing buckets of flower petals over Jungkook and Taehyung’s heads making random sound effects and what makes it even more perfect is the beautiful venue where all these are taking place. The bright sunlight pierces through the windows into the catholic church warming up the entire place and under the radiant light rays stand Taehyung and Jungkook who are glowing brilliantly in their lavish suits at the altar, a sign of wealth, satisfaction and power that isn’t unbalanced like how it was in the past.

There is no tension this time, only the impatience to become properly wedded again.

Jimin, Hoseok, Jin, Namjoon, Chanyeol and Baekhyun watch the exchange of vows occurring with smiles on their faces too. Minus all the irrelevant people from the mafia family, Jungkook has only invited those that truly matters and these are the only few from BANGTAN, including his mafia-affiliated cousin Chanyeol and cousin-in-law Baekhyun who he knows he can fully trust. Instead of holding a deadpan face this time, Chanyeol looks mildly pleased this time because it has been a while since he last witnessed a marriage with proper consent and to him it is strangely refreshing. He presents a very faint quirk of a smile as he holds a low-key excited Baekhyun in his arms.

At this moment Baekhyun suddenly pops his head out of Chanyeol’s chest and looks over at Chanyeol with wonder in his eyes.
“Shall we redo our marriage too Chanchan?! I mean I was willing when I married you but if you remember I did it solely for money and to be free from that bastard Kris! We should get married properly again in the name of love Chanchan!” exclaims Baekhyun without a single bit of remorse in his eyes to which Chanyeol facepalms 3948048209230384 times and almost concusses right there and then. Damn, he most certainly doesn’t want to recall the problematic and messy past he has had with his used-to-be-stripper-turned-current-wife Baekhyun but silently at the back of his head he starts to consider the option to do so as suggested by his wife. Chanyeol has never been a person that likes to engage in unnecessary fluff but the fact that his wife is currently grinning like a chihuahua at him is starting to make him think twice. Hmmm….a second marriage doesn’t sound bad, does it?

Alright now let's focus our attention back to the marriage. On the altar, priest Bang feels tears coming to his eyes. This is his first time seeing a glimpse of hope in his many years serving as an underground priest. Today he is brought out into the open from the underground to this beautiful church on a hilltop and for the first time in 20 years he sees and feel the sunlight and if that isn’t enough he gets to acknowledge a brand-new beginning for a couple that he had thought was broken from the start.

Life really does get better, doesn’t it?

After a few moments of silence Jungkook finally starts speaking.

“I, Jeon Jung Kook, take you, Kim Tae Hyung, for my lawful husband, to have and to hold, from this day forward, for better, for worse, for richer, for poorer, in sickness and in health, until death do us part,” Jungkook recites perfectly, his eyes uncontrollably glistening in tears as he speaks. Currently, the mafia boss is being attacked by all sorts of emotions and the goddamn onion-cutting ninjas that seem to be all over the place because goddamit, this moment means so fucking much to him. It means so much to him that Taehyung isn’t scowling like the previous time when they are getting married but smiling radiantly at him in this current moment. The many things that they have gone through from the past till present, the many things that they have fixed and the many things they have learnt to forgive and forgo all boils down to this current moment they are sharing as they hold each other’s hands on the altar in bliss.

Now that they are standing here looking into each other’s eyes, everything that has happened between them becomes crystal clear and needless to say, extremely worth it. There is no doubt anymore, only trust, love and acceptance.

“Kim Taehyung, do you take Jeon Jung Kook to be your husband? Do you promise to be faithful to him in good times and in bad, in sickness and in health, to love him and to honour him all the days of your life?” repeats the priest to which Taehyung replies in a short concise phrase to issue his consent.

“I can’t remember my lines honestly but yes, I do. I do want to take Jeon Jung Kook as my husband
from now on."

Upon hearing that statement Jungkook squeals internally in excitement though he isn't entirely sure why he is so excited to hear what he is hearing. Taehyung is already his but this time Taehyung is properly his! Once again!

“Perfect. You may now exchange rings,” instructs priest Bang.

“Okay,” Taehyung and Jungkook reply collectively before doing a little fist-bump that they’ve agreed on before staring back at the priest, “Done.”

What? Priest Bang is confused but after a while he realizes something.

“Oh….” moans priest Bang.

If his eyes aren’t failing him, he is quite sure to see a set of rings tattooed beautifully on both Taehyung and Jungkook’s exposed ring fingers.

The designs of the ring tattoos are exactly identical, a matching set of posh yet very gangster-looking set of rings that is perfect for the mafia couple.

“This is our last tattoo and the one that matters the most, Father Bang. It symbolises our eternal love,” Taehyung explains slightly to which priest Bang stuns into pool of feels.

Such a beautiful pair.

Priest Bang Si-hyuk is quaking.

“I see… sorry,” murmurs Si-hyuk as he fishes out his handkerchief to blow his nose loudly for a few times before crying for a little.

Is this all real? Is this really happening?
Gosh, when was the last time he had seen something so beautiful and pure?

Priest Bang vaguely recalls moments with his first boyfriend when he had his first kiss. That kiss was also beautiful and pure but then shit happened after that.

On the side note, Jungkook is getting impatient as he watches priest Bang dazing out in his own world.

“Father Bang, can I kiss the husband now?” speaks Jungkook with his face almost purple waiting for the most important statement of the day to which Father Bang jolts back into attention.

“Right! Sorry...I shall now officially pronounce you as husband and husband! Husbands, you may now kiss each other!”

At this moment, Jimin, Hoseok, Jin, Namjoon and Baekhyun start to violently cheer and clap like seals on crack and even Chanyeol starts to clap a little after being slapped on the shoulder for the lack of enthusiasm by Baekhyun.

Jungkook takes the cue and pounces onto an unsuspecting Taehyung and immediately attempts to smuggle a screaming Taehyung into a random room around the corner to have a quickie. To Jungkook, having sex will always be the way he stakes full claim onto Taehyung and to him the marriage isn’t complete until sex happens. In desperation Taehyung who is currently being manhandled immediately sends a punch across the younger man’s face, not too hard to hurt the younger man but not too soft to issue a strict warning before it’s too late.

The audience watches the comical scene unfold before their eyes but oh well, no one is actually surprised anymore by Jungkook’s sex maniac behaviour.

In fact, the moment the punch lands onto Jungkook’s face, nosebleed blasts out from Jungkook like a waterfall and the mafia boss immediately becomes a teary bunny again as Taehyung starts scolding his brains out.

“Kook calm the fuck down! We still have Jin and Namjoon’s wedding to witness! Keep your cock in your pants at least for another hour for goodness sake!” screams Taehyung with his face blushing red from slight embarrassment as he walks down the altar with crossed-arms sulking like he always does, planting his ass onto the seat beside Yeontan who has been watching obediently as Jin and
Namjoon take their place on the altar.

Oopsies. Jungkook realizes that he has angered his wife again for being perverted. Jungkook follows behind Taehyung with a pout and sits obediently beside his wife. Yeontan barks slightly at Jungkook to disapprove his actions only to earn a “shush you” fierce look from Jungkook.

“I’m sorry wifey….one more kiss please? Just one more?” Jungkook pleads.

“Hey I’m your husband now Kook. You’ll have to stop calling me wifey.”

Upon hearing that Jungkook lands into a sea of devastation.

“But but but...”

“No buts.”

“Nuuuuuu!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! Taehyungieeee!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

At this point Taehyung’s deadpan face cracks into a chuckle as he watches Jungkook balling his eyes out making a scene. This young boy sure has some growing up to do having had just entered his 20s.

“Just kidding Kook, please continue to call me wifey. I’m used to it anyway already.”

“Oh wifey!” exclaims Jungkook as he hugs Taehyung in his arms, feeling like the happiest man on earth.

***

Five minutes later, two men in pink suits (Jin’s idea) namely Jin and Namjoon successfully exchange vows too on the altar to which Jin cries a million-year waterfall afterwards hugging onto Namjoon like a wailing care bear. Hoseok and Jimin stop throwing flower petals and provide tissues. On the other hand, Namjoon awkwardly holds onto Jin with a sheepish grin that he can’t seem to get off his
face and probably won’t be able to get off his face for the next few months.

“Joonie~~~~ I’m so toucheddddd~~~ I’ve waited for this moment my whole laaaaaaaiiiifeeeee!!!!!!” cries Jin as he buries his face into Namjoon’s broad chest.

“Oh my sweet baby Jinnie. Don’t cry. My heart hurts. You are beautiful. I’ll take care of you from now,” Namjoon comforts his boo boo in chopped-up sentences like always before gently kissing away his tears and just like this, both wedding ceremonies conclude successfully without any complications! A brand-new beginning for both couples it is! Let’s wish them all the best, shall we? :)

Forever can never be long enough for me
Feel like I've had long enough with you
Forget the world now we won't let them see
But there's one thing left to do
Now that the weight has lifted
Love has surely shifted my way
Marry me
Today and every day
Marry me
If I ever get the nerve to say
Hello in this cafe
Say you will
Mm-hmm
Say you will
Mm-hmm
Together can never be close enough for me
Feel like I am close enough to you
You wear white and I'll wear out the words I love you
And you're beautiful
Now that the wait is over
And love and has finally shown her my way
Marry me
Today and every day
Marry me
If I...
“Marry Me” By Train

***

**Trailer for Season 3**

Location: Central Mansion

Date and Time: 20th October 2020 1030AM

[Jungkook is 23, Taehyung is 31]

***

Jungkook and Taehyung are eating breakfast together when the mafia boss’s phone rings.

Placing down his fork, Jungkook swiftly picks up the phone while Taehyung continues to wolf down waffles absent-mindedly.

“Hello?” greets Jungkook to which a voice starts to speak from the other end of the line.

“Boss, this is Daesung calling from the research facility….”

***

5 minutes later, Jungkook who has been silently listening to Daesung finally utters a “I understand thank you,” before hanging up.

He dazes out for a little before suddenly running over to pull the unsuspecting Taehyung into a tight
embrace so suffocating that Taehyung finds it hard to breathe.

“What is it Kook?!” Taehyung manages to ask as he struggles in Jungkook’s arms trying to catch air. Taehyung can feel Jungkook’s heart palpitating like a bullet train and a few moments later a high-key excited-looking Jungkook finally pulls away and with eyes shining with pure bliss he pops the question.

“Taehyung ah, do you by any chance……want a baby?”

“Making the decision to have a child is momentous. It is to decide forever to have your heart go walking outside your body.” – Elizabeth Stone

-END OF YOU’RE MINE DADDY BOOK 2-

Yeap so this is the fluffy ending to Book 2! Finally this long arduous season has ended! Which are your favourite moments from the entire season and do you like the double marriage they just had? Tell me your thoughts yeah! Do leave a kudo (archiveofourown) or an upvote (asianfanfics) if you liked the series to show me support if you think I deserve it~

Connect with me on twitter where I post updates, polls, short stories, AU's and other related content: @hidden__tracks (two underscores)

Also, you can buy me a cup of coffee to motivate me in writing and to show support for my stories here: hiddentracks@ko-fi (thank you <3)

That’s all I have for y’all, peace out!
The Fanfic that Taekook read in "The Holiday Week"

Chapter Summary

Remember Taehyung and Jungkook came across a smut written on mafiafanfics.com about themselves in chapter "The Holiday Week"?

Link to this fanfiction is below.

In other words, it's a fanervice.

Enjoy reading~

If you need to refresh your memory on that chapter --> "The Holiday Week" <--

Link to the smut fanfiction Taehyung and Jungkook read in that chapter (edited) --> "Taehyung's Virgin Nightclub Experience" <--

Enjoy reading ( *^▽^*) /
Epilogue

Chapter Summary

The inspiration behind this me writing this fanfiction.

Epilogue

Dear readers,

I suppose that after reading this story, you would have noticed that the story focused a lot more on a sort of parent-child relationship, even more so than the romance, which was what I wanted so badly and purposefully to write about.

A sort of parent-child relationship which could be interpreted in multiple ways, a sort of parent-child relationship which could be classified as borderline abuse, a sort of parent-child relationship which would be considered normal in Asia but highly condemned in western culture.

Parents are the first people we know and love and have many unresolved feelings towards, and how they brought us up could hurt us forever and change the way we love our lovers, love our friends and love ourselves.

I wrote this story (other than the obvious purpose to vent my sexual fantasies) while thinking that most people reading this, you reading this, were teenagers or young adults who might be holding resentful feelings towards their parents. I, too, held a lot of resentful feelings towards my parents in the past but not anymore in recent years.

Firstly, I want to talk a little bit about myself and my relationship with my parents, since they were the first ones who inspired me to write this fanfiction. I am an Asian girl born in a middle-class family, and unsurprisingly, my parents are the stereotypical Asian parents you see portrayed in popular media, the kind of strict parents with what is called a “tiger personality” that is associated with inflexibility, insensitivity, and an inability to communicate without shouting.

Honestly, I didn’t really appreciate the childhood my parents had given me, or at least instinctively, I didn’t like it.

When I was younger at the age of six, I remember being locked in a room by my parents when I couldn’t finish a math sum for hours. Even as when I was wailing with a face full of tears, they keep me locked in. They used to harp about grades a lot all through my elementary school years and constantly compared me to other kids. They also didn’t bother to communicate with me at home or to ask me about myself, just tirelessly running life’s errands everyday like zombies, shouting commands telling me to “do this” or “do that”.

Nothing was ever soulful or loving – it was all tough love.

One second my brothers and I would be watching TV, and the next second the man I call father would return home only to scream at us, telling us that we need to complete our homework. One second I was just expressing mild annoyance during family outings, the next second my mother would land a slap on my face telling me to behave and stop being a spoiled brat. During weekends,
there was no asking “did anything interesting happen last week?” or “did you make any friends?” or “how was science lessons on Tuesday?” during family dinners, just them cutting into my first few sentences and then proceeding to lecture me with some sort of wisdom without first lending a listening ear.

My heart ached because of how they acted.

To me, what they fed me was a subtle form of toxicity that made me extremely anxious, extremely cautious and extremely detached from them, detached from any sort of closeness with them.

Essentially, my life when I was younger was remembered as a slow and painful burn due to the way my parents acted with these mildly abusive, mildly toxic, mildly insensitive and mildly unpredictable patterns.

As a result, I failed to learn how to express my thoughts and emotions, especially negative thoughts and emotions in a peaceful and controlled manner during my younger days because I didn’t know when I would be chided or punished for simply expressing myself. That fear affected me and the way I view relationships, which meant this also affected my relationship with other friends, relatives and classmates. One thing I hated the most, I guess, would be that my parents, especially my father, always yelled a lot, be it at me, my brothers, or at my mother. The yelling was often sudden, random, without warning, which shocked me leaving me not knowing what to expect. When were they going to scream next? Couldn’t things be talked through in a calm manner?

Why were they so unpredictable?

In essence, my parents were overly anxious and easily agitated, which made me even more scared of them, scared that they would burst out shouting at any time, scared that at any time their face would change, scared that when I express my negative thoughts that my anger would turn into their anger.

Did they love me at all? I had thought when I was younger.

I was so resentful in the past but now, at the age of 22, I realize many things and those realizations I have written in this story.

They locked me up in a room when I couldn’t finish the math sum to teach me that in some situations, I must learn how to save myself. This probably isn’t what some parents would do and probably a method shunned by many, but it was what my parents thought was right to teach me about independence. They didn’t leave me out of their sight during that three hours I was locked in, and stayed in the room to make sure I was alright even though they were being strict.

They did talk a lot about grades when I was younger and did comparisons which of course, was detrimental to my self-esteem. However, that was crucial in setting me in the real world because in the real world: let’s face it – people are going to make comparisons. This is a fact of life. People are going to compare which candidate is better at job interviews, which person is more reliable as a leader, which person is going to be more fit for a certain role. People are going to compare a person to another in critical decision-making, in choosing who to trust in companies, either consciously or subconsciously. Who were to say that telling children “you are the best!” every day is more beneficial than “wake up and see where you are really at now, child, and work for what you want”? They did what was the most practical and now I have them to thank for my consistently good grades, the skills I have learnt to prove them I can do things right and the self-discipline I have right now to guide me through even the toughest tasks in life. As I grow, my self-esteem grew too, and I gradually realized that my low self-esteem in the past could not have been entirely blamed on my parents because partly, I had spent most of my time being resentful about the world instead of working on myself, hence my parents had the urge to scold, the urge to instil some form of anxiety in me so that I
could improve. Now that I can be independently hardworking, they have actually stopped shouting at me as they thought that I have become matured, and instead would urge me to rest whenever I sink back into my workaholic mode.

They have always tried to bring balance to me, but I was too resentful and close-minded to appreciate them, to appreciate their form of parenting that wasn’t seen as directly beneficial to me. I kept holding on to grudges in the past, kept holding on to those upsetting moments, refusing to acknowledge that other than those moments of strict parenting, most of my other childhood moments were wonderful. In fact, my mother only slapped me on my face once, and it wasn’t even that hard.

Due to their fatigue from work, they were short-tempered sometimes which led to the yelling, but most of the time they were reasonable people. I kept saying that they didn’t try communicating with me, but I too was on my phone during family dinners while they were speaking. My parents aren’t angels, they are imperfect humans that can sometimes be frustrated too. They did their best by trying to maintain order in the family in the most efficient way possible, even though they had to run errands like zombies to keep the family intact and functional, even though it meant less time for relaxation, even though it meant higher blood pressures and bad tempers. They were overly anxious about survival, but could I blame them?

My parents are realistic, practical parents and they are fighters and warriors.

Back in the days when my parents were still children, they were much less fortunate financially and their lives were tougher. My mother had to wake up at 5am in the morning cutting rubber trees from the young age of 9. She lived in houses with mud as her house’s floor and leaky tiles as her house’s roof, selling peanuts and pao for some cash. In addition, my mother had a drug addict as her father who frequently stole her hard-earned money and one day ran away from home to shun debtors. On the other hand, my father’s mother passed away when he was just seven, and he was constantly neglected by his father as he was the least favoured child of ten. Both my father and mother lived in extremely poor yet big families, and negligence was normal to them as children. They ate rice with soya sauce every day, nothing more, and had to work at a young age and learn how to deal with neglect as they grow.

They did not know the way of loving children as promoted by popular media, as promoted by modern psychology experts.

Nobody taught them about emotional control, nobody taught them about love.

They had so little from the beginning and so little love from the beginning, yet they loved me the best they could. In fact, they actually acknowledged and apologized about how they treated me in the past when I mentioned it in recent years, but they also communicated to me that they knew no other way of living and were shocked when they found out I was miserable when I was little.

Speaking with a raised voice was normal in their village, they did not know it was distressing to me.

Now that I am 22 and that I have grown up well, I am actually so thankful for my parents.

There were downsides to their parenting techniques but at the end of the day, my parents taught me self-awareness, respect, humility, discipline and how to not take things for granted.

In fact, the benefits of such “tiger” way of parenting probably outweighed the negative effects.

They loved me with the best way they know, and to me that is enough.

What I interpreted as abuse – was it really? Or did I exaggerate those moments in my memories?
People tend to remember bad memories better than good memories so were my parents really that mean to me in the past?

Probably not.

Everything they did to me was humane and for my own good.

Seeing how many of my peers complain about the little things their parents did, how they threatened to leave home for minor disagreements and thinking their parents are the worst parents, I sometimes hope they would only see.

There are millions of ways parents can be parents.

The fact that so many children are angry at their parents for simply not being the kind of parents they want their parents to be, is quite absurd.

Everyone including parents, is born into different environments, face different circumstances, taught different values and raised differently.

We children, sometimes we constantly think we know what is best for us after watching some online articles about parenting. Sometimes we fault our parents for what was done and dusted in the past. Sometimes we forget the good that our parents have done for us and choose to harp over the bad moments.

When I finally realized this, I stopped thinking of myself as a victim of bad parenting, and my relationship with my parents have immensely improved as I evolve to become more loving and they too, evolve and become more emotionally capable and understanding.

I slowly realize that I was partly at fault for the lack of communication between my parents in the past, as I was the one who was constantly on my phone during family dinners, I was the one who avoided my parents’ nagging questions so I have more time to watch my dramas, and the list goes on.

I believe that I am in the process of growing up now that I am slowly recognizing all these things objectively, and I am extremely grateful that my mind is at peace right now for everything that has happened. The fact that there is even shadows of my upbringing in my fanfictions involving romantic relationships got me thinking about how important my parents are to me and how deeply they have impacted me.

At this juncture I would like to thank all of you who stayed with me till the end of this story. I hope you took away something from this story, especially if your parents are somewhat like mine. Be proud of your parents, be proud of yourself alright? This epilogue took me some time to process and pen, as it was hard consolidating my thoughts, trying to make sense of why I chose to write this story in the first place, why I enjoyed writing this story so much. I know I haven’t been writing much these days and yes, I received all your messages asking about where I am, where did I disappear to, where am I now and if I am okay. Rest assured that I am still alive and living in this world, just that writing isn’t my priority now and also because my wild sexual fantasies are sadly disappearing as I age. Honestly I will probably not write again until I actually have something I would want to strongly express or vent (like how this story is inspired) and till then, please take care of yourselves and I will address you again in the future when I am back. Love you guys and thank you for your support once again, ciao!
Best regards,

hidden-tracks

Please drop by the archive and comment to let the author know if you enjoyed their work!